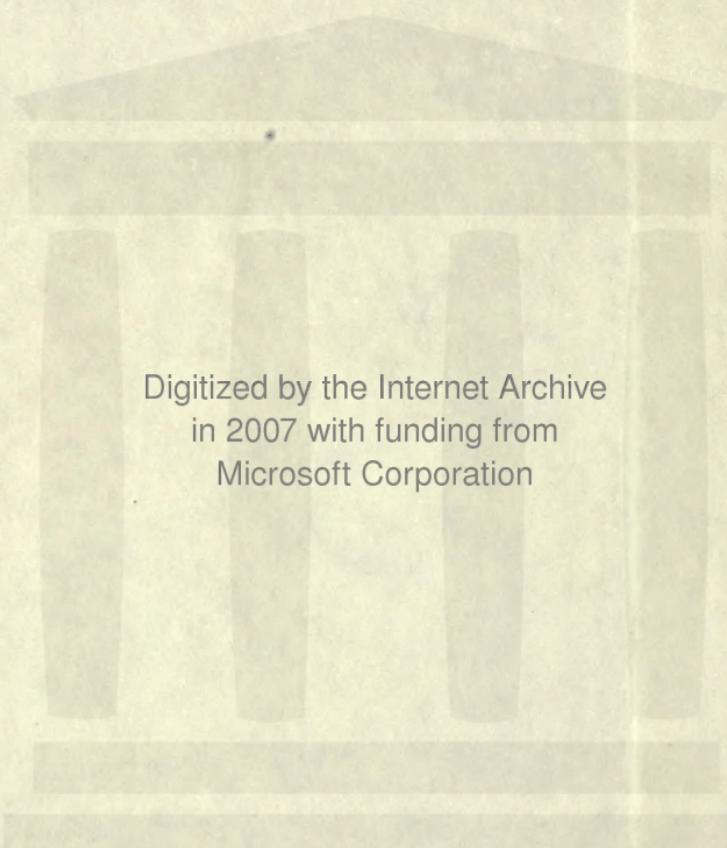


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARIES

A standard 1D barcode is positioned vertically on the right side of the label. It consists of vertical black lines of varying widths on a white background.

3 1761 00080089 6



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

PUBLICATIONS OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER

CELTIC SERIES

No. I.

An Introduction to Early Welsh

AN
INTRODUCTION
TO
EARLY WELSH

SHERRATT & HUGHES
Publishers to the Victoria University of Manchester
Manchester: 34 Cross Street
London: 33 Soho Square W.

Trefeca

AN
INTRODUCTION
TO
EARLY WELSH

BY
THE LATE JOHN STRACHAN, LL.D.,
*Professor of Greek and Lecturer in Celtic
in the University of Manchester*

MANCHESTER
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS
1909

PB
2123
57

UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER PUBLICATIONS
No. XL.



PREFACE

THIS book is the outcome of the courses of lectures on Welsh grammar and literature given by the late Professor Strachan at the University of Manchester during the sessions 1905-6 and 1906-7. Indeed, the Grammar is in the main an expansion of notes made for these lectures. For the numerous quotations from early Welsh literature contained in the Grammar, as well as for the Reader, Strachan made use not only of published texts, notably those edited by Sir John Rhys and Dr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans, but also of photographs specially taken for the purpose, and of advance proofs of the edition of the *White Book* and of the photographic facsimile of the *Black Book of Chirk*, about to be published by Dr. Evans, both of which were lent by him to Strachan. The Reader includes Middle Welsh Texts selected as likely to be of most value for illustration or of special interest. The very valuable work done by Dr. Evans in relation to these texts was of the greatest assistance to Professor Strachan, and as an expression of gratitude for the help thus given, as well as in recognition of the services rendered to Welsh scholarship by Dr. Evans, it was the intention of the author to dedicate his book to him.

The idea of working up his notes into a book that might serve as an introduction to the study of older Welsh seems first to have occurred to Strachan in the spring of 1907. On the fifth of April he wrote to Mr. R. I. Best, the Secretary of the School of Irish Learning in Dublin: "I have been thinking of drawing up a little primer of Early Welsh. With that the language of Middle-Welsh prose should be child's play

to learn. However, that may or may not come off." And to his old friend Dr. P. Giles of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, he wrote on the same day: "I think I must draw up and print outlines of Middle-Welsh grammar. I cannot well teach without some book, and the beginner is lost in the wilderness of the *Grammatica Celtica*." His original intention evidently was to publish a mere sketch of the grammar, somewhat like his *Old-Irish Paradigms*. But at the suggestion of his friend and colleague, Professor T. F. Tout, he decided to expand the Grammar on the larger and fuller lines of the present volume. At the same time the plan of adding a Reader of excerpts from mediæval Welsh literature took concrete shape in the course of conversations and correspondence with Dr. Evans. On both these tasks he began to work during the Summer Term of 1907. With what amazing rapidity he must have toiled to have all but completed the work by the end of the following August! Giving up a visit to Germany to which he had long been looking forward, he devoted the whole long vacation to the preparation and printing of his book. At the moment of his death, on the 25th of September, both the Grammar and Reader were in type, and he had read a first, and in some cases a second, proof. Writing to Professor Thurneysen a week before his death, he says that he had then only the notes and vocabulary to add.

After Professor Strachan's death, at the request of the Publications Committee of the Manchester University, Professor Kuno Meyer of the University of Liverpool kindly undertook the task of reading final proofs of the Grammar and Reader, and of adding a Glossary, an Index and a list of contents. In this task, which involved very considerable labour, he obtained the assistance of Mr. Timothy Lewis, who had worked for two years under Professor Strachan, and who returned

from Berlin whither he had gone to continue his studies with Professor Zimmer, and devoted the winter to help with the completion of the book. Mr. Lewis verified the quotations in the Grammar where this was possible; drew up the Glossary, prepared the Index, and revised proofs. An old student of Professor Meyer's, the Rev. Owen Eilian Owen, placed his collection of Old and Middle-Welsh words at his disposal for the elucidation of rare and difficult vocables, while both Mr. Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies read proofs of the whole book, many valuable suggestions being due to them. But Professor Meyer and Mr. Lewis are solely responsible for the Glossary.

There can be no doubt that if Strachan had lived to complete the book himself, he would have made alterations and additions in several places both in the Grammar and Reader, and would have still further normalised the spelling in his critical versions of sections IV. and V. in the Reader. It will be observed that his treatment of the texts varies greatly. Except in the sections just mentioned, he does not seem to have aimed so much at the construction of a critical text as at the presentation of a clear, precise, and intelligible version, which would at the same time serve to introduce the student to the characteristic features of Middle Welsh orthography. In the Corrigenda some necessary emendations¹ have been indicated by Professor Meyer

1. From a collation of the poems printed from the Red Book with the original, it appears that the following corrections should be made:—

- P. 233, l. 4, *for d̄g read d̄ng*
- ib., l. 19, *for aghaeat read agkaeat*
- P. 235, l. 29, *for ḡawr read ḡaŵr*
- P. 236, l. 2, *for can read kan*
- P. 237, l. 22, *for uvuldaôt read uvultaôt*
- P. 238, l. 9, *for dyrnaôt read dyrnnaôt*
- ib., l. 11, *for diffirth read diffyrth*
- ib., l. 18, *for vedissyawt read vedyssyaôt*
- ib., l. 20, *for adueil read atueil*

who has also added some further variants (marked *a*, *b*, &c.) in the foot-notes.

Strachan had left behind no material for the Glossary except a first rough list of words. In drawing it up use was made of a letter to Thurneysen, in which he expressed his intention to arrange the words according to their actual sounds. His only doubts were about the phonetic value of final *c*, *t*, *p*. On this point he wrote: "Of course final *b* is common, also certain of my texts write *d* for *d*. But none of them have *g* for final *g*." In accordance with modern pronunciation, Professor Meyer considered it desirable to substitute the letter *g*, though the period at which final *c* became voiced has not yet been established.

No notes to the texts were found among Strachan's papers. He had brought back from Peniarth, from MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, and 46, a large number of variants to the Story of Lear and that of Arthur, which he would no doubt have used for his notes. Those to Lear have been printed in an Appendix; but the Peniarth versions of Arthur seem to differ so much from those of the *Red Book* and the Additional MS. 19,709 that they would have to be printed in full.

Since the great work of Zeuss, this is the first attempt to write a grammar of Early Welsh on historical principles. It was the hope of the author expressed in letters to friends that his work would stir up Welsh scholars to investigate more thoroughly than they have done hitherto the history of their language. But no one was more conscious of the gaps still left by his work than Strachan himself. "It is only a beginning," he wrote to Thurneysen. "I hope people will make some allowance for the difficulties of the work and the scanty amount of trustworthy material. One is continually finding out something new." References to the need of further investigation will be found in many places throughout the Grammar. His own discoveries

of the functions of *ry*, of the relative forms of the verb, and his account of the uses of the verbal prefixes *a* and *yð* point out the way to future investigators in this neglected field of research. To these discoveries he was led by his unrivalled knowledge of Irish grammar, so intimately connected in its origins with that of Welsh that he believed no true progress possible without their parallel study. "It is absurd to think," he once wrote to Mr. Best, "that either branch of Celtic can be satisfactorily studied apart from the other;" and to Mr. Giles: "Without the knowledge of Irish early Welsh grammar is rather like a book sealed with seven seals."

The circumstances under which this book has been produced having been thus indicated, it remains to express acknowledgement of the work of the scholars who have contributed towards the result: first to those whose assistance to Professor Strachan in his lifetime he would specially have desired to recognise; in particular to Dr. Evans who furnished the editions both published and unpublished of the Welsh texts which were used in compiling the Reader; to the late Mr. Wynne of Peniarth who freely gave access to the MSS. in his possession; and to Sir John Rhys (joint editor of the *Red Book* and of other texts) and to the Fellows of Jesus College, Oxford, who afforded every facility in their power; secondly to those who since the author's death have enabled his work to be presented to the public, especially to Professor Tout who initiated the idea of preparing the book for publication and undertook the arrangements for it; to Professor Kuno Meyer, whose long and intimate association with Strachan in his Celtic studies specially fitted him to undertake the duty of revising the whole work and seeing it through the press; to Mr. Lewis in assisting Professor Meyer particularly in the preparation

Preverbal particles 91—97.
 The particle *yd* 91—94; the particle *ry* 95—97.
 The Verb 98—161.
 Conjugation of the verb 98—126: verbal classes 98; voice 99; number 100—101; person 102—3.
 The moods 104; the indicative 105—109; present 106; imperfect 107; preterite 108; pluperfect 109.
 The subjunctive 110—114: formation of subj. 110; tenses 111; usages of subj. 112—114.
 The imperative 115.
 The participle passive *in-edic* 116; verbal *in-adwy* 117.
 The verbal noun: formation of 118—119; usage 120—126.
 Paradigm of the regular verb 127—139: types 127; pres. and fut. indic. 128—130; imperf. indic. and conditional 131; pret. and perf. indic. act. 132; pret. and perf. indic. pass. 134; plupf. indic. 135—136; imperat. 137; pres. subjunctive 138; past subj. 139.
 Irregular verbs: *mynet* 140; *dyvot* 141; *gwneuthur* 142; *gwybot* 143; *adnabot* 144; *caffel* 145; *rodi* 146; *tawr* 147; *moes* 148; *hwde* 149; *med* 150; *heb* 151.
 The substantive verb: paradigm 152; remarks on subst. vb. 154; on copula 155—158; position of copula 159.
 Compounds of *bot* 160—161.
 The Preposition 162—197.
 The Conjunction 198—234.
 Negative particles 235—238.
 Interrogative particles 239—240.
 Responsive particles 240—241.
 The Interjection 243—244.

READER

	PAGE
I. Lear and his Daughters	139
From <i>Ystorya Brenhined y Brytanyeit</i> , printed in <i>Red Book of Hergest</i> , ed. J. Rhŷs and J. G. Evans, vol. ii, pp. 64—69. The variants are from Brit. Mus. MSS. Add. 19,709.	
II. The Story of Arthur	145
From the same source, pp. 184—232.	
III. The Hunting of Twrch Trwyth	193
An excerpt from the story of <i>Kulhwch and Olwen</i> . Chapters 1—6 are from the <i>White Book of Rhydderch</i> (Peniarth MS. 4), with variants from the <i>Red Book</i> (Rhŷs-Evans, vol. i, pp. 126—128); chapters 7—25 from the <i>Red Book</i> (ib. p. 128, l. 13—p. 142, l. 19).	

IV. The Procedure in a Suit for Landed Property	208
From the oldest copy of the Laws of Howel Dda contained in the <i>Black Book of Chirk</i> (Peniarth MS. 29). The variants are from Aneurin Owen's <i>Ancient Laws of Wales</i> , vol. i, pp. 142—156. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.	
V. The Privilege of St. Teilo	222
From Evans-Rhŷs, <i>Liber Landavensis</i> , p. 118. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.	
VI. Moral Verses	225
From the <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1031, printed in Skene's <i>Four Ancient Books of Wales</i> , vol. ii, pp. 249—250.	
VII. Doomsday	227
From the Book of Taliessin, printed in <i>Four Ancient Books</i> , vol. ii, pp. 118—123. Strachan has made no use of the variants printed in <i>Myvyrian Archaiology</i> , p. 72 ff.	
VIII. To Gwenwynwyn	233
From the <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1394, where it comes after several poems ascribed to Llywelyn Vardd; printed in <i>Myvyrian Archaiology</i> , p. 176a, where it is ascribed to Cynddelw.	
IX. Cynddelw to Rhys ab Gruffudd	234
(a) from <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , ed. J. G. Evans, fo. 39b; (b) from <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1436.	
X. A Religious Poem	237
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 20a, and from <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1159.	
XI. A Dialogue between Ugnach Uab Mydno and Taliessin	239
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 51a.	
XII. Winter	241
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 45a.	
Glossary	243
Appendix	277
Index	279
Corrigenda	293

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

Anc. Laws. Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales, edited by Aneurin Owen. 1841.

Arch. Archiv für celtische Lexikographie.

Arch. Cambr. Archaeologia Cambrensis.

BB. Black Book of Carmarthen, edited by J. G. Evans. Oxford. 1888.

BCh. Black Book of Chirk.¹

Bezz. Beitr. Bezzemberger's Beiträge zur Kunde der indogermanischen Sprachen.

Bret. Breton.

CM. Ystorya de Carolo Magno, from the Red Book of Hergest, edited by Thomas Powell. 1883.

Corn. Cornish.

Cymrod. Y Cymrodor, embodying the Transactions of the Cymrodorion Society of London. 1877 ff.

CZ. Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie.

E. Lh. Archæologia Britannica, by Edward Lhuyd. Oxford. 1707.

Eng. English.

Eriu The Journal of the School of Irish Learning, Dublin.

FB. The Four Ancient Books of Wales by W. F. Skene. Edinburgh. 1868.

Gaul. Gaulish.

Hg. Selections from the Hengwrt MSS. edited by Robert Williams, vol. I. 1876; vol. II. London. 1892.

Ir. Irish.

KZ. Kuhn's Zeitschrift für vergleichende Sprachforschung.

LA. The Elucidarium and other tracts in Welsh from Llyvyr Agkyr Llandewivrevi, edited by J. Morris Jones and John Rhys. Oxford. 1894.

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the photographic facsimile about to be published by J. G. Evans.

Lat. Latin.

Laws, see *Anc. Laws.*

Leg. Wall. *Cyfreithjeu Hywel Dda ac eraill, seu Leges Wallicae*,
edited by W. Wotton. Londini. 1730.

Lhuyd, see *E. Lh.*

Lib. Land. *Liber Landavensis*, edited by J. G. Evans and
J. Rhŷs. Oxford. 1893.

Loth Mab. *Les Mabinogion traduits en entier par J. Loth.*
Paris. 1889.

MA. *The Myvyrian Archaiology of Wales.* Denbigh. 1870.

Mart. Cap. *The Old-Welsh Glosses on Martianus Capella* edited
by Wh. Stokes in the *Archaeologia Cambrensis* for 1873,
p. 1 ff. and in *Beiträge zur vergl. Sprachforschung* VII.
p. 385 ff.

Mid. Middle.

Mod. Modern.

O. Old.

Ox. gl. *Glossae Oxonienses*, edited in Zeuss-Ebel, *Grammatica*
Celtica, p. 1052 ff. Berlin. 1871.

Pughe *A Dictionary of the Welsh Language* by W. Owen Pughe.
2. ed. Denbigh. 1832.

RB. *The Red Book of Hergest* edited by J. Rhŷs and J. G.
Evans, vol. I. (*Mabinogion*), Oxford. 1887; vol. II.
(*The Bruts*), Oxford. 1890.

Rev. Celt. *Revue Celtique.*

Rhŷs, Celt. Heath. J. Rhŷs, *Lectures on the Origin and Growth*
of Religion as illustrated by Celtic Heathendom. 3. ed.
1898.

Rhŷs, Lect. J. Rhŷs, *Lectures on Welsh Philology.* 2. ed.
London. 1879.

WB. *The White Book of Rhydderch.*¹

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the edition
about to be published by J. G. Evans.

SOUNDS AND SOUND-CHANGES.

VOWELS AND DIPHTHONGS.

I. Middle Welsh has the following system :—

Vowels :—**a, e, i, o, u, w, y.**

Diphthongs :—**ae, oe, ei, eu, aw, ew, iw, yw, wy.**

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations :

(a) **u** is written **u** or **v**, e.g. **un** or **vn** *one*. That **u** already in O.W. approached to an **i** sound is shown by the spelling **Dinoot** (from Lat. **Donatus**) in Bede for what in O.W. would be normally **Dunaut**, later **Dunawt**.

(b) **w** (=u in sound) is in Mid.W. commonly written **w** or **6**; in O.W. it is written **u**, and in some Mid.W. MSS. **u** or **v**, e.g. O.W. **crunn** *round*, later **crunn**, **crvnn**, **cr6nn**, **crwnn**. The same applies to **w** in diphthongs, e.g. O.W. **dui** *two*, later **duy**, **dv̄y**, **d̄vy**, **dwy**; O.W. **bleu** *hair*, later **bleu**, **blev**, **ble6**, **blew**.

(c) **y** is in O.W. written **i**, in Mid.W. MSS. **i, e, ý, y**, e.g. O.W. **hinn** *these*, later **henn**, **hyñnn**, **hyynn**.

(d) The diphthongs **ae, oe**, are in O.W. **ai, oi**, later **ai, aý, ay, ae; oi, oý, oy, oe**, e.g. O.W. *air* *slaughter*, later **aýr**, **ayr**, **aer**; O.W. *coit* *wood*, later **coýt**, **coyt**, **coet**.

(e) The diphthong **eu** appears in O.W. as **ou**, e.g. **aperthou** *offerings*, later **abertheu**. In final position in Mid.W. **-eu** sometimes appears as **-e**, e.g. **minhe** *on my part* = **minheu**; in Mod.W. it is written **-au**, e.g. **pennau** *heads* = Mid.W. **penneu**.

(f) For **wy**, **oý** and **oe** are also found, e.g. **boý** = **bwy** *he may be*, **moe** = **mwy** *greater*.

VOWEL QUANTITY.

2. The quantity of vowels depends not on their prehistoric quantity, but on the nature of the syllables in which they stand. Apart from dialectal variation, the following may serve as approximate rules, at least for the period subsequent to the shifting of the accent (§ 4).

A. Accented vowels are :—

(a) Long.

(a) In monosyllables ending in a vowel, e.g. **tŷ** *house*.(β) In monosyllables ending in a single consonant, e.g. **dŷn** *man* (=O.Ir. *duine*), **gwłād** *country* (=O.Ir. *flaith*), **māb** *son*, **glān** *pure* (=O.Ir. *glan*), **glās** *green* (=O.Ir. *glas*), **crŷch** *curly*.

NOTE.—**s** always goes back to an earlier **ss**; **ch**, **th**, **ff** (=f in sound) to an earlier double consonant, e.g. **crŷch** *curly* = Gaul. Crixos, **brīth** *variegated* = Ir. mrecht, **clöff** *lame* = Low Lat. cloppus; here the reduction to a single consonant was prior to the operation of the above law. In Mod.W. a vowel is short before final **c**, **t**, **p**; these final sounds occur only in late borrowings.

(b) Half-long, in open syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **dł-nas** *city*: **dīn** *fortress* (=Ir. *dūn*), **tà-deu** *fathers*: **tād** *father*.

(c) Short.

(a) In monosyllables originally ending in a double consonant (with the above exceptions), e.g. **pěnn** *head* (=Ir. *cenn*), **trv̄m** *heavy* (=Ir. *tromm*), **pärth** *part* (from Lat. *part-em*).(β) In closed syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **pěnneu** *heads*: **pěnn**, **ündeb** *unity*: **ün** *one* (=Ir. *ōen*). The vowel is somewhat shorter in polysyllables like **pennneu** than in monosyllables like **penn**.B. Unaccented vowels are short. This rule also applies to proclitic words like **heb** *without*, **fy** *mine*, **dy** *thine*.

THE CONSONANTS.

3. The consonants may be classified :—

	Explosives.		Spirants.		Nasals.	
	Voiceless.	Voiced.	Voiceless.	Voiced.	Voiceless.	Voiced.
Gutturals	c	g	ch	(z)	ngh	ng (=ŋ)
Dentals	t	d	th	ð	nh	n
Labiodentals			ff (=f)	v		
Labials	p	b			mh	m

Liquids. Voiceless:—ll, rh; voiced:—l, r.

Semivowels:—y, w.

Sibilant:—s.

Breath:—h.

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations:—

(a) For O. W. c = k, both c and k found in Mid. W., c particularly at the end of a word; e.g. O. W. cimadas *fitting*, Mid. W. kylvadas and cyvadas. In Mid. W. sc, sp became sg, sb, e.g. kysgu by kyscu *to sleep*, ysbyrd from Lat. spiritus.

(b) With regard to the graphic representation of the mediae the following may be noted. In Old British the symbols c, t, p were taken over from Latin with their Latin values. In the course of time, before the loss of final syllables, c, t, p, when they stood between vowels, or after a vowel and before certain consonants, became in sound mediae g, d, b, but continued in O. W. to be usually written c, t, p, e.g. trucarauc *compassionate* = Mid. W. trugarauc, Mod. W. trugarog, dacr *tear* = Mid. W. dagyr, atar *birds* = Mid. W. adar, datl gl. foro = Mid. W. dadyl, etn *bird* = Mid. W. edyn, cepistyr *halter* (from Lat. capistrum) = Mid. W. kebystyr. In Mid. W. g, d, b are regularly written in the interior of a word (except that c, t, p may appear in composition, e.g. rac-yngs *fore-island*, kyt-varchogyon *fellow-horsemen*, hep-cor *to dispense with*, or in inflexion and derivation under the influence of the simple word, e.g. gwylatoed, by gwyladoed *countries*: gwylat, gwaet-lyt *bloody*: gwaet). But final g is regularly expressed by c, and final d by t (except in certain MSS. such as BB. which express d regularly by d and use t to express the spirant ð). Final p for b is not so universal; there are found, e.g. pawp, pop, *everyone*, *every* by pawb, pob, and mab *son*, heb *said*.

(c) The spirant f is in O. W. written f, and this orthography survives in Mid. W., but the usual Mid. W. symbol is ff or ph. In O. W. the tenuis is sometimes traditionally written for the spirant, e.g. cilcet gl. tapijeta (from Lat. culcita) = Mod. W. cylched.

(d) With regard to the graphic representation of the voiced spirants the following may be noted. g, d, b, m were taken from Latin with their Latin values. In time, between vowels and before and after certain consonants, they became spirants ȝ, ð, v, but continued to be written g, d, b, m, e.g. scamnhegint gl. levant = later ysgavnheynt, colginn gl. aristam = Mod. W. colyn *sting*, cimadas *fitting* = Mod. W. cyfaddas, abal *apple* = later aval. In O. W. the spirant g had already been lost in part, e.g. nertheint gl. armant by scamnhegint, tru *wretched* = Ir. truag *wretched*. In Mid. W. the spirant g has disappeared. The spirant ð, which in Mod. W. is written dd, is in Mid. W. usually expressed by d, e.g. rodi to give = Mod. W. rhoddi, except in certain MSS. such as BB. which use the symbol t, e.g. roti = rhoddi. The spirant v in Mid. W. is written u, uu, v, fu, f, the last particularly at the end of a word, (e.g. cyuadas, cyvadas, cyfuadas, cyfadas *fitting* = O. W. cimadas, Mod. W. cyfaddas), in Mod. W. f; in certain MSS., however, such as BB. it is expressed by w, e.g. calaw *reeds* = calaf. In O. W. final v has been already lost in part, e.g. lau *hand* = Ir. lām, and in the course of time it tends more and more to disappear, e.g. in Mid. W. the superlative ending -af appears also as -a.

(e) The guttural nasals **ng** (i.e. *ŋ* as in Eng. *sing*) and **ngh** are often written **g** and **gh**, e.g. **llog** = *llong* *ship*, **agheu** *death* = **angheu**.

(f) The voiceless l is in O.W. written **l** at the beginning of a word, e.g. **lau** *hand* = Mid.W. **llaw**, elsewhere **ll**, e.g. **mellhionou** gl. *violas*. In Mid.W. it is in all positions written **ll** or **l**. For the voiceless **r** = Mod.W. **rh**, Early Welsh has no special symbol; it is written **r**.

(g) The semivowel **y** is in O.W. written **i**, e.g. **iechuit** gl. *sanitas*, **mellhionou** gl. *violas*: in Mid.W. it is expressed by **i**, e.g. **ieith** *speech*, or **y**, e.g. **engylion** *angels*. In the initial combinations **hw** (from an earlier **sv**), which in Mid.W. appears as **chw** or dialectally as **hw**, and **gw** (from an earlier **w**), **w** is in O.W. expressed by **u**, e.g. **hui** *you* = Mid.W. **chwi**, *guin wine* (from Lat. *vinum*) = Mid.W. **gwin**; in Mid.W. it is commonly written **6**, **w**, but in some MSS. **u**, **v**, e.g. **g6ynn**, **guynn**, **gvynn** *white*; but in Mid.W. O.W. initial **guo-** becomes **go-**. In other positions in Mid.W. **w** is expressed by **6**, **w**, sometimes by **u**, **uu**, **v**; here it comes from O.W. **gu**, e.g. O.W. **neguid** *new* = Mid.W. **newyd**, **neuyd**, **neuuyd**, O.W. **petguar** *four* = Mid.W. **petwar**, **petuar**, **petvar**. It is to be noted that initial **gw** from an earlier **w** does not form a syllable even before a consonant; thus **gwlad** *country* from ***ulatis** = Ir. **flaith** *kingdom* is monosyllabic.

THE ACCENT.

4. In accented words in Mod.W. the accent, with certain exceptions, falls on the penult, e.g. **pechádúr** *sinner*, **tragywyddol** *eternal*. This accentuation, however, has replaced an earlier system which was common to all the British dialects and is still preserved in the Breton dialect of Vannes, according to which the accent fell on the last syllable, e.g. **parawt** *ready*. The effect of this earlier accentuation is seen in the weakening of vowels in syllables that according to the later system would have borne the accent, e.g. **pechadúr** *sinner* from Lat. **peccatōrem**: **pechawt** *sin* from Lat. **peccātum**, O.W. **Dimét**, Mid.W. **Dyvet**: **Demetae**, O.W. **hinhám**, Mid.W. **hynhaf** *oldest*: **hen** *old*, Mid.W. **llynghes** *fleet*: **llong** *ship*, O.W. **cilchét**, Mid.W. **cylchet** from Lat. **culcita**, Mid.W. **drysseu** *doors*: **drws** *door*. The date of the change of accent has not yet been accurately fixed; with it seems to be connected the change of **aw** to **o** in final syllables, e.g. Mid.W. **pechawt** = Mod.W. **pechod**, of which there are sporadic instances in early Mid.W., e.g. **rýmdywod** (= **rym dywawt**), BB. 28^a 13.

CHANGES OF VOWELS.

Changes due to a vowel which follows or which originally followed.

5. The quality of a vowel is liable to be influenced by the vowel of the following syllable. Sometimes the infecting vowel remains, e.g. **Ceredic** from Old British **Coroticus**, **eyt** *goes* = O.W. **egit** by O.W. **agit**, **menegi** *to show* by **managaf** *I show*. Sometimes the infecting vowel has been lost, e.g. **trom** f. by **trwm** m. *heavy* from ***trummā**, ***trummos** (where it will be seen that the short vowel of the masculine exerted no influence, while the long vowel of the feminine did), **brein** *ravens* (by **bran** *raven*) from ***branī**, earlier ***branoi**, **cyrn** *horns* (by **corn** *horn*) from ***cornī**, earlier ***cornoi**, **dreic** *dragon* (by pl. *dragon*) from ***dracī**, from ***dracū** from Lat. **dracō**, **ceint** *I sing* (by **cant** *he sang*) from ***cantī**, from ***cantū**, from ***cantō**, **Meir** from Lat. *Maria*, **yspeil** *spoil* from Lat. *spolium*. The infection may extend back more than one syllable e.g. **menegi**: **managaf**, **deveit** *sheep*: **davat** *a sheep*. The following are the changes of the kind which are important for inflection :—

A. CHANGES DUE TO AN *i* VOWEL PRESERVED.

6. **a > e**, e.g. **ederyn** *a bird*: **adar** *birds*, **peri** *to cause*: **paraf** *I cause*, **edewis** *he promised*: **adaw** *to promise*, **cerit** *was loved*: **caru** *to love*, **llewenydd**, O.W. **leguenid** *joy*: **llawen** *joyous*.

ae > ei, e.g. **meini** *stones*: **maen** *stone*, **seiri** *artisans*: **saer**.

B. CHANGES DUE TO A LOST VOWEL.

7. (a) The lost vowel is **ā**.

y > e, e.g. **berr** f.: **byrr** m. *short*. The variation in **brith**, f. **braith** *variegated* is of the same kind; **brith** comes from ***mriktos**, **braith** from ***mrectā**, ***mricta**.

w > o, e.g. **trom** f.: **trwm** m. *heavy*.

(b) The lost vowel is **ī** (of various origin).

a > ei, e.g. **meib** *sons*: **mab** *son*, **meneich** *monks*: **manach**

monk; *geill* is able: *gallaf* I am able, *gweheird* he forbids: *gwahardaf* I forbid, *ceint* I sang: *cant* he sang.

ae > *ei*, e.g. *mein* stones: *maen* stone, *Seis* Saxon (from **Saxī*, **Saxū*, *Saxō*): *Saeson* (from *Saxōnes*).

Final *aw* > *eu*, *y*, e.g. *teu* is silent: *tawaf* I am silent, *edeu*, *edey*, *edy* leaves: *adawaf* I leave.

e > *y*, e.g. *hyn* older: *hen* old, *cestyll* castles: *castell* castle, *gwyl* sees: *gwelaf* I see, *gweryt* helps: *gwaret* to help.

o > *y*, e.g. *pyrth* gates: *porth* gate, *escyb* bishops: *escob* bishop, *tyrr* breaks: *torraf* I break, *egyr* opens: *agoraf* I open, *try* turns: *troaf* I turn.

oe > *wy*, e.g. *wyn* lambs (from **ognī*): *oen* lamb (from **ognos*).

w > *y*, e.g. *bylch* gaps: *bwlch* gap, *yrch* roebucks: *ywrch* roebuck.

NOTE 1.—In the 3 sg. pres. indic. act. of the verb the prehistoric ending is uncertain; *geill* might come phonetically from either **gallit* or **gallyet*. In verbs containing radical *o*, infection is found only in the 3 sg. pres. indic. act., e.g. *tyrr* he breaks, but *torri* to break, *torrynt* they broke, *torrir* is broken. In shaping the conjugation of these verbs analogy seems to have played a large part, but the details of the development are obscure.

NOTE 2.—It will be observed that in the case of *i* infection the infection extends back to a preceding *a*, e.g. *deveit*, *edewis*, *egyr*.

NOTE 3.—There is also a variation between *ae* and *eu*, *ei*, e.g. *caer* city: pl. *ceuryd*, *ceyrd*; *aeth* he went: *euthum* I went.

Vowel Variation due to Accent.

8. Celtic *ā* became in British *ō*; the *ō* stage is seen in Bede's *Dinoot* from Lat. *Donātus*, and in early Irish loanwords which came from Latin through Britain, e.g. *trindōit* *Trinity* from Lat. *trinitātem*. In Welsh, during the period of the older accentuation this *ō* became in accented syllables *aw*, e.g. *Dunawd*, *trindawt*, in unaccented syllables *o*. To this are due variations like O.W. *cloriou* gl. *tabellae*: sg. *clawr*, Mid.W. *marchogyon* horsemen: *marchawc* horseman, *moli* to praise: *mawl* praises, and the proclitic *pob* every (= Ir. *cách*): accented *pawb* everyone (= Ir. *cách*). After the shifting of the accent from the ultima to the penult, *aw* in accented words of more than one syllable became *o*,

e.g., Mod.W. **márhog** = Mid.W. **marchawc**, but Mod.W. **pawb** = Mid.W. **pawb**. For other instances of vowel weakening in unaccented syllables see § 4.

PROTHETIC VOWEL.

9. Before words which in O.W. began with **s** + consonant there developed in the Mid.W. period a prosthetic **y**, e.g. **ysgriven** *writing*: O.W. **scribenn**, **ystavell** *chamber*: O.W. **stabell**, **ystrodur** *packsaddle*: O.W. **strotur**, **yspeil** *spoil*: O.W. ***speil**, from Lat. *spolium*.

EPENTHETIC VOWEL.

10. Before a final liquid, nasal, or **v**, an epenthetic vowel is often written, which, however, does not count metrically as a syllable.

(a) Consonant + **l**, e.g. **mynwgyl** by **mynwgl** *neck* = Mod.W. **mynwgl**; **kenedel**, **kenedyl** by **kenedl** *race* = O.W. **cenetl**, Mod.W. **cenel**; **kwbwl**, **kwbyl** by **kwbl** *whole* = Mod.W. **cwbl**; **tavyl** *sling* = Mod.W. **tafl**.

(b) Consonant + **r**, e.g. **hagyr** by **hagr** *ugly* = Mod.W. **hagr**; **lleidyr** by **lleidr** *robber* = Mod.W. **lleidr**; **llestyr** *vessel* = O.W. **llestr**, **lestir**, Mod.W. **lestr**; **dwvyr**, **dwvwr** by **dwvr** *water* = Mod.W. **dwfr**.

(c) Consonant + **m**, e.g. **talym** *space* = Mod.W. **talm**.

(d) Consonant + **n**, e.g. **gwadyn** by **gwadn** *sole* = Mod.W. **gwadn**; **dwvyn** *deep* = Mod.W. **dwn**.

(e) Consonant + **v**, e.g. **dedyf** *custom* = Mod.W. **deddf**; **baraf**, **baryf** *beard* = Mod.W. **barf**; **twrwf**, **twryf** by **twrf** *noise*.

CONSONANTAL CHANGES.

II. The following changes of consonants in combination are of importance for accidente:—

(a) In the Indo-Germanic parent language **d** or **t + t** became **t[†]t**, and **t[†]t** in Celtic became **ss**, e.g. W. **llas** *was killed* = Ir. *-slass* from ***slat[†]tos**: **llad** *kill* = Ir. *slaidid hews*.

(b) **act>aeth**, or, with **ī** infection, **>eith**; **ect>eith**; **wct>wyth**; **wcn, wgn>wyn**, e.g. **aeth** *he went* from ***act**, but **imdeith** *I travelled* from ***actī** (earlier ***actū**, ***actō**): Mid.W. **eyd** *goes*=O.W. **egit, agit**; **dyrreith** *he returned*, from ***-rekt**: **✓reg-**; **amwyth** *he defended* from ***amukt**: **amwgaf** *I defend*, of which the verbal noun is **amwyn** from ***amucn...**

(c) **rt>rth**, e.g. **cymmerth** *he took* from ***com-bert**: **cymmeraf** *I take*.

(d) Before a labial **n** becomes **m**, e.g. **y maes** *in the field* from **yn maes**.

(e) **nd, mb > nn, mm**, e.g. **vyn nyvot, vy nyvot** *my coming* from **vyn dyvot**; **ym mwyt, y mwyt** *into food* from **yn bwyt**.

(f) **nc, nt, mp**. At the end of a word **nc, mp** remained, e.g. **ieuanc** *young*, **pump** *five*; **nt** remained in accented monosyllables, e.g. **dant** *tooth* (but proclitic **can, gan** *with*=O.W. **cant**); in words of more than one syllable it appears as **nt** or **n**, e.g. **ugeint** and **ugein** *twenty*, **carant** and **caran** *they love*. In the interior of a word **nc, nt, mp** develop regularly in the penultimate syllable to **ng, nn, mm**, in the antepenult to **ngh, nh, mh**, e.g. **tranc** *cessation*: **trengi** *to cease*; **angen** *necessity* (from ***ancen**=Ir. **ēcen**): **anghenawc** *necessitous*; O.W. **hanther** *half*, later **hanner**; **dant** *tooth*: **danned** *teeth*: **danhedawc** *toothed*; O.W. **pimphet** *fifth*, later **pymmet**; **cymhell** *compulsion* (from Lat. *compello*): pl. **cymhellyon**. The regular development, however, is liable to be affected by analogy.

NOTE 1.—The cause of the different treatment in the penult and the antepenult is the accent. In early W. the accent was on the last syllable (§ 4); the syllable immediately preceding the accent would be most weakly accented, the syllable before that would have a secondary accent, e.g. **ānghenawc, dānhedawc, cymhellyón**.

(g) Before **h**—

(a) **g, d, b** become tenues, e.g. **teckaf** *most beautiful* from ***teg-haf**: **tec** (phonetically **teg**) *beautiful*, **tebycko** from ***tebyg-ho** *he may think*: **tebygu** *to think*, **plyckau** *to fold* from ***plyg-hau**: **plyc** (phonetically **plyg**) *fold*; **calettaf** *hardest* from ***caled-haf**: **calet** (phonetically **caled**) *hard*, **cretto** *he may believe* from ***cred-ho**:

credu *to believe*, **bwyta** *to eat* from ***bwyd-ha** : **bwyd** (phonetically **bwyd**) *food*; **cyvelyppaf** *most like* from ***cyvelyb-haf** : **cyvelypp** (phonetically **cyvelyb**) *like*, **attepo** from ***ad-heb-ho** *he may answer* : **attebu**, **digaplo** *he may cease to calumniate* from ***digabl-ho** : **digablu**, **llwyprawt** from ***llwybr-hawt** *will course* : **llwybraw** *to course*.

(β) **d** becomes **th**, e.g. **diwethaf** *last* from ***diwed-haf** : **diwed** *end*, **rotho** *he may give* from ***rod-ho** : **rodi** *to give*, **rythau** *to set free* from ***ryd-hau** : **ryd** *free*.
 (γ) **v** becomes **f**, e.g. **tyffo** *he may grow* from ***tyv-ho** : **tyvu** *to grow*, **dffo** *he may come* : **dyvod** *to come*, **coffau** *to remember* from ***cov-hau** : **cof** *memory*.

NOTE 2.—Instances of **ff** from **v-h** are not numerous, they have commonly been replaced by analogical forms, e.g. **araf-hau** *to make gentle*, **digrif-af** *most entertaining*. So **th** from **d+h** becomes rarer and rarer in Mid. W., where e.g. **rotho** is replaced by **rodho** and **rodo**; the old forms are most persistent in the case of the tenues **c**, **t**, **p**. (cf. § 110)

(f) **th+d** > **th**, e.g. **athiffero** *who may defend thee* from **ath-differo**. But here commonly the **d** is written etymologically.
 (g) **d+d** became apparently **d**, e.g. **adyn** *wretch* from **ad-dyn** (**ad-** = Ir. **aih-**, with sense of Lat. **re-**).

SOUND-CHANGES WITHIN THE SENTENCE.

12. Within the sentence closely connected word groups are liable to changes similar to those that take place within individual words. As within the word vowel-flanked consonants were reduced, e.g. **cegin** *kitchen* from Lat. **coquina**, **niver** *number* from Lat. **numerus**, so in a word group, e.g. ***tōtā mārā** *great people* became **tud vawr**. As within the word **nc** became **ngh**, **nt** became **nh**, **mp** became **mh** (§ 11), **nd** became **nn**, e.g. **crwnn** *round* by Ir. **cruind**, **mb** became **mm**, e.g. **camm** *crooked* from Old British **cambos**, so in word groups, e.g. **vyn cyngkor** *my counsel* became **vy ghyngkor**, **vyn penn** *my head* became **vym penn**, **vy mhenn**, **vyn dyvot** *my coming* became **vyn nyvot**, **yn bwyd** *into food* became **ym mwyt**, **y mwyt**. But, on the one hand, a

particular mutation may spread analogically, if it becomes connected with some grammatical function; thus in Welsh it became the rule that after all feminine nouns in the singular a following adjective was mutated, though in Celtic only certain classes of feminine nouns ended in a vowel. On the other hand, the change may analogically disappear altogether, or the mutation may be restricted to certain phrases as in the case of the nasal mutation after numerals (§ 20c). In sound groups there are three kinds of initial change (1) vocalic mutation or lenation, which originated from cases where the preceding member of the group originally ended in a vowel, (2) nasal mutation where the preceding member originally ended in **n**, (3) spirant mutation where the preceding member ended in certain consonants, most commonly **s** but also **c**.

NOTE.—In reading Early Welsh texts the student must be careful not to be misled by the orthography, which does not consistently express the initial changes. Thus if he should meet with, e.g. **y gwlat** *the country* for **y wlat**, or **vyn dyvot** for **vyn nyvot**, that is only an archaic or etymological orthography which is no evidence of the actual sound at the time.

13. Table of Consonant Mutations.

		radical	vocalic	nasal	spirant
Tenues	c ...	corn	gorn	nghorn	chorn
	t ...	tat	dat	nhat	that
	p ...	prenn	brenn	mhrenn	phrenn
Mediae	g ...	gwr	wr	ngwr	
	d ...	dyn	dyn	nyn	
	b ...	baryf	varyf	maryf	
Liquids	ll ...	llaw	law		
	rh ...	rhan	ran		
Nasal	m ...	mam	vam		

NOTE 1.—In vocalic mutation **g** became first the spirant **ʒ**, which was early lost (§ 3d). From the fact that initial **g** was thus lost, many words which originally began with a vowel in time assume an initial **g**; e.g. **y ord his hammer** (=Ir. **ord**) resembled externally **y wr his man**, and this superficial resemblance led to **gord** (for **ord**) like **gwr**. The principle is the same as in the development of initial **f** before a vowel in Mid.Ir.

NOTE 2.—As in Mid.W. the spirant is commonly written **d** (§ 3d), the vocalic mutation of initial **d** is not discernible in writing.

NOTE 3.—In Mid.W. initial **rh** is written **r**, so that the unmutated and the mutated forms are indistinguishable (§ 3f).

Vocalic Mutation or Lenation.

14. The history of Welsh lenation has still to be written. In some respects, particularly with regard to lenation after the verb, the subject is full of difficulty. In the development of lenation analogy played a large part, so that to some extent the usage would differ at different periods. And the fixing of the rules of lenation for a particular period is complicated by the fact that the mutation is not consistently expressed in writing. The following are the chief facts about lenation in Mid. W. prose; the material is taken from the Red Book of Hergest.

15. **General exception to the rules of lenation.** After final **n** and **r** initial **ll** and **rh** were regularly unmutated, e.g. **yn llawen** *gladly*, **y llaw** = O.W. **ir lau** *the hand*. For **rh** the rule is seen in Mod.W., e.g. **yn rhydd** *freely*, **y rhan** *the part*. As **rh** was not written in Mid. W. this distinction is not discernible there.

A. LENATION OF NOUN AND ADJECTIVE (INCLUDING NOMINAL ADJECTIVAL PRONOUNS).

16. (a) After the article.

After the article in the sg. fem. the initial consonant of a following noun or adjective is lenated, e.g. **y gaer** *the city*, **yr dref** *to the town*, **y vrenhines** *the queen*. But **y llaw** *the hand* (§ 15).

(b) After the noun.

(a) After a noun in the feminine singular or the dual an adjective is lenated, e.g. **morwyn benngrech velen** *a curlyhaired auburn maid*, **deu vilgi vronwynnyon vrychyon** *two whitebreasted brindled hounds*. Also when the adjective is separated from the noun, e.g. **kaer uawr** *a welynt*, **vwyhaf** or **byt** *they saw a large town, the largest in the world*.

NOTE 1.—After the masc. sg. and the plur. lenation of the comparative is found in sentences of the following type: **ny welsei dyn eiryoet llu degach noc oed hwnnw** *no man had ever seen a host fairer than that* RB. 90, 13; **na welsynt llongeu gyweiryach y hansawd noe wynt that they had not seen ships better equipped than they** RB. 27, 3.

(β) After a noun in the fem. sg. or the dual a following genitive is lenated when it is equivalent to an adjective, e.g. **kist vaen** *a stone chest*; **deu vaen vreuan** *two millstones*.

NOTE 2.—The genitive is lenated after **meint**, **ryw**, **kyvryw** and **sawl** (§ 76-7), e.g. **y veint lewenyd** *the amount of gladness*; **pa ryw wysc** *what kind of dress?* **kyvryw wr** *such a man*; **y sawl vrenhined** *all the kings*. Further, the genitive of proper names is lenated after certain nouns, e.g. **Cadeir Vaxen Maxen's Seat**; **Caer Vyrdin Carmarthen**; **Llan badarn lit.** *Padarn's Church*; **Ynys Von Island of Mon**; **Eglwys Veir Mary's Church**; **Gwlat Vorgan** *the land of Morgan*; **pobyl Vrytaen** *the people of Britain*; **ty Gustenin** *the house of Custenin* (cf. Mod. W. **ty Dduw**); **mam Gadwaladyr** *mother of Cadwaladr*; **Branwen verch Lyr** *Branwen daughter of Llyr*; **gwreic Vratus** *wife of Brutus*; **deu vab Varedud** *two sons of Maredud*.

(γ) After proper nouns there is lenation of a following noun or adjective denoting a characteristic of a person, e.g. **Llud vrenhin** *King Llud*, **Peredur baladyrhir** *Peredur of the long spear*.

NOTE 3.—The initial consonants of **mab** *son* and **merch** *daughter* are lenated, e.g. **Pryderi uab Pwyll** *Pryderi son of Pwyll*, **Aranrot verch Don** *Aranrod daughter of Don*.

NOTE 4.—Further instances of lenation in apposition are, e.g. **ewythred Arthur oedynt, urodyr y uam** *they were uncles of Arthur, his mother's brothers*, **Giluaethwy ac Euyd . . . y nyeint, uebion y chwaer Gilvaethwy and Ewyd** *his nephews, his sister's sons*. **Aranrot uerch Don dy nth, uerch dy chwaer Aranrot** *daughter of Don thy niece, thy sister's daughter*.

(δ) Lenation is found in the genitive of the verbal noun, particularly when it is separated from the governing word, e.g. **menegi uot** *y crydyon wedy duunaw* *declaring that the cobblers had united*; **a dyuot . . . yn y vedwl uynet** *y hela and it came into his mind to go to hunt*; **a ryuedu o Owein yr mackwy gyuarch** *gwell idaw and Owein wondered that the youth should greet him*.

(c) After the adjective.

(a) When an adjective in the positive degree precedes, the noun is lenated, e.g. **brawdoryawl garyat** *brotherly love*, **dirvawr wres** *excessive heat*, **amryuaelyon gerdeu** *divers songs*. So after the pronominal adjective **holl** *all*, e.g. **holl gwn** *all the dogs*, **holl wraged** *all the women*.

NOTE 5.—For the comparative the material to hand from RB. is scanty; with lenation: **yn llei boen** *less pain* 146, without lenation: **mwy gobeith** *greater hope* 95, **muscrellach gwr** *a more helpless man* 13. In KB. II.

there are some instances of lenation after **mwy more**. After the superlative in RB. non-leneration seems to be the rule; in RB. II. lenation is more frequent.

NOTE 6.—In Celtic, when the adjective preceded the noun, it formed a compound with it, e.g. **hen-wrach** *old hag* (§ 34a), and in composition the lenation of the second element was regular, e.g. **eur-wisc** *golden dress*, **bore-vwyd** *morning-food, breakfast*. In Welsh, when the adjective came to be used freely before the noun, the lenation of the old compounds was retained in the positive.

NOTE 7.—On the analogy of lenation in compound words and of lenation of the noun following the adjective, in poetry, when the genitive precedes the noun, it may lenate, e.g. **byd lywyadwr** *the ruler of the world*, **o Gymry werin** *of the host of the Cymry*.

(β) When an adjective is repeated, e.g. **mwy vwy** *vyd greater and greater will be*.

(d) After **YN** forming adverbs, and with predicative nouns and adjectives (§ 35), e.g. **yn vynych** *often*, **yn borth as a help**, **yn wreic as a wife**. But **yn llawen** *gladly* (§ 15).

NOTE 8.—With regard to their influence upon a following word it is necessary to bear in mind that predicative **yn** lenates, that **yn in** is followed by the nasal mutation (§ 20b) and that **yn** with the verbal noun, e.g. **yn mynet** *going* (§ 126a), does not affect a following consonant.

(e) After numerals.

(a) After cardinal numbers.

un one. After the fem., lenation seems to be regular, e.g. **un wreic** *one woman*, **un vil** *one thousand*, **yr un gerdet** *the same going*. Initial **ll** is regularly uninflected, e.g. **un llynges** *one fleet*. After the masc. the usage seems to vary, e.g. **vn geir** *one word* RB. 197 = WB. 123, but **vn eir** RB. II. 222, **yr un march** *the same horse* RB. 9, but **neb vn varchawc** *any horseman* RB. II. 278, **yn un uaes** *in one field* RB. 114.

NOTE 9.—In Irish, **ōin** regularly mutates a following consonant. According to Rowlands, Mod. W. **un** mutates in the fem.

deu, dwy two. After these lenation is regular, e.g. **deu barchell** *two pigs*, **deu lu** *two hosts*, **dwy verchet** *two daughters*. But **deu cant** *two hundred* RB. II. *passim*.

chwech, chwe six :—**chwech wraged** *six women* RB. 18, 16; but **chwe blyned** *six years* RB. II. 387, 404.

seith seven : **seith gantref** *seven cantreds* RB. 25, 44, **seith gelfydyt** *seven arts* RB. II. 200, **seith' wystyl** *seven hostages* RB.

II. 327. But usually without lenation **seith cantref**, **seith cuppyt** seven cubits, **seith cant** seven hundred, **seith punt** seven pounds, **seith meib** seven sons.

wyth eight: **wyth drawst** eight beams RB. 111, 21, **wyth gant** eight hundred RB. II. 386, but **wyth cant** 39, 40, 230, 257, 258, 385, **wyth temyl** eight temples 101, **wyth tywyssawc** eight chiefs 14.

naw nine. After this lenation is occasionally found, e.g. **naw rad** nine ranks LA. 17.

mil thousand: **mil verthyr** a thousand martyrs RB. II. 199.

10.—In **pumwyr** five men, **seithwyr** seven men, **nawwyr** nine men, **canwr** a hundred men, there seems to be composition.

(β) After ordinal numbers.

After the feminine ordinals from *three* onwards there is lenation, e.g. **y dryded geinc** the third branch, **y seithvet vlwydyn** the seventh year, **yr vgeinuet vlwydyn** the twentieth year.

11.—The same rule seems to hold with **eil** other, second, e.g. **yr eil marchawc** the second horseman, but **yr eil vlwydyn** the second year, and with **neill** one of two, e.g. **y neill troet** the one foot, but **y neill law** the one hand.

(f) **After the pronoun.**

(a) After the possessives **dy** thy and **y** his, e.g. **dy davawt** thy tongue, **ath lu** and thy host; **y benn** his head, **ae rud** and his cheek.

(β) After interrogatives, e.g. **pa le**, **py le** where? **pa beth** what thing?

(γ) In apposition, e.g. **ynteu Bwyll** he *Pwyll*, **hitheu wreic Teirnon** she the wife of *Teirnon*; **ef Vanawydan** he *Manawydan*; on hachaws **ni bechaduryeit** because of us sinners.

(g) **After the verb.**

(a) After the verb lenation is found not only of the object but also of the subject, whether the verb immediately precedes the lenated form or is separated from it, e.g. **mi a wnn gyghor** da I know good counsel, **y gwelynt uarchawc** they saw a horseman, **ny mynnei Gaswallawn** y lad ynteu *Caswallawn* did not desire to slay him. The proportion of lenation to non-lenation differs

in different parts of the verb. After certain parts of the verb lenation is absent or exceptional. Such are 3 sg. and 3 pl. pres. ind. act., 3 sg. pres. subj. act. and the passive forms. After the 3 sg. of the pret. ind. act. non-leneration of the subject is the rule; in RB. lenation of the object is occasionally found when it directly follows the verb, e.g. **y kavas Uendigeit** *Uran he found Bendigeit Vran*, frequently when the subject precedes it, e.g. **y lladawd** *Peredur wyr* *yr iarll Peredur slew the earl's men*.

(β) After most of the forms of the verb “to be” lenation is found, most consistently in the predicate from its close connexion with the verb, but also in the subject whether it follows the verb immediately or is separated from it, e.g. *ot wyt uorwyn if thou art a maid*, *yd ym drist ni we are sad*, *yssyd urenhin who is king*, *yssit le there is a place*, *nyt oed uwyl it was not greater*, *oedynt gystal they were as good*, *mi a uydaf borthawr I am gatekeeper*, *ni a vydwn gyuarwyd we will be guides*, *ny bydei vyw he was not alive*, *y bydynt barawt they should be ready*, *ny buost gyvartal thou hast not been just*, *tra uu vyw while she lived*, *pan uuant veirw when they were dead*, *buassei oreu it would have been best*, *byd lawenach be more joyous*, *bit bont let him be a bridge*, *bydwch gedymdeithon be ye comrades*, *tra vwyf vyw while I live*, *tra vych vyw while thou livest*, *tra vom vyw while we live*, *mal na bont ueichawc so that they may not be pregnant*, *pei bewn urathedic if I were wounded*, *a vei vawr which should be great*, *gwydy y beym uedw after we were intoxicated*, *nyt oes blant there is no offspring*, *budugawl oed Gei Kei was gifted*, *y hwnnw y bu uab to him there was a son*, *cyt bei lawer o geiryd though there were many cities*, *nyt oes in gyghor we have no counsel*, *oed well ytti geisaw it were better for thee to seek*, *tost vu gantaw welet it pained him to see*. There is, however, no lenation after **ys**, e.g. **ys gwir it is true** (unless the subject be separated, e.g. *kanygwell genthi gyscu since she prefers to sleep*); after **nyt**, **nat**, **neut**, e.g. **nyt llei is not less**, **neut marw he is dead**; after **os**, e.g. **os gwr if he is a man**; after **ae** e.g. **ae gwell is it better?** after **yw**, e.g. *pan yw Peredur that it is Peredur* (unless the subject be

separated, e.g. hawd **yw** gennyf **gaffel** *I think it easy to get*; after **yttiw**, e.g. a **yttiw** **Kei** yn llys Arthur *is Kei in Arthur's court?* after **mae**, e.g. **y mae llech** *there is a flagstone* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. **y mae yma uorwyn** *there is here a maiden*); after **maent**, e.g. **y maent perchen** *there are owners*; after **byd**, e.g. ny **byd gwell** *it will not be better* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. or **byd gwell** *gnewch bresswylaw if ye think it better to dwell*); after **boet**, e.g. **poet kyvlawn** *dy rat titheu may thy prosperity be complete*; after **bo**, e.g. pan **uo parawt** *when it is ready* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. pan **uo amser** in **uynet** *when it is time for us to go*).

(h) **In adverbs and adverbial phrases.**

In the interior of a sentence the initial consonant of an adverb or an adverbial phrase is often lenated, e.g. nyth elwir **bellach** byth yn vorwyn *thou shalt never more be called a maiden*, ny orffowsyaf **vyth** *I will never rest*, pan daeth y paganyeit **gyntaf** y Iwerdon *when the pagans came first to Ireland*, bydwch yma **vlwydyn** y dyd hediw *be ye here a year to-day*, bu farw **vis whefrawr** *she died in the month of February*, pebyllaw a oruc **lawer o dydyeu** *he encamped many days*. In the same way lenation is found in preposition and suffixed pronoun, e.g. ny eill neb vynet **drwydi** *no one can go through it*, a gymero yr ergit **drossof i** *who shall take the blow in my stead*, hir uu **gennyf i** *y nos honno that night seemed long to me*.

NOTE 12.—In origin this is only a special case of post-verbal lenation, like the corresponding change in Irish, for which see Pedersen, KZ. xxxv. 332 sq.

NOTE 13.—Lenation is found of the initial consonants of some prepositions and conjunctions: **ar**=O. W. **guar** (Ir. for), **gen** by **can**, **wedy** by **gwedy**=O. W. **guetig**, **wrth**=O. W. **gwrth**, **dan** by **tan**, **dros**=O. W. **trus**, **drwy** by **trwy**=O. W. **troi**, **ban** by **pan**, **bei** by **pei**. The reason of the weakening here, however, seems to be that the words are pretonic.

(i) **After the prepositions am, ar, att, can, heb, o (a), tan, tros, trwy, uch, wrth, y, and frequently after the nominal preposition hyt**, e.g. **am betheu** *about things*; **ar vrys** *in haste*; **att Bwyll** to **Pwyll**; **gan bawb** *with every one*; **heb vwyd** *without food*; **o gerdd** *of music*; **dan brenn** *under a tree*; **dros**

vor across the sea; **trwy lewenyd** through joy; **uch benn** above; **wrth Gynan** to Cynan; **y vynyd** upwards; **hyt galan Mei** till the first of May.

(k) After a negative in phrases like **na wir** it is not true RB. 105; **na well** it is not better RB. 61.

(l) After **mor** how, so and **neu** or, e.g. **mor druan** how wretched; **neu vuelyn** or horn.

(m) After interjections.

(a) The vocative is lenated after **a**, **ha**, **oia**, **och**, **ub** e.g. **a vorwyn** O maiden; **oia wr** ho! man; **och Ereint** alas! Gereint; **ub wyr** alack! men. But without any preceding particle lenation of the vocative is found, e.g. **dos vorwyn** go, maiden.

(β) After **llyma**, **llyna**, and **nachaf**, e.g. **llyma luossogrwyd** yn ymlit see! there is a host following RB. II. 302; **llyna uedru** yn drwc there is bad behaviour; **nachaf uarchawc** yn dyuot behold! a horseman was coming.

B. LENATION OF THE PRONOUN.

17. The pronoun is lenated:—

(a) As subject or object, or emphasizing an infix or suffixed pronoun or possessive adjective, e.g. **elwyf ui** I might go, **gallaf i** I can, **ny buum drwc i** I was not evil, **y rodaf inneu** I will give, **arhowch uiui** wait for me, **na chabla di uiui** do not blame me, **nyt atwaenwn i didi** I did not recognise thee, **ath gud ditheu** which hides thee, **ohonaf i**, **ohonaf inneu** by me, **vy ysgwyd i** my shield, **dy grogi di** thy hanging, **dy lad ditheu** thy slaying.

NOTE 1.—But after final **t** **t** is usual, e.g. **y rodeist ti** thou hast given, **gan dy genyat ti** with thy leave, **dy vot titheu** thy being.

(b) Sometimes in apposition, e.g. **ni a awn ui a thi** we will go, I and thou, **keisswn ninneu ui a thi** let us seek, I and thou.

(c) After other lenating words, e.g. **gwae vi** woe to me, **neu vinneu** or I, **neu ditheu** or thou.

C. LENATION OF THE VERB.

18. The verb is lenated :—

- (a) After infixes of sg. 2, e.g. **yth elwir** *thou art called*.
- (b) After relative **a**, e.g. **govyn a oruc** *he asked*.
- (c) After the interrogative **pa**, **py**, e.g. **hyt na wydat pa** (or **py**) *wnaei* *so that she did not know what she should do*; **py liwy** *di why dost thou colour?*
- (d) When the copula follows the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu y uorwyn** *the maiden was glad*.
- (e) After the verbal particle **yt** (§ 91 note 2) in the older language, e.g. **yt gaffei** *he should get*.
- (f) After the verbal particle **ry** (but cf. § 21 note), e.g. **ry geveis** *I have got*. Similarly after **neur** (§ 95 note), e.g. **neur gavas** *he has got*.
- (g) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. **a bery di** *wilt thou effect?*
- (h) After the conjunctions **pan**, **tra**, **yny**, e.g. **pan golles** *when he lost*, **tra barhaawd** *while it lasted*, **tra vwyf** *as long as I am*, **yny glyw** *till he hears*, **yny welas** *till he saw*, **yny vyd** *till he is*.
- (i) After the negatives **ny** (including **ony**, **pony**) and **na** (with the exception of the tenues § 21e), e.g. **ny allaf** *I cannot*, **ny ladaf** *I will not slay*, **kany vynny** *since thou dost not desire*, **pony wydut ti** *didst thou not know?* **na ovyn di** *do not ask*, **Duw a wyr na ladaf i** *God knows that I will not slay*.

NOTE.—But after **ny**, **na** the rule of lenation is not absolute. In particular initial **m** is commonly unchanged, e.g. **ny mynnaf** *I do not desire*, **hyt na mynnei** *so that he did not desire*. Further, initial **b** of forms of **bot to be** is commonly unlenated, e.g. **ny bu gystal** *it was not so good*; a wypo **na bo miui** *who shall know that it is not I*. But in the imperative lenation seems to be the rule, e.g. **na uit amgeled gennwch** *be not troubled*. Non-lenation after **ny** comes from the old non-relative forms (§ 21 note). **Na** originally ended in a consonant (**nac**), so that after it the lenation is irregular; so far as it lenates it has followed the analogy of **ny**.

Nasal Mutation.

19. Nasal mutation is very irregularly written in Mid.W.MSS. The mutation of **nc** is expressed by **gk** or **gh**, the mutation of **nt**

commonly by **nt**, rarely by **nh**, the mutation of **mp** commonly by **mp**, sometimes by **mph** or **mh**. The mutation of **ng** is expressed by **gg** or **ngg**, the mutation of **nd**, **nb** by **n** or **nd**, and **m** or **mb**.

20. Nasal mutation is found :—

(a) After **vyn** *my*, e.g. **vygkyngkor**, **vyghyngkor** *my counsel*, **vyntat**, **vynhat** *my father*, **vypenn**, **vymphen**, **vymhen** *my head*, **vyggwreic** (**gwreic**) *my wife*, **vynggwely** *my bed*, **vynyvot**, **vyndyvot** *my coming*, **vymaraf** (**baraf**) *my beard*.

(b) After **yn** *in, into*, e.g. **ygkarchar**, **ygharchar** *in prison*, **ympered**, **ymherved** *in the centre*, **ymhoen** (**poen**) *in punishment*; **yn diwed** (= **yn niwed**) *in the end*; **ymbwyd**, **ymwyd** (**bwyd**) *into food*.

(c) In certain phrases after numerals (chiefly with **blyned** *years* and **dieu**, **diwarnawt** *days*), e.g. **pump mlyned** *five years*, **chwech mlyned** RB. II. 397 (more usually **chwe blyned**) *six years*, **seith mlyned** *seven years*, **wyth mlyned** *eight years*, **naw mlyned** *nine years*, **naw nieu** *nine days*, **deng mlyned** *ten years*, **dec nieu** *ten days*, **deudec niwarnawt** *twelve days*, **pymtheng mlyned** *fifteen years*, **ugein mlyned** *twenty years*, **deugeint mlyned** *forty years*, **cant mlyned** *a hundred years*, **can mu** *a hundred kine*, **trychan mu** *three hundred kine*.

NOTE.—This usage started from those numerals which in Old Celtic ended in **n**: **seith** (cf. Ir. *secht* **n**-, Lat. *septem* ; final **m** in Celtic became **n**), **naw** (cf. Ir. *nōi* **n**-, Lat. *novem*), **dec** (cf. Ir. *deich* **n**-, Lat. *decem*), **cant** (cf. Ir. *cēt* **n**-, Lat. *centum*).

Spirant Mutation.

21. This is found :—

(a) After the numerals **tri** *three* and **chwe(ch)** *six*, e.g. **tri chantref** *three cantreds*, **tri pheth** *three things*, **chwe thorth** *six loaves*.

(b) After **y** *her*, e.g. **y chlust** *her ear*, **y throet** *her foot*, **y phenn** *her head*.

(c) After the prepositions **ac**, **a** *with*, **tra** *beyond*, e.g. **a chledyf with a sword**, **a thi** *with thee*, **tra thonn** *beyond wave*.

(d) After the conjunctions **a(c)** *and*, **no(c)** *than*, **o** *if*, e.g. **mam a that** *father and mother*, **traet a phenn** *feet and head*; **gwaeth no chynt** *worse than before*; **o chigleu** *if he has heard*.

NOTE 1.—After **kwt** *where* spirant change is found: **cv threwna** *where it settles* BB. 44^b, but **kwt gaffei** (*caffei*) *where he should get* WB. 453; cf. **cud vit** BB. 44^b, **cwd uyd** *where it will be* FB. 146.

(e) After the negatives **ny** and **na(c)**, e.g. **ny chysgaf** *I will not sleep*, **ny thyrr** *does not break*, **ny phryn** *does not buy*; **na chwsc** *do not sleep*, **na thorraf** *that I do not break*, **na marchawc** *na phedestyr* *neither horseman nor footman*.

NOTE. 2.—But in the early poetry **ny** produces the spirant change only when it is non-relative; when it is relative a following **c**, **t**, or **p** is lenated, e.g. **ny char** *he does not love*, but **ny gar** *who does not love*. In the early poetry there is the same difference of treatment after the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. **ry charas** *has loved*, **ry garas** *who has loved*. This distinction between non-relative and relative forms must have extended to all consonants capable of mutation, but in the case of the other consonants confusion set in earlier. In later Mid. W. after **ny** the non-relative form has been generalised in the case of words beginning with **c**, **t**, **p**, the relative form, with certain exceptions, in the case of words beginning with other mutable consonants (cf. § 18 i). After **ry** the relative form was generalised. For further details see Eriu III. pp. 20 sq.

h in Sentence Construction.

22. After certain words **h** appears before a following word beginning with a vowel.

(a) After the infix and the possessive pronoun **m**, e.g. **am h-ymlityassant** *who followed me*, **om h-anvod** *against my will*.

(b) After the infix pronoun **e**, e.g. **ae h-arganvu** *who perceived him*.

(c) After **y her**, e.g. **y h-enw her name**.

NOTE.—In Irish also **h** appears after **a her**, e.g. **a h-ainm her name**. The Irish and Welsh **h** here comes from the original final **s** of the possessive.

(d) After **an our**, e.g. **an h-arueu our arms**.

(e) After **eu**, **y their**, e.g. **eu h-arueu their arms**.

(f) After **ar** before **ugeint twenty**, e.g. **un ar h-ugeint twenty one**.

THE ARTICLE.

(23.) In O.W. the article is **ir** throughout, e.g. *ir pimphet eterin the fifth bird, dir finnaun to the fountain*. In Mid.W. **yr** remains before vowels and **h**, e.g. *yr amser the time, yr alanas* (from *galanas*) *the bloodfine, yr henwr the old man*; before other consonants except **y** it becomes **y**, e.g. *y bwyt the food, y wreic* (from *gwreic*) *the woman*; before **y** the usage varies, e.g. *yr iarll* or *y iarll the earl*. But if the article be fused together with a preceding conjunction or preposition, or if the **y** be elided after a preceding vowel, then **'r** remains, e.g. *y nef ar dayar heaven and earth, yn gyuagos yr gaer near to the city, gwiryon yw'r uorwŷn ohonof i the maiden is innocent as regards me*.

SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

24. (a) In addition to its use before common nouns the article appears regularly before the names of certain countries, such as **yr Affrica Africa, yr Asia Asia, yr Alban Scotland, yr Almaen Germany, yr Eidal Italy, yr Yspaen Spain**, e.g. *vn yw yr Asia, deu yw yr Affrica, tri yw Europa Asia is one, Africa is two, Europe is three* FB. 216. Occasionally the article appears before names of persons, e.g. **yr Beli mawr (=y Beli uawr WB. 191) to Beli the Great** RB. 93, 2; *mwyhaf oe vrodyr y karei Lud y Lleuelys Llud loved Lleuelys more than any of his other brothers* ib.

(b) The article is not used before a noun followed by a dependent genitive, e.g. *gwyr ynys y kedyrn the men of the island of the strong*, unless it be accompanied by a demonstrative pronoun, e.g. **or meint gwyrtheu hwnnw from that amount of miracles**, or unless the genitive be the equivalent of an adjective, e.g. **y werin eur the golden chessmen, y moch coet the wild pigs** (lit. *the pigs of the wood*), **y peir dateni the cauldron of rebirth, the regenerative cauldron**.

THE NOUN.

NUMBERS AND CASES.

25. In Welsh the old Celtic declension is completely broken down. Of the three genders the neuter has been lost. The dual, which, as in Irish, is always preceded by the numeral for *two*, in some classes of nouns would phonetically have fallen together with the singular; in Welsh this has been generalised so that the dual (apart from forms like **deu ychen** *two oxen*) coincides in form with the singular; a trace of the dual inflection remains in the lenation of a following adjective, e.g. **deu vul gadarn** (from **cadarn**) *two strong mules*, **deu vilgi vronwynnion vrychion** *two whitebreasted brindled greyhounds*. In the regular inflexion there remains only one case for each number; in the singular this corresponds sometimes to the old nominative, e.g. **car** *friend* = Ir. *carae*, sometimes to the form of the oblique cases, e.g. **breuant** *windpipe* = Ir. *brāge*, g. *brāgat*; a few traces of lost cases still survive in phrases, e.g. **meudwy** *hermit* (lit. *servant of God*), where **dwy** is the genitive of **duw**; **erbyn** *against* (= Ir. *ar chiunn*), where **pynn** (from **pendī*, from **pendū*) is the dative of **penn** *head*; **peunyd** *every day*, **peunoeth** *every night*, where **peun-**, which in O.W. would be **poun-*, comes from **popn-*, the old accusative singular of **pob** *every*.

SYNTAX OF THE CASES.

26. As in Irish, the nominative may stand absolutely at the beginning of the sentence to introduce the subject of discourse, e.g. **y wreic honn** *ym penn pythewnos a mis y byd beichogi idi*, lit. *this woman, at the end of a fortnight and a month there will be conception to her*. In prose the genitive follows the noun on which it depends, e.g. **enw y mab** *the name of the son*; in poetry it may precede, e.g. **byt lywaydur** = **llywaydur byt** *the ruler of the world*; sometimes, as in Irish, it is used after an adjective meaning *with respect to a thing*, e.g. **nŷ bŷd y anuodlawn y phryt** *thou wilt not*

be displeased with her form. The accusative can be recognised only from the construction; in poetry the accusative of a place-name is common after verbs of motion, e.g. dywed **y down Arwystli** say that we will come to *Arwystli* MA. 192^b.

FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

27. A. The plural is based on Old Celtic plural formations.

(a) Plural with **i** infection (§ 7b), e.g. *march horse*: **meirch**, *manach monk*: **meneich**, *maen stone*: **mein**, *oen lamb*: **wyn**, *asgell wing*: **esgyll**, *corn horn*: **cyrn**, *escob bishop*: **escyb**, *gwr man*: **gwyr**.

NOTE 1.—This represents the old plural formation of **-o-** stems, e.g. *meirch* from **marci* from **marcoi*. In part, however, it might represent the plural of **-i**-stems, cf. Ir. *süili eyes*: *süil eye*. In *dagr* *tear* the plur. *deigr* (=Ir. *dér*) comes from **dacru*, the plur. of a neut. **-u-** stem.

NOTE 2.—Many substantives which regularly form their plural otherwise, particularly such as form their plural in **-ion**, follow this inflexion after numerals above *two*, e.g. *tri gweis* *three boys*, *seith meib* *seven sons* (GC, 2 283).

(b) Plural in **-eu**, **-ieu** (O.W. **-ou**, **-iou**), e.g. *gen jaw*: **geneu**, *penn head*: **penneu**, *cledyf sword*: **cledyveu**, *pebyll tent*: **pebyllyeu**, *glin knee*: **glinyeu**.

NOTE 3.—**-ou**, **-eu** started from **-oues**, the nom. pl. of **-u-** stems, cf. Gaulish *Lugoves*.

(c) Plural in **-on** **-ion**, e.g. *medyc physician*: **medygon**, *cenaw whelp*: **cenawon**, *lleidr robber*: **lladron**, *mab son*: **meibyon**, *dyn man*: **dynyon**, *gelyn enemy*: **gelynyon**. This is the common ending of adjectives.

NOTE 4.—*morwyn maiden* becomes in the plural *morynyon*.

NOTE 5.—**-on** is based on **-ones**, the nom. pl. of masc. and fem. **-n-** stems, cf. Gaulish *Lingones*. The borrowed *lleidr robber*: *lladron* represents an older **latrī* (from **latrū latrō*) ; **latrōnes*; similarly *dreic dragon*: **dragon**, *Seis Saxon*: **Saeson**.

(d) Other old consonantal plurals, e.g. *car relative*: **carant** (from **carants*: **carantes* = Ir. *carae*: *carait*), *ci dog*: **cwn** (from **kuū*: **kunes*), *ych ox*: **ychen**, *brawt brother*: **broder**, *troet foot*: **traet**, *ty house*: **tei** (an old neut.-**s**-stem, cf. Ir. *tech*:

tige). Under the influence of §27a **carant** became **cereint**, **broder** became **brodyr**; in the same way may be explained **nei nephew**: **neieint**, **gof smith**: **goveint**. Some neut. -n-stems make their plur. in -ein, e.g. **enw** (O.W. **anu**) *name*: **enwein**, **cam step**: **cemmein**; here ***-en** might have been expected as in Ir. **bēim blow**: **bēmmen**; the change of ***-en** to **-ein** may be explained as above.

28. B. The plural is formed by various suffixes, many of which appear in the formation of abstract nouns.

(a) -awr, -iawr, e.g. **ysgwyd** *shield*: **ysgwydawr**, **gwaew spear**: **gwaywawr** (also **gwaewar**, **gwewyr**), **cat battle**: **cadyawr**.

NOTE.—This formation is mostly poetical.

(b) -awt (= -awd), e.g. **pysc** *fish*: **pyscawt**, **gorwyd** *steed*: **gorwydawt**.

(c) -et (= -ed), e.g. **merch** *daughter*: **merchet**, **pryf** *worm*: **pryvet**.

(d) -ed (= -ed), e.g. **bys** *finger*: **byssed**, **dant** *tooth*: **danned**, **gwreic** *woman*: **gwraged**.

(e) -eit, -ieit (= -eid, -ieid), e.g. **mil** *animal*: **mileit**, **barwn baron**: **barwneit**, **barwneyit**.

(f) -i, e.g. **llestyr** *vessel*: **llestri**, **cawr** *giant*: **cewri**, **saer artificer**: **seiri**.

(g) -ot (= -od), e.g. **hyd** *stag*: **hyddot**, **llwdn** *beast*: **llydnot**.

(h) -oed (= -oed), e.g. **mor** *sea*: **moroed**, **ieith** *language*: **ieithoed**.

(i) -yd (= -yð), e.g. **avon** *stream*: **avonyd**, **gwlat** *country*: **gwledyd**, **chwaer** *sister*: **chwioryd**.

29. C. Some nouns are collective, with a singular formation in -ynn masc., -enn fem., e.g. **adar** *birds*: **ederyn** *a bird*, **calaf reeds**: **celevyn** *a reed*, **coll hazles**: **collenn** *a hazle*, **tywys** *ears of corn*: **tywysen** *a corn ear*.

THE ADJECTIVE.

GENDER.

30. There is a special form of the feminine only in the singular, and only in adjectives containing **y**, **w**, which in the feminine became **e**, **o** (§ 7a), e.g. **gwynn** *white*: **gwen**, **melyn** *yellow*: **melen**, **bychan** *small*: **bechan**, **brith** *variegated*: **breith**, **llwmm** *bare*: **llomm**, **crwnn** *round*: **cronn**.

In the singular the adjective is lenated after a feminine noun, e.g. **gwreic dec** *a beautiful woman* (§ 16ba); in the plural there is no lenation.

NOTE.—In the Celtic adjective there were **-o-** stems, **-i-** stems and **-u-** stems, which are distinguishable in O.Ir., e.g. **tromm** *heavy* from ***trummo-s**, **cruid** *round* from ***crundi-s**, and **il** *much* from ***pelu-s**. Only the **-o-** stems had a fem. in **-a**, so that only in these is the Welsh change of vowel etymologically justified. But in Welsh, after the loss of final syllables, the three classes were indistinguishable in the masculine, and the vowel-change in the feminine spread analogically from the **-o-** stems to the others, e.g. **crwnn** from ***crundis** formed a feminine **cronn** after the analogy of **tromm**: **trwmm**, etc.

FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

31. The plural is formed:—

- (a) By change of vowel e.g. **bychan** *small*: **bychein**, **ieuanc** *young*: **ieueinc**.
- (b) By adding **-on**, e.g. **du** *black*: **duon**, **gwineu** *bay*: **gwineuon**.
- (c) By adding **-yon** (its usual formation), e.g. **gwynn** *white*: **gwynnyon**, **melyn** *yellow*: **melynyon**.

CONCORD.

Gender.

32. In the singular the attributive adjective agrees in gender with its noun, e.g. **gwas** **melyn** *an auburn lad*, **morwyn** **benngrech** **velen** *a curly-headed auburn maiden*. With the predicative adjective agreement is also found, e.g. **un** *ohonunt oed* **amdrom** *one of them was very heavy* RB. 54, 17, oed **amdroch**

llynges *the fleet was shattered* MA. 150^b, *bit wenn gwylyan* *the seagull is white* FB. 247, **llem awel** *keen is the wind* FB. 255, *ys lledan y lenn* *its mantle is broad* FB. 146, **bolch y lauyn** *his blade is notched* MA. 172^a; but here the masculine form is also found, e.g. **llym awel** *keen is the wind* BB. 45^a 1, *pan yw gwyrd llinos* *when the linnet is green* FB. 133, *oedd bwlch llafn* *yn llaw gynnefin* *the blade was notched in a practised hand* MA. 217^b, **guaedlyd y lein** *bloody is his spear* MA. 184^a.

Number.

33. With the attributive adjective there is concord, the dual or a singular noun preceded by a numeral having the construction of the plural, e.g. **danned hiryon melynyon** *long yellow teeth*, **deu vackwy wineuon ieueinc** *two auburn young lads*, **pedeir meillionen gwynnyon** *four white blades of clover*. But there are many exceptions; with certain adjectives the singular is regularly used; such are adjectives in **-awc**, **-awl**, **-eid**, **-ic**, comparatives and superlatives, some other simple adjectives such as **mawr** *great*, **tec** *beautiful*, and compound adjectives; e.g. **gwyr arvawc** *armed men* (but exceptionally **o vrenhined coronogyon** *of crowned kings* WB. p. 90^a), **llygeit hebogeid** *hawklike eyes*, **niveroed mawr** *great numbers*, **dyrnodeu calet-chwerw** *hard bitter buffets*. With the predicative adjective there are found on the one hand, e.g. **bychein ynt wynteu** *they are small* RB. 60, **wynteu a veyt veirw** *they would be dead* Hg. I. 138, *oedd beilch gweilch* *heroes were proud* MA. 217^b, **kertoryon** *neud ynt geith* *now poets are captive* MA. 157^b, on the other hand, e.g. **cadarn oed y holl aelodau** *all his limbs were strong* CM. 26, **balch iawn yw dy eiryeu** *thy words are right haughty* CM. 34, **marw ynn** *they are dead* MA. 164^a, **rud ynt wy** *they are red* FB. 284, **doeth y veirt** *his bards are learned* MA. 262^a, *ys da y gampeu* *his feats are good* MA. 237^b. The whole subject needs a thorough investigation.

Order.

34. (a) In Welsh, as in the other Celtic languages, the adjective normally follows the noun, e.g. **dyn doeth** *a wise man*, **gwreic**

dec *a fair woman*, **arveu trymyon** *heavy arms*. In Celtic, when the adjective preceded, it formed a compound with the noun, e.g. Gaulish **Cambo-dunum**, which would in W. be ***cam-din**, O.Brit. **Cuno-maglos** lit. *lofty chief* = W. **Cynvael**, W. **hen-dyn** *old man* (= Ir. *sen-duine*) from ***seno-dunyos**, W. **prif-dinas** *chief city* (cf. Ir. *prím-dún chief fort*), W. **hen-wrach** *old hag*, which would in Irish be ***sen-fracc**. From this principle W. has departed in that, under conditions the details of which have still to be investigated, the inflected adjective may precede the noun, e.g. **bolch-lauyn** *a cutting blade* MA. 263^a, **gwen llaw** *white hand* MA. 153^b, **amryvaelon gerdeu** *various songs*.

(b) In various phrases the noun with the preposition **o, a** follows the adjective, e.g. *ys drwc a gedymdeith* *a uuost di thou hast been a sorry comrade*, *bychan a dial oed an lloski ni our burning were a small revenge*, *ys dyhed o beth it is a strange thing*.

THE PREDICATIVE NOUN AND ADJECTIVE WITH YN.

35. A predicative noun or adjective is often preceded by **yn** (lenating), e.g. *gwyd y llosci canhwyll ohonei yn oleuat* *idaw after she had lighted a candle as a light to him*, *mi ath roessum yn wreic y Uanawydan* *I have given thee as a wife to Manawyddan*, *ych gelwir chwi yn Grystonogyon* *ye are called Christians*, *neum goruc yn oludawc* *he has made me wealthy*, *a phob ty a welei yn llawn o win and every house he saw full of wine*, *yd oed ef yn holliach* *he was quite well*, *un a welei yn amdrom* *one (fem.) he saw very heavy*, *paham y maent hwy yn varw o newyn* *why are they dead with hunger?* *mi a wnaf seith cant ohonawch yn ueirw* *I will make seven hundred of you dead men*, *an gunel in rit* *may He make us free*, *eu gwneuthur yn rydyon* *to make them free*, *eu clusteu yn gochyon* *their ears red*, *eu harwydyon yn purwynn* *their standards pure white*. The concord after the feminine and the plural still needs investigation.

ADJECTIVE PHRASES.

36. In place of a simple adjective may be found an adjectival phrase, e.g. *gwr dirvawr y veint* *a man of huge size* (lit. *a man huge his size*), *eurwalch balch bolch y daryan* *a proud golden hero with hacked shield* (lit. *hacked his shield*), *gwreic digonach y thecket* *a woman of more perfect beauty*, *dyrnodeu diuessured eu meint mighty buffets*, *drwc a dyn y thygetuen* *a woman of unhappy fate* (lit. *ill of a woman her fate*), *ys drwc a wyr eu dihenyd* *vydem ni we should be men of an ill ending*, *pan yttoedynt yn digrifaf gantunt eu gware when they were most interested in their play*, *y wreic vwyhaf a garei* *the woman whom he most loved*.

COMPARISON.

37. (a) The regular suffix of the comparative is **-ach**, of the superlative **-haf** (for the phonetic changes see § 11g), e.g.—

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
tec (= <i>teg</i>) <i>beautiful</i>	tegach	teckaf
tlawt (= <i>tlawd</i>) <i>poor</i>	tlodach	tlottaf
cyffelyb <i>like</i>	cyffelybach	cyffelyppaf

NOTE.—In Mod. W. the consonantism of the superlative has spread to the comparative, e.g. *teg*, *tegach*, *tecaf*.

(b) The following are irregular:—

agos	nes (Ir. <i>nessa</i>)	nesaf (Ir. <i>nessam</i>)
cyfagos }	llei (Ir. <i>lugu</i>)	lleiaf (Ir. <i>lugem</i>)
bychan <i>small</i>	gwell	goreu
da <i>good</i>	gwaeth	gwaethaf
drwc <i>evil</i>	haws	hawsaf
hawd <i>easy</i>	hyn (Ir. <i>siniu</i>)	hynaf
hen <i>old</i> (Ir. <i>sen</i>)	hwy (Ir. <i>sia</i>)	hwyaf (Ir. <i>siam</i>)
hir <i>long</i> (Ir. <i>sir</i>)	ieu (Ir. <i>ōa</i>)	ieuaf (Ir. <i>ōam</i>)
ieuanc <i>young</i> (Ir. <i>ōac</i>)	is	isaf
isel <i>low</i> (Ir. <i>īssel</i>)	llet (Ir. <i>letha</i>)	llettaf
llydan <i>broad</i> (Ir. <i>lethan</i>)	mwy (Ir. <i>mōa</i>)	mwyhaf (Ir. <i>mōam</i>)
mawr <i>great</i> (Ir. <i>mōr</i>)	trech (Ir. <i>tressa</i>)	trechaf (Ir. <i>tressam</i>)
tren <i>strong</i> (Ir. <i>trēn</i>)	uch	uchaf
uchel <i>high</i> (Ir. <i>ūassal</i>)		

Construction of the Comparative and Superlative.

38. (a) The comparative is followed by **no**, before vowels **noc** *than*, e.g. *ny bu hwy no hynny it was not longer than that*, **mwy** *a vyrywys ef y dyd hwnnw noc undyd more he threw on that day than on any single day*.

(b) The superlative is followed by the preposition **o**, e.g. *y uorwyn deckaf onadunt the fairest maiden of them*.

(c) In sentences like *the more the better* the superlative is used, e.g. *pei vwyhaf y lladei ef y march pellaf vydei hitheu y wrthaw ef the more he struck the horse the farther she was from him* RB. 9, 13; *goreu yw gennyf i bo kyntaf the sooner it is the better it pleases me* RB. 12, 4.

THE EQUATIVE.

39. The possession by two objects of a quality in the same degree is expressed by a derivative in **-het** (= **-hed**) from the adjective preceded by **cyn-**, **cy-**, e.g. **kynduhet** (*du*) **ar muchud** *as black as jet*, **kyngadarnet** (*cadarn*) **ac Adaf** *as strong as Adam*, **kyndecket** (*tec*) **a hi** *as fair as she*, **kynvelynet** (*melyn*) **ar eur** *as yellow as gold*, **kynehofnet** (*ehovyn*) **a hynny** *as fearless as that*, **kynwynnet** (*gwynn*) **ar eiry** *as white as snow*, **kygadarnet a brenhin** *as strong as a king*, **kyduet ar muchud** *as black as jet*, **kywynnet ar alaw** *as white as the lily*.

NOTE 1.—The Celtic preposition **com-** would in Welsh become **cym-**, **cyn-**, **cyf-**, **cy-** according to the following sound, and would be liable to various changes in connexion with a following consonant, e.g. **com + vowel** > **cyf**, **com + i- > cyfi**, **com + w- > cy-**, **com + p- > cymh-**, **com + b- > cymm-**, **com + g- > cyngh-**, **com + d- > cynn-**, etc.; there is an interesting example of the regular development in **cythrymhet** (*trwmm*) RB. 112, for **ntr** becomes **thr**. But the form **cyn-** with analogical lenation became the general form before all sounds, though for a time it had to contend with **cy-**, the form which would arise in Celtic before initial **w**. For a discussion of the formation see Zimmer KZ. xxxiv. 161 sq., Loth Rev. Celt. xviii. 392 sq., Stern CZ. iii. 135 sq.

NOTE 2.—Equality may also be expressed by **mor—a**, e.g. *pryf mor dielw a hynny a creature so vile as that*, *am gyflafan mor anwedu* **ac a wnaetho** *on account of a crime so base as he had committed*.

THE ADVERB.

40. The adverb is regularly formed from the adjective by prefixing **yn** (lenating), e.g. **yn vawr** (*mawr*) *greatly*, **yn llawen** *gladly*,

yn drwmm (trwmm) *heavily*, **yn well better**, **yn vwyhaf** *most*. But, if it precedes the verb, the adjective is used without **yn**, e.g. **mynych** *y dywedut thou didst often say*; in the following sentence both forms occur: **kanys mwy y karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet**. *a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu yn vwy nor rei ereill for he had always loved her more than the others, while she contemned him more than the others* RB. II. 65.

THE NUMERALS.

41. CARDINALS AND ORDINALS.

One, etc.

i. un	cyntaf
ii. deu, f. dwy	eil
iii. tri, f. teir	trydyd, f. tryded
iv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir	petwyryd, petweryd, f. petwared; also pedwyryd, etc.
v. pump	pymhet
vi. chwech, chwe	chwechet
vii. seith	seithvet
viii. wyth	wythvet
ix. naw	nawvet
x. dec, deng	degvet
xi. un ar dec	unvet ar dec
xii. deudec	deudegvet
xiii. tri, f. teir, ar dec	trydyd, f. tryded, ar dec
xiv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar dec	petwyryd, etc., f. petwared, etc., ar dec
xv. pymthec, pymtheng	pymthegvet
xvi. un ar bymthec	unvet ar bymthec
xvii. deu, f. dwy, ar bymthec	eil ar bymthec
xviii. tri, f. teir, ar bymthec	trydyd, f. tryded, ar bymthec
xix. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar bymthec, un eisieu o ugein	petwyryd, etc., f. petwared, etc., ar bymthec
xx. ugeint, ugein	ugeinvet

NOTE.—The form *deng* is found only before nouns beginning with certain sounds, cf. Rev. Celt. XXVIII. 201.

xxi.-xcix. In O.W. *trimuceint* is found for *thirty*. The usual reckoning, however, is by multiples of *twenty* :—**deugein(t)** (O.W. *douceint*) *forty*, **deugeintvet** *fortieth*, **trugein(t)** *sixty*, **trugeinvet** *sixtieth*, **petwarugein(t)** *eighty*, **petwarugeinvet** *eightieth*. The intermediate numbers are expressed by addition, e.g. **un ar hugein(t)** *twenty-one*, **dec erydyr ar hugeint** *thirty ploughs*, **deudec brenhin ar hugeint** *thirty-two kings*, **deng mlyned a deugeint** *fifty years*, **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint** *seventy-two years*, **petwyryd ar ugeint** *twenty-fourth*. This reckoning may extend beyond a hundred, e.g. **pedeir gwlat a seith ugeint** *one hundred and forty-four countries*.

c.-ccicō. **Cant** *hundred*, **canvet** *hundredth*. From this the other hundreds are formed by prefixing the cardinals:—**deucant** or **deugant**, **trichant**, **petwarcant**, **pumcant**, **chwechant**, **seithcant**, **wythcant**, **nawcant**. **Mil** *thousand*, **dwy vil** = *two thousand*, etc. **Un vlwydyn ar bymthec ar hugeint a deucant** = 236 years; **chwech marchawc a thrugeint a phumcant** = 566 horsemen; **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint ac wythcant** = 872 years; **deg mlyned a phetwar ugeint a chant a mil** = 1190 years. **ccicō.** **myrd** *myriad*.

Syntax of the Cardinals and Ordinals.

42. (a) After **deu**, **dwy**, the singular (i.e. historically the dual § 25) form is regularly used; but there are exceptions, e.g. **deu ychen** *two oxen* (where, however, the form might be dual), **dwy chwiored** *two sisters* LA. 39, RB. II. 39, **dwy burloywduon** *hirueinon aelev* *two brilliant black long slender eyebrows* (by **dwy ael**) LA. 93, **deu rudellyon lygeit** *two ruddy eyes* ib., **deu perffeithloyw gochyon rudyew** *two perfect brilliant red cheeks* ib., **deu nyeint** *two nephews* RB. II. 69, **dwy wraged** *two wives* ib. 239 **dwy vlyned** *two years* ib. 240. As to the higher numbers the general rule is that, if there be a plural with internal vowel change (§ 27a), the plural is used, e.g. **tri meib** *three sons*, but otherwise the noun is in the singular, e.g. **teir ynys** *three islands* (pl. **ynysed**), **petwar marchawc** *four horsemen* (pl. **marchogyon**). There are, however,

exceptions, e.g. **teir chwioryd** *three sisters*, **pump gwraged** *five women*, **trychant tei** *three hundred houses*; so very often with **dyd** *day* pl. **dieu**, and **blwydyn** *year* pl. **blyned**. Compare the exceptions after **deu** above. Another mode of expression is, e.g. **tri chawr o gewri** *three giants*, lit. *three giants of giants*.

(b) The ordinals precede the noun, e.g. **y betwarded** *vlwydyn the fourth year*. But **cyntaf** usually follows, e.g. **y marchawc kyntaf** *the first horseman*; sometimes, however, it precedes, e.g. **kyntaw geir** a *dýwedaw the first word that I will say* BB. 41^b 1. The ordinal may denote not the order in a series, but, as also in Irish, one of a certain number, e.g. *odena y kerdu*s er *tir a naw kedem-deith ganthav*, **ar nauvet** *a las ar hynt thence he came to land with nine comrades, and one of the nine was slain at once* Arch. Cambr. 1866 p. 114, **ý trýdý gwr** *a dienghis o Gamlan one of the three men who escaped from Camlan* WB. 463; **e tredyt anhebchor** *one of the three indispensables* BCh. 8.

DISTRIBUTIVES.

43. These are expressed by prefixing **pob** *every* to the cardinal, e.g. *eu bwrw pob dec pob deudec* *throwing them by tens and twelves* Hg. II. 160, *gwin ý bid hi ý vedwen in diffrin* Guy a sirth ý chegev **pop vn pop dvy** *happy the birch in the valley of the Wye, whose branches fall by twos and threes* BB. 24^a.

MULTIPLICATIVES.

44. These are expressed by **gweith** f. preceded by the cardinal, e.g. **unweith** *once*, **dwy weith** *twice*, **teir gweith** *thrice*, **pedeir gweith** *four times* etc.

THE PRONOUN.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The Independent Pronoun.

45. Independent pronouns fall into three sub-divisions, (a) the simple pronoun, (b) the emphatic pronoun, (c) the conjunctive or contrasting pronoun (*I also, I on my part, I on the other hand*,

etc.) When attached to a verb as its subject the pronouns are liable to weakening, e.g. **vi**, **i** for **mi**, **di** for **ti**, **ditheu** for **titheu**. Classes (a) and (c) are used also to reinforce an infixed pronoun (§ 49a), a pronominal preposition (§ 52), or a possessive pronoun (§ 56), or possessive adjective (§ 58); then, too, they are liable to the same reduction (§ 17a).

(a) Simple.	(b) Emphatic.	(c) Conjunctive.
<i>I, me mi, vi, vy, i, y.</i>	mivi, myvi, myvy, vivi, vyvi.	minheu, minneu, inneu.
<i>We, us ni, ny.</i>	nini, nyny.	ninheu, ninneu.
<i>Thy, thee ti, di, dy, de.</i>	tidi, tydi, dydi, dydy.	titheu, ditheu.
<i>Ye, you chwi.</i>	chwichwi.	chwitheu.
<i>He, him ef (O.W. em).</i>	efo.	ynteu.
<i>She, her hi, hy.</i>	hihi.	hitheu.
<i>They, them (h)wy,</i> <i>(h)wynt.</i>	(h)wyntwy.	(h)wynteu.

NOTE 1.—In *chwi* the **w** may be omitted after **w** in the verb, e.g. **ewchi go ye, dowchi come ye.**

NOTE 2.—**wy** is the earlier form, which became **wynt** under the influence of the ending **-nt** of the 3 plur. of the verb, just as O.Ir. **ē** *they* became in Mid.Ir. **iat**. In Mid.W. **wynt** is particularly used when it precedes the verb, e.g. **wynt a welynt** *they saw*, but **y gwelynt wy**; this, however, is a later distinction, in earlier Welsh **wy** is used everywhere, e.g. **wy gwnaethant** *they did*, **wy ladassant** *they slew*.

46. The independent pronouns are used as the subject of a sentence, as the object of a sentence, where, however, they enter into concurrence with the infixed pronoun (§ 48), (which, to judge from Irish, was the original method of expressing the object), after prepositions which did not enter into a unity with the pronoun (§ 52), and after some conjunctions. The following examples will illustrate the usage:—

(a) **mi** a wnaf *I will do*; pan y gweleis **i ef** *when I saw him*; **nyt yspeilwys ynteu vi** *he did not strip me*; a rithwys Duw cyn no **mi** *whom God created before me*; **ti** a wely *thou wilt see*; a wely **di** *dost thou see?* kymer dy hun **ef** *take it thyself*; **nyt oes seith cantref**

well noc **wy** *they are not seven cantreds better than they*; gyt ac **wynt** *along with them*.

(b) kynt y kyuarchawd ef well y mi no **miui** idaw ef *he greeted me before I greeted him*; pa le y keisswn i **dydi?** pan geissych di **vyvi**, keis parth ar India “*where should I seek thee?*” “*When thou seekest me, seek towards India*”; gofyn a oruc idi ae **hihi** oed yn peri hynny *he asked her if it was she who was causing that*.

(c) Mivi a rodaf vyg cret, heb hi, na charaf i dydi ac nath vynnaf yn dragwydawl. **minneu** a rodaf vyg cret, heb y Peredur, na dywedaf **ynneu** eir byth wrth Gristiawn yny adewych **ditheu** arnat vyg caru i yn vwyhaf gwr “*I pledge my faith*,” said she, “*that I do not love thee and that I will not desire thee to all eternity*.” “*I, on my part*,” said Peredur, “*pledge my faith that I will never speak a word to Christian soul, until thou shalt confess that thou lovest me more than any man*;” ac yn keissaw bwrw y gelein ar y march yn y kyfrwy, y dygwydei **ynteu** yr llawr ac y dodei **hitheu** diaspat and as she sought to cast the corpse on the horse into the saddle, it kept falling to the ground, and she raised a cry.

NOTE.—**ynteu** etc., is also used before a proper name, e.g. y wybot dy atteb di am hynny y deuthum i. Rof i a Duw, heb ynteu Bwyll, llyna vy atteb i ytti, “*I have come to learn thy answer about that*.” “*Between God and me*,” said Pwyll, “*here is thy answer*” RB. 11. cf. RB. 25, 65, 77, 79, 81, etc., **wynteu y Galissyeit** CM. 1; before a common noun, e.g. sef a wnaeth **ynteu yr eryr** *this the eagle did* RB. 78, a hitheu **wreic Teirnon** a gytsynnywys and the wife of Teirnon agreed RB. 22; after a proper name, e.g. **Troilus ynteu lleiaf mab y Briaf** oed herwyd oet *Troilus was Priam's youngest son* RB. II. 7, so RB. 14, II. 8, 9, 14, 22, **Castor a Pholux wynteu** a aethant *Castor and Pollux went* RB. II. 9, y **Telepus ynteu** RB. II. 17; after a common noun, e.g. a **gwyr Troea wynteu** a ymhoelassant and the men of Troy on their part returned RB. II. 20; and in instances like: y gelwit hi Lundein neu **ynteu** Lwndrys *it was called Llundein or Lwndrys* RB. 93, neu **ynteu** ony edy hynny udunt or again if you do not allow them that RB. II. 44. Cf. Mod. W. **ynte**.

47. Issem, ysef, sef. In O.W. the pron. **em** is used with **iss**, **is** is in phrases like **issem** i anu *that is his name*. From **issem** comes in Mid.W. **ysef, sef**, e.g. **ysef** a rodaf inneu *this is what I will give*; **sef**, gwreic a vynnawd Kicua *that was the wife he desired*, *Kigfa*; **ssef** a gafas yn y chyghor fo y ynyalwch *this is what she resolved upon, to flee into a wilderness*; **sef** y kyrchassant y dref uchaf o Arllechwed *they made for the highest town of Arllechwedd*;

arglwyd, heb ynteu, minneu a allaf dy rydhau ditheu. **sef** ual y gallaf "Lord," said he, "I can free thee. This is how I can do it;" **ssef** y gwelynt varchawc then they saw a horseman. In a similar way **ef** is used by itself, e.g. pan dyuu y thymg idi, **ef** a dyuu y hiawnbwyll idi when her time of labour came, then her right senses came to her.

48.

Infixed Pronoun.

Sing.	Plur.
1. me -m-	us -n-
2. thee -th-	you -ch-
3. him, her, it -s-, -e-	them -s-, -e-

REMARKS.

49. (a) The infixed pronoun may be strengthened by putting the corresponding simple or conjunctive pronoun after the verb, e.g. a thydi **am** gwely **i** and thou shalt see me, euo **ath** gud **ditheu** he will hide thee.

(b) In the third person **-e-** is used after the relative particle **a**, e.g. mi **ae** gwelaf I see him, and after the conjunction **tra**, e.g. **trae** llathei pob tri while he slew them by threes BB. 48^a, mi **ae** kynhalyaf hyt **trae** gallwyf I shall maintain it as long as I can Hg. I, 4; elsewhere **-s-** is used. After the verbal particle **yd-**, however, if the verb begins with a consonant, there is no visible pronoun of the third person, e.g. **y** gwelaf I see her RB. 278, 6; a phan **i** gweles meibion Collwyn and when the sons of Collwyn saw him MA. 729^a; if the verb begins with a vowel **yh** appears, e.g. **yh** hanuones sent it WB. 104, **y** hedewýnt they left them WB. 186; similarly after **y**ny until, e.g. ny dygaf i un daryan **y**ny hanuono Duw im I shall not bear any shield till God send it to me Hg. I. 15. After **pan** when the infixed pronoun is regularly preceded by **y-**, e.g. **pan** **y**th wnaethpwyt ti when thou wast made; in the third person it is **pan** **y(h)**, e.g. **pan** **y** harcho udunt when he asks it of them LA. 56.

(c) In early poetry in connexion with **ny** and **ry** there are in the third person special forms, **nwy**, **nyw**, **rw**y, **ryw**, used when the verb is relative, e.g. ir nep **nuy** hatnappo to one who does not

recognise it BB. 4^b, nyt kerdaur **nyu** moluy *he is not a poet who does not praise him* MA. 174^b, y ren **rw** y digonsei *the King who had made them* FB. 138. In non-relative usage the infixd pron. after **ny** is **-s-**, the form of the non-relative infixd pronoun after **ry** I have not been able to establish.

NOTE.—The infixd pronoun may, as in Irish, anticipate a following object, e.g. **ai** torro hac aý dimanuo ý **bryeint** hunn *who shall violate and diminish this privilege*, aý enrydedocao ý **breint** hunn *who shall respect this privilege* Lib. Land. 121, y harchwn ni **dy** drugared *we ask thy mercy* RB. II. 44.

50. The infixd pronoun follows:—

- (a) The relative particle **a**, e.g. mynn y gwr **a-n** gwnaeth *by Him who made us*, Duw **a-ch** nodho *may God protect you*, mi **a-e** harhoaf *I will await him, her, it, or them*, **a-e** lladawd ef *who killed him*, y niver **a-e** gwelei wynt *the multitude that saw them*.
- (b) The verbal particle **yd**, e.g. **y-m** gelwir *I am called*, **ywch** kymhallasant *they have compelled you*.
- (c) The infixing particle **a-** (§ 94), e.g. **a-m** bo *may there be to me*, **a-th** volaf *I will praise thee*, **a-s** rodwy trindawt trugared *may the Trinity give him mercy*, gwedi **a-n** gwelwch *after ye see us*, pei **a-s** archut *if thou hadst asked it*, kyt **a-m** llatho *though he should slay me*. So when this **a-** has been replaced by **y-**, e.g. **y-s** rodho Duw ymi *may God give it me* LA. 121.
- (d) The verbal particle **ry-** in the earlier language, e.g. **ry-m** goruc *he has made me*. But in later Mid.W. the pronoun is infixd before **ry-** by means of **yd-**, e.g. **y-th** ry gereis *I have loved thee*.
- (e) The particle **neu-**, e.g. **neu-m** goruc *he has made me* MA. 141^a, **neu-s** cud *hides it* FB. 272.
- (f) Sometimes in early poetry **dy-** of compound verbs, e.g. **dy-m** ryd *gives me*.
- (g) The negatives, e.g. **ny-m** oes *there is not to me*, **ny-s** gweleis *I have not seen him, her, it, or them*, **cany-ch** gwelas neb *since no one has seen you*; **na-m** gommed *do not refuse me*, mi a debygaf **na-ch** rydhawyt *I think that you have not been freed*.

NOTE.—In later Mid.W. **nys** seems sometimes to be used merely in a relative sense, e.g. yn y wlat **ny-s** ry welsei *in the country that he had not seen* RB. 114, 13=ýn ý wlad **ny** ry welei WB. 471. This usage may have

developed from cases where the nominative stands at the head of the sentence introducing it (§ 26), e.g. amheu yr hynn a dywedwch chwi **ny-s** gwnaf i lit. *doubting of what you say I will not do it.* A meaningless **-s-**, however, is found when the verb is non-relative, e.g. **nys** gohiryassant *they did not delay* RB. II. 48.

(h) Certain conjunctions:—**tra-e** llathei *while he slew them* BB. 48^a, **yny-m** byrywyt i *till I was thrown* RB. 169, **o-s** lledy *if thou slayest him* Hg. I. 368. Some conjunctions are followed by the infixing **a**, see above (c).

51. The infixing pronoun commonly expresses the accusative relation. With the verb 'to be,' however, it regularly expresses its dative relation, e.g., **am bo** *may there be to me, may I have*, vn tat **ae bu** *one father they had*; it may further express the dative relation with other verbs, e.g. y perffeith garyat hwnnw **an** rodho yr yspryt glan *may the Holy Spirit give us that perfect love* LA. 103, **an** gunel iechid *may He work salvation for us* BB. 20^b.

PRONOUN WITH PREPOSITION.

52. In Welsh as in Irish the pronoun is regularly fused together with the preposition. After **ac** *with* and **gwedy** *after*, however, the pronoun follows separately, e.g. **a mi** *with thee*, **gwedy ni** *after us*; the explanation seems to be that the usage of these words as prepositions is secondary. With respect to the formation, the following points may be noted.

(a) In the first and second persons (except after **y to**) there is an intervening vowel **a**, **o** (**aw**), or **y** (and in 2 pl. also **w**), so that in these persons there are the following series:—

Sing.	Plur.
1. -af, -of, -yf	-am, -om, -ym
2. -at, -ot, -yt	-awch, -och, -wch, -ych

(b) In the 3 sg. masc. the ending is **-aw**, in the 3 sg. fem. **-i** (inflecting a preceding vowel) and **-ei**, e.g. **oheni** and **ohonei**; sometimes the infected vowel spreads analogically, e.g. 3 pl. **ohenynt**. In the 3 pl. the oldest ending was **-u**, whence developed later **-ud** (i.e. **-ud**), **-unt**, **-ynt**. In the third persons **-aw**, **-u**, etc., are commonly preceded by a dental.

(c) In the 1 sg. and 3 pl. there are also endings **-wyf**, **-wynt**.

(d) After the prepositions **ar**, **o**, **am** are inserted respectively **-n-**, **-hon-**, **-dan-** (i.e. the prep. **tan** *under*). In the 3 pl. there are certain other insertions.

53. The forms assumed by the pronouns in connection with the several prepositions will be seen from the following table:—

		Sing.	Plur.
am about	1. amdanaf , ymdanaf	amdanam	
	2. ymdanat	amdanawch	
	3m. amdanaw , ymdanaw	amdanunt , ymdanunt ,	
	3f. ymdeni , amdanei , ymdanei	amdanadunt , ymdanadud , ymdananadunt , amdanwynt	
ar on	1. arnaf	arnam	
	2. arnat	arnawch , arnoch	
	3m. arnaw	arnunt , arnynt , arnadud ,	
	3f. arnei , arni , erni	arnadunt	
att to	1. attaf	attam	
	2. attat	attawch	
	3m. attaw	attunt , attadunt	
	3f. attei , etti		
can, gan with	1. genhyf , gennfyf	genhym , gennym	
	2. genhyt , gennyt	genhwch , gennwch	
	3m. gantaw , ganthaw , gentaw	gantunt , ganthu ,	
	3f. genti , genthi	ganthud , ganthunt	
heb without	1. hebof		
	2. hebot		
	3m. hebdaw	hebdunt	
	3f. hebdi		
is below	3f. adisti		

Sing.

Plur.

nem *except*

<i>of</i>	2.	nemoch
o <i>from</i>	1. ohonaf, ohanaf, ohonof	ohonam, ohonom
	2. ohonat, ohonawt, ohonot	ohonawch
	3m. ohonaw	
	3f. oheni, ohoni, ohonei, ohanei, ohenei	ohonu, ohonunt, ohenynt, onadu, onadunt

rac <i>before</i>	1. ragof	ragom, rogom
	2. ragot	ragawch, ragoch
	3m. racdaw, rogdaw	
	3f. recdi, racdi, rocdi, rygthi	racdu, racdunt, rocdunt

ro <i>between</i>	1. yrof	yrom
	2. yrot	yryoch, yroch
	3m. ryrdaw	
	3f. ryrdi	yrydunt

rwng <i>be-</i> <i>tween</i>	1.	yrynghom
	2. ryngot	ryngoch
	3m. ryngtaw, ryngthaw, ygrythaw	ryngdunt, ryngtunt, ryngthunt, ryndynt
	3f. ryngthi	

NOTE.—In O. W. there is also a 3 pl. igrudu Lib. Land. XLIII, l. 9, and in poetry from *cyfrwng* a 3 pl. *cyfryngthud*.

tan, dan	1. adanaf	ydanam
<i>under</i>	3m. ydanaw, adantaw	adanunt, ydanunt, adanadunt
	3f. deni, adanei	
tros <i>over</i>	1. trossof	trossom
	2. trossot	trossawch, trossoch
	3m. trostaw	
	3f. trosti	trostud, trosdunt

Usually with initial *d*, *drossof* etc.

		Sing.	Plur
trwy	1. trwydof		
<i>through</i>	2. trwydot		
	3m. trwydaw	}	trwydunt
	3f. trwydi	}	
uch above	1.		uchom
	3m. odyuchtaw	}	
	3f. oduchti	}	
wrth	1. wrthyf		wrthym
<i>towards</i>	2. wrthyt		wrthych, wrthywch
	3m. wrthaw	}	wrthu, wrthunt
	3f. wrthi	}	
y (O.W. di)	1. im		in
<i>to</i>	2. itt		ywch
	3m. idaw	}	udu, udud, udunt
	3f. idi	}	
yn in	1. ynof		
	2. ynot		ynoch
	3m. yndaw	}	yndunt
	3f. yndi	}	
yr for	1. yrof		erom
	2. yrot		yroch
	3m. yrday		yrdunt, erdunt

54. The above forms may be strengthened by the addition of the simple or the conjunctive pronouns, e.g. **arnaf i**, **gennym ni**, **itti**, **ohonawch chwi**, **idaw ef**, **erni hi**, **udunt hwy**; **yrof inneu**, **attat titheu**, **gennwch chwitheu**, **ohonei hitheu**, **attunt wynteu**.

55. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

1. mine	meu	ours	einom, einym
2. thine	teu	yours	einwch, einywch
3. his	eidaw	theirs	eidud, eidunt
	hers		
	eidi		

56. They are used (a) alone, (b) preceded by the article, (c) preceded by a possessive adjective, (d) after a noun, which may be preceded by a possessive adjective. They may be strengthened by a following personal pronoun. The following examples will illustrate the usage:—

(a) *y sawl a uo meu all that are mine*; *ny bo teu dy benn may not thy head be thine*, milwriaeth kymeint ac a oed **eidunt** *all the valour that was theirs*, *y rei a oed eidaw ef those that were his*, nyt yttoed *y llew yn deu ytti the lion was not thine* Hg. I. 63, nyt oes petrus genyf gaffel holl Freinc **yn einym** *I have no doubt that we should get all France as ours* RB. II. 116.

(b) *neb un mor wedus cledyf ar y ystlys ar meu i none whose sword on his side is so becoming as mine*; *y mae y meu i y lle hwnn this place is mine*; *ath gedymdeithas yssydadolwyn gennyf y gaffel*. *keffy, myn vyg cret, a dyro ditheu y teu*, “*and I would pray to have thy friendship*.” “*Thou shalt have it, by my faith, and give me thine*; *deu parth vy oet a deu parth y teu ditheu two-thirds of my life and two-thirds of thine*; *dwc uendith Duw ar einym gennyt take with thee God's blessing and ours*; *ef a daw y dwyn yr einwch he will come to carry off your property*; *py darpar yw yr einywchi yna what preparation is that of yours there*? *nyt oed olwc degach nor eidi there was no aspect fairer than hers*.

(c) *pa vedwl yw dy teu ti what purpose is thine*? *mivi a dodaf vyg korff yn erbyn y eidaw I will set my body against his*.

(d) *ar dy drugeinuet or rei teu ditheu with sixty of your men* CM. 8; *o rei eidaw ef of his* LA.; *or petheu einym nynheu of our things* LA. 164; *dy ymadrawd teu di thy speech* Hg. II. 1.

57. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

a	b	a	b
1. <i>my vy, vyn</i> (before explosives)	'm	<i>our an, yn</i>	'n
2. <i>thy dy</i>		'th <i>your ach, ych, awch 'ch</i>	
3. <i>his y</i> <i>her y</i>		'e, 'y <i>their eu, y</i>	'e, 'y

Remarks.

58. (a) The **b** forms occur in fusion with a preceding preposition or conjunction. Such forms in the 2 pl. seem to be comparatively rare, e.g. **ych** plith *in your midst* by **yn ych** plith LA., etc. **ach** rydit *and your freedom* RB. II. 189; more usually **yn awch** medyant chwi *in your power* RB. II. 50.

(b) With the prep. **y** in the third persons there is a variety of forms: **y, yw, eu, oe, oc eu.**

(c) The possessives may be strengthened by the addition of a simple or conjunctive pronoun after the noun.

59. Examples: (a) **vy arveu** *my arms*, **vy nyuot** (**dyvot**) *my coming*, **an meirch ninneu** *our horses*, **dy benn** *thy head*, **awch cledyveu** *your swords*, **y wreic ef** *his wife*, **y phenn** *her head*, **eu hieith** *their tongue*.

(b) **ym tat** *to my father*, **am arveu** *and my arms*, **yn porthi ni** *supporting us* (lit. *our supporting*), **ath teulu** *with thy household*, **ach rydit** *and your freedom*, **ydys ych gwahawd** *you are invited*, **ywch didanu** *to comfort you*, **och pechodeu** *from your sins*, **ae waet ynteu** *and his blood*, **y** (= **yw** WB.) **letty** *to his lodging* RB. 284, **ae ueirch yw y rei hynn** *and these are his horses* RB. 28, **oe chladu** *to bury her*, **y cheissaw** *to seek her*, **oe hanvod** *against her will*, **oe harveu** *from their arms*, **y kestyl** *to their fortresses*, **oe gwlatued** *to their countries*, **oc eu porthi** *to support them*.

NOTE.—Sometimes, as in Irish, the possessive seems to anticipate a following genitive, e.g. **ýn ý geissaw ýnteu** *Peredur seeking for Peredur* WB. 140, **y hwyneb hitheu** *Riannon the face of Riannon* RB. 18, 27, **am ý mýnwgyl** (without **y** RB. 117, 19) **y uorwýn** *about the neck of the maiden* WB. 475.

SELF.

60. This is expressed by sg. **hun**, **hunan**, pl. **hun**, **hunein** added to personal pronouns or to possessive pronouns or adjectives, e.g. **my hun**, **myvy vy hun** *I myself*, **ohonaf vy hun** *by me myself*, **ym vy hunan** *to me myself*, **vym penn vy hun** *my own head*, **arnom ny hunein** *upon us ourselves*; **dy hun** *thou thyself*, **yth**

person **dy hunan** *in thy own person*; or **tat ehunan** *from the father himself*, **ny digawn ehunan** *he is not able himself*, **ef ae byryawd ehun** *he cast himself*, **idaw ehun** *to himself*; **hi ehunan** *she herself*, **ohonei ehunan** *by her herself*; **wynt ehun** *they themselves*, **yr etholedigyon ehunein** *the elect themselves*, **yrydunt ehun** WB. 211 = **yryngtunt ehunein** RB. 272 *between themselves*, **yn eu cnawt ehun** *in their own flesh*, **yn eu rith ehunein** *into their own form*.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

61. **hwnn** *this*, **hwnnw** *that*.

Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
M. hwnn		hwnnw	
F. honn	hygn	honno	hynny
N. hygn		hynny	

62. These pronouns are used :—

(a) absolutely, e.g. *beth yw hwnn?* *heb y Peredur wrth y kyfrwy.* *kyfrwy yw, heb yr Owein* “*What is this?*” *said Peredur, with reference to the saddle.* “*It is a saddle,*” *said Owein;* *Peredur oed y enw, a ieuhaf oed hwnnw* *Peredur was his name and he was youngest;* *yna y kymeth ynteu yr hutlath.* *camma di dros honn,* *heb ef then he took the magic wand.* “*Step over this,*” *said he;* *yn ol honno y kerdwys ef he went after her;* *a hyn a dywedaf ytti and this I will tell thee;* *mi a wnaf na chaffo ef viui vyth.* *pa ffuryf vyd hynny?* *heb y Pwyll* “*I will effect that he shall never get me.*” “*How will that be?*” *said Pwyll;* *yn ol hynny after that.*

(b) After a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. *ger llaw auon a elwit yn yr amser hwnnw* *Sabrina, yn yr amser hwnn y gelwir hitheu Hafren, beside a river that was called at that time Sabrina, at this time it is called Severn;* *yn yr ynys honn in this island;* *yn nos honno that night;* *yr anniveileit hynny these animals;* *yr enweu hynny those names.* Similarly in the plural with **rei**, e.g. *pa ryw aniveileit yw y rei hynny?* *what kind of animals are those?*

(c) Preceded by the article, e.g. dywet, heb y Gereint, py fford oreu inni gerdet or dwy hyn. Goreu itt gerdet hon, heb ef, ot ey **yr hon** issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth “*Tell,*” said *Gereint*, “*which of these two roads is best to travel?*” “*It is best for thee to travel by this one,*” said *he*; “*if thou travel by the lower one, thou wilt never come back.*” It may be followed by a genitive, e.g. Heuel ar doythyon . . . a ossodassant eu hemendyth **ar honn Kemry holl** *Howell and the wise men set their curse and that of all the Welsh* BCh. 1. In particular **yr hwnn**, etc., is frequently followed by a relative clause, e.g. bei dywetut ti y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn **yr hynn** a ovynny ditheu *if thou wouldest tell the thing that I desire of thee, I would tell that which thou desirest*; ef a vennyc fford itti ual y keffych **yr hynn** a geiss y *he will show thee a road so that thou mayest obtain what thou seekest*; pwy bynnac . . . a dremyckont dysgu **yr hynn** a dylynt y wneuthur *whoever despise learning what they ought to do*; Bryttaen oreu or ynyssed **yr hon** a elwit gynt y wen ynys *Britain, the best of the islands, which was formerly called the White Isle*; yr heul **yn yr hwnn** y mae tri pheth *the sun in which are three things*. In this usage the plural is **y rei**, e.g. gwraged oll eithyr **y rei** oed yn gwassanaethu *all the women except such as were serving*; gweirglodyeu . . . **yn y rei** y maent ffynhoneu gloew eglur **or rei** y kerdant ffrydeu *meadows in which are clear bright springs, from which issue streams*. This device for expressing an inflected relative is particularly common in the translation literature.

ARTICLE + SUBSTANTIVE + ADVERB.

63. Some adverbs have a demonstrative force along with a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. deu ychen, y lleill yssyd **or part hwn** yr mynyd ar llall **or parth yma** *two oxen, one of them is on yonder side of the mountain, the other on this side*; beth yw **y rei racko?** *what are those yonder?* att **y vorwyn** *draw to the maiden yonder.*

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

64. **neb** (= Ir. *nech*) *some one* is used :—

(a) Substantively, e.g. a weleist di **neb** *hast thou seen any one?* nyt adwaeney **neb** efo *no one recognised him.*

(b) With the article before a relative clause, e.g. ediuar uyd **yr neb** ae wnaeth *whoever has done it will repent it;* ny chigleu i dim **or neb** a ouynnwch chwi *I have heard nothing of him of whom you ask* RB. 129.

(c) Adjectivally, e.g. gwell yw dedyf Cristonogaeth no **neb dedyf** or by *the law of Christendom is better than any law in the world.*

65. **pawb** (= Ir. *cāch*) *every one* is used substantively, e.g. sef a orugant **pawb** or teulu *that is what each one of the household did;* Peredur a rodes **y bawp** gystal ae gilyd *Peredur gave to every one as much as to the other.*

66. **pob** (the unaccented form of **pawb**, = Ir. *cach, cech*) is used adjectivally, e.g. **pob peth** *every thing.* **Pob** is also used with **un one**, e.g. **pob un** onadunt *every one of them;* the plural is **pob rei**, e.g. a **phob rei** ohonunt o bop parth a gladassant y rei meirw *and both sides buried the dead* RB. II. 30.

67. **oll all**, e.g. y deulu **oll all his household**; gwraged **oll all the women**; cewri ynt **oll** *they are all giants.* Before a noun is found **holl**, e.g. **yr holl gwn** *all the dogs.* In composition with numerals there appear **ell**, **ill**, **yll** e.g. **ell deu**, **ill deu**, **yll deu** *both;* **ell pedwar**, **yll pedwar** *all four.*

NOTE.—A compound **hollre** is found, e.g. y rolre seint *all the saints* BB. 36^a, yn holre oludoed *in all manner of wealth* LA. 165, **hollre genedyl** anifeileit *every kind of animals* LA. 166.

68. **arall** *another*, pl. **ereill**, is used :—

(a) Substantively, e.g. kymer ef a dyro y **arall** *take it and give it to another;* da **arall** *the goods of another;* penneu rei a dygynt, llygeit **ereill**, a chlusteu **ereill**, a breicheu **ereill** *they took away the heads of some, the eyes of others, and the ears of others, and the arms of others.*

(b) Adjectivally, e.g. **marchawc arall** *another horseman;* y

gymeint **arall** *as much again*; arveu gwell **nor rei ereill** *arms better than the others*.

69. **neill** *one of two*, e.g. **y neill** or llewot *one of the two lions*; **y gwydyat** vot yndaw **y neill** ae gwr ae gwreic *he knew that there was in it either a man or a woman* Hg. I. 54; ar **y neill law** y gwr oed Peredur yn eisted *Peredur was seated on one hand of the man*; pob un **ar neilltu** *each one separately*.

70. **y llall** *the other*, pl. **y lleill**, e.g. **y kymrth** Peredur hanner y bwyt idaw ehun ac adaw **y llall** yr vorwyn *Peredur took half of the food to himself and left the other to the maiden*; ar vn **y bydei** borth ef idaw a gollei y gware, **ar llall** a dodei awr *and the one whom he was helping lost the game, and the other raised a shout*; **paham na chadarnnhawyt** **y lleill** velle *why were not the others thus strengthened?* LA. 8; **cwymp** **y lleill** *the fall of the others* LA. 8; **y daw** **y llall** *his other son-in-law*, an brodyr **y lleill** *our other brethren* LA.

71. **y neill**, **y lleill**, —**y llall** *the one—the other*, e.g. **y neill** **honunt** yn was gwineu **ar llall** yn was melyn *one of them an auburn lad, the other a yellow lad*; yn y orffei **y lleill** **ar y llall** *till the one overcame the other*. With a substantive **arall** is used in place of **llall**, e.g. **or neill tu**—**or tu arall** *on the one side—on the other side*.

72. **y gilyd** is used for *the other* in expressions like:—dyrnnodeu calet a rodei bawp onadunt **y gilyd** *each of them gave hard buffets to the other*; yn un or teir person **noe gilyd** *in one of the three persons than in another*; or mor **pwy gilyd** *from sea to sea*; corph ni glivit pa leueir **ý gilit** *body, who hearest not what thy fellow says* BB. 10^b.

NOTE.—**y gilyd** (=Ir. a chéile) means literally *his fellow*, but, as in Irish, the phrase has become petrified in this form, and is used without respect to gender, number, or person.

SUBSTANTIVES IN A PRONOMINAL FUNCTION.

73. **dim** *thing*, e.g. kymer gret y mackwy na dywetto **dim** or a welas yman *pledge the youth that he will not tell aught of what he has seen here*; heb allel gwneuthur **dim lles** *without being able to do any good*.

74. **peth** m. *thing*, e.g. kymmer dy varch nu a **pheth oth arueu** *take thou thy horse then and some of thy arms*; onyt ef a wyr **peth or hynn** *unless he knows something of this*.

75. **rei**, e.g. **rei onadunt** *some of them*, **rei drut rei mut** *some bold, some dumb* FB. 164, cf. § 62 (c).

76. **ryw** m. *kind*, e.g. **pa ryw chwedleu** yssyd gennyt *what kind of news hast thou?* na allei **neb ryw dyn** marwawl datkanu *so that no mortal man could proclaim*; ymlad **ar ryw dyn hwnnw** *to fight such a man as that* RB. II. 182; gwelet **y ryw gatwent honno** *to see such a fight as that* ib. 58; drwy **y ryw edewidyon** twyllodrus **hynny** *through such false promises as those* ib. 104. Similarly **cyvryw**, e.g. **yr kyfryw wr hwnnw** *to a man of such a kind* ib. 65.

NOTE.—Observe that in expressions like **y ryw dyn hwnnw** the pronoun is attracted in gender and number to the noun preceding. Cf. the similar attraction with **sawl** below.

77. **sawl** f. *multitude* and **meint** *greatness*, e.g. **yr sawl a dihagassei oe wyr yn vyw** *to those of his men who had escaped alive*; **yr honn** (sc. **breich**) *a ladawd y sawl gewri* *which slew so many giants*; **by sawl nef** ysyd *how many heavens are there?* **y sawl nifer hwnnw** *such a number as that* RB. II. 139; **y ssawl vlwynyded hynny** *so many years as that* ib. 44; colli **y meint gwyr** a oed idaw *to lose all the men that he had* ib. 46; blyghau a oruc Goronilla **rac meint** oed o varchogyon gyt ae that *Goronilla became angry because there were so many soldiers with her father* ib. 66; ymerbynyeit **ar ueint allu hwnnw** *to encounter such a force as that* ib. 348; **yn y veint perigyl honno** *in so great danger as that* ib. 160; **y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny** *such great victories as that* ib. 199.

78. **un** *one*, e.g. eithyr bot yn prudach pryt Gwydyon noc **un y gwas** *except that the aspect of Gwydyon was graver than that of the lad*.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

79. **pwy** *who, what*, used substantivally, e.g. **pwy wyt** *who art thou?* **y bwy** *y rodit* *(they discussed)* *to whom it should be given*

RB. 258; dywet **pwy** a uu yma *tell who was here*; govyn **pwy** yw eu tystyon *to ask who are their witnesses*; **pwy** yw dy enw di *what is thy name?* LA. 128; **pwy** well genhŷt *which dost thou prefer?* WB. 487; dayar **pwy** y llet neu pwy y thewhet *the earth, what is its breadth or what its thickness?* FB. 133; **pwy** kynt ae tywyll ae goleuat *what was first, darkness or light?* FB. 301. In the sense of *what thing?* is used **pa beth**, **py beth**, commonly abbreviated to **peth**, **beth**, e.g. **peth** yw y rei racko *what are those yonder?* a wdst ti **peth** wyt pan vych yn kyscwyd *knowest thou what thou art when thou art asleep?* FB. 145; a gofyn idaw **beth** a wnaei a phwy oed *and asked him what he was doing and who he was.*

NOTE.—The use of **pwy** before a noun is exceptional, **pwy** *ystyr* WB. 454, 456 = **pa ystyr** RB. 101 = **py ystyr** 103.

80. **pa**, **py** *what?* adjectivally, e.g. **pa drwc** digoneis inheu ytti *what evil have I done to thee?* **py drwc** yw hynny *what evil is that?* This interrogative enters into various phrases, e.g. **pa le**, **py le** (also **ble**) *where?* **pa veint**, **py veint** *how great?* **pa ryw**, **py ryw** *of what kind?* **pa sawl** *how many?* **Pa** and **py** are also found with the addition of **un**, pl. **rei**, e.g. **pa un** wyt titheu *who art thou?* ef a ovynnawd udunt **pa rei** oedynt *he asked them who they were.*

NOTE 1.—**Pa** and **py** seem to be used without distinction of meaning. In the Mabinogion when the Red Book has **pa** the White Book has very frequently **py**.

NOTE 2.—In the earlier literature **pa** and **py** are found also without a noun, e.g. **pa roteiste oth olud** *what hast thou given of thy wealth?* BB. 10^b; **pa wnaif** *what shall I do?* FB. 282; *hyt na wydat or byt pa wnaei* (= **py wnaei** WB. p. 212) *so that she did not know at all what she should do* RB. 273; **py holy di y mi** *what seekest thou of me?* RB. 128, cf. further FB. 127, 145, 216, MA. 189^b. Cf. also **pa daruu y Garadawc** *what has been the fate of Caradawc?* RB. 41, so 59, 287 (= **py** WB. p. 221), **py derw itti** 176; **pathawr** (= **pa-th-dawr**) *what does it matter to thee?* WB. 430 = **pythawr** p. 215; *Duween py bereist lyvwr* *Lord God, why hast Thou made a coward?* FB. 251; **py liuy di** *why dost thou colour?* RB. 102.

NOTE 3.—**Pa** and **py** are followed by a preposition in **pahar** *for what?* e.g. **pahar e roet** *for what it was given* BCh. 30; **paham**, **pa rac**, **py rac** and **pyr** (= **py yr**) *why?* e.g. **pyr** (= **py rac** RB. 126) *ý kýuerchý dý why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

NOTE 4.—**pa diw**, **py diw**. The following occurrences of this may be noted:—*Quid (i. pa diu, lit. for what) tibi Pasiphae pretiosas sumere vestes?* Ox. 41^a. *Cunctis genitoris gloria uestri laudetur celsi thronus est cui*

regia caeli, where *est cui regia caeli* is translated literally and unidiomatically by *issit padiu itau gulat* Iuv. 39^b. Gwynn y uyt **py diw** y rodir kerennyd Duf a hoedyl hir *blessed is he to whom is given the friendship of God and long life* FB. 308. (If a man gives a thing, and a dispute arises between two men as to to which of them it has been given, the word of the donor shall decide) **pa dyu** y rodes *to whom he gave it* BCh. 31. **pa diw** y damweinei y uudugolyaeth *to which the victory should fall* RB. II. 57 (so with **y to**, **y by** **diw** y damweinhei y uudugolyaeth onadunt 162, cf. CM. 32). **pa diw bynnac** y mynnnynt hwy y rodi hi *to whomsoever they desired to give it* RB. II. 24, cf. further 181, 185. Here the use of **yd**, not **a** (§ 84), indicates that **diw** is a prepositional phrase (= *to him, to it?*).

81. pwy bynnac, pa, py—bynnac, pa beth bynnac, peth bynnac. The addition of **pynhac** or **pynnac** gives the sense of *whosoever, whatsoever*, e.g. **pwy bynnac** ae kaffei *whoever should take it*; **pa** dyn pwyllauc **benac** a ladho enuyt *whatever sane man shall slay an idiot*; **pa** le **bynnac** y gwelwn vwyd *wherever I saw food*; **py** fford **bynnac** y ffoynt *whatever way they fled*; **peth bynnac** a dywettei Peredur *whatever Peredur said*.

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

82. In Welsh there is no inflected relative. In clauses which according to the Welsh idiom are relative, relativity is expressed by the relative particle **a** when the clause is positive, by the negative **ny** (cf. § 21 note) when the clause is negative, e.g. *pechodeu a gyffesser ac ny wneler yr eilweith sins that are confessed and that are not committed a second time*. Before the details of relative usage are considered, there are several general points to be noted.

83. (a) The relative **a** is not used:—

(a) Before the relative form **yssyd, syd** *who is, which is*, e.g. nifer a uu ac a uyd uch nef is nef meint **yssyd** *the multitude that has been and that will be, above heaven, below heaven, all that there are* FB. 114.

(β) Before the verb **pieu** (§ 161), e.g. *Efrawc iarll bioed iarllaeth yn y gogled* *Evrawc the earl had an earldom in the north*.

(γ) Regularly in the earlier Welsh, and usually throughout the Mid.W. period before the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. *mi ryth gereis* *I have loved thee*.

(δ) Before the copula when preceded by the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu** *he was glad*; **pwy wyt** *who art thou?* (but **pwy a uu** *yma who was here?*)

(b) (a) In Mid.W. prose **a** is frequently absent before **oed was**, e.g. **Arthur oed** *yg Kaerllion Arthur was in Caerllion*. In the Mabinogion the White Book has often **a oed** when the Red Book has **oed**, cf. WB. 227, 229, 250, 453, with RB. 101, 165, 166, 183.

(β) In early poetry **a** is very often omitted, e.g. **Duu vet** (= **Duw a ved**) *God rules* BB. 15^a by **Duw a wet** 13^a. The details have still to be investigated.

84. In certain constructions the preverbal particle **yd** (= Mod.W. **yr**) seems to enter into concurrence with relative **a**, and in Mod.W. grammars **yr** is given along with **a** as a relative particle. This, however, comes from reading English syntax into Welsh; historically, the use of **yd**, **yr** points to a non-relative construction. In the Celtic languages the rules for the use of the relative are peculiar. In particular it should be noted that in Welsh an adverbial or prepositional phrase is not as such followed by the relative construction, e.g. **mwyhaf oe vrodyr y karei** *Lud y Lleuvelys Lud loved Lleuvelys more than any of his other brothers*; **pan uei mwyhaf yd ymgerynt** *when they most loved one another*; **bit chwero y talhaur** in **y diwet** *bitterly will it be paid for in the end*; **mi a brynaf dy gerennyd**. **pa delw**, *heb ynteu*, **y prynny** *di* “*I will buy thy friendship.*” “*In what way,*” said he, “*wilt thou buy it?*” **lle y gwelych** *eglwys wherever thou seest a church*; or **lle yd oed** *from the place where he was*; **yn y rei y maent** *ffynhoneu in which there are fountains*; **ar hynny att y kwn y doeth** *ef thereafter he came to the hounds*. With the first instance may be contrasted expressions like **y wreic vwyhaf a garei** *the woman whom he most loved*, where without **mwyhaf** the clause would be relative, **y wreic a garei** *the woman whom he loved*; similarly **gwreica da it a wedei** *to wed would suit thee well* WB. 453.

85. In the Celtic sentence the verb normally comes first, e.g. **y kymerth y marchawc y march** *the horseman took the horse*. In Irish, when part of the sentence is to be emphasised it is brought

forward by means of the copula, e.g. **is ē beres** *it is he who carries*; sometimes the copula is omitted. In Welsh a part of the sentence is emphasised in the same way; the copula form, however, is regularly omitted. Thus in the example given above, if the subject were to be emphasised, the sentence would run: **y marchawc** a gymerth y march; if the object, **y march** a gymerth y marchawc. In accordance with the preceding paragraph, if the subject or object be thus brought forward, the following clause will be relative in form, but not if an adverbial or prepositional phrase be brought forward, e.g. **mwy y karei** *he loved more*; **attunt yd aeth** *he went to them*.

NOTE.—In the development of Welsh **yd** tends to spread at the expense of **a**.

The Expression of Case in the Relative.

86. In the relation of subject or object of a following verb, in positive clauses **a** is used (except in so far as it must or may be omitted, § 83), in negative clauses **ny**, e.g. **y gwr a doeth** *the man who came*; **y vorwyn a weleist** *the maiden whom thou hast seen*; **y wreic yssyd yno** *the woman who is there*; **meibon ny ellynt ymlad** *boys who could not fight*.

87. In connection with the use of **a**, **ny**, the following points call for special notice:—

(a) **or a** (Mod.W. **ar a**), neg. **or ny**, **ar ny**, lit. *of that which (or which not), of what (or what not)*, e.g. **pawb or a oed yno** *everyone who was there* (lit. *of that which was there*); **or a welsei o helgwn ny welsei cwn unlliw ac wynt** *of all the hounds that he had seen he had never seen hounds of the same colour as they*; **pob peth or ny** *damweinassant eiroet* *everything that has never happened* LA. 33; **nyt oes neb or ath welei ar nyth garei** *no one who saw thee would not love thee*; **pob peth or a uu ac yssyd ac a vyd** *everything that was and is and will be* (where rel. **a** is regularly omitted before **yssyd**); **llawer or yssyd da** *many who are good*. In the above examples the relative **a** appears in positive clauses. But after **or = of that by which**, etc., in accordance with § 84, **yd** is used, e.g. **gorchymynneu**

Duw a wneynt o bop fford **or y gellynt** *they did God's commandments in every way in which they could* LA. 119; ffo. a oruc Pandrassus a gwyr Groec y gyt ac ef y bob mann **or y tebyckynt** caffel dianc *Pandrassus with the Greeks fled to every place from which they thought to find escape* RB. II. 44. In sentences like: paup **or y rodho** y brenhyn ofrum idaw *everyone to whom the king gives a present, or ba hustyng bynnac . . . or y kyfarffo* y gwynt ag ef *every whisper that the wind meets* RB. 60, the use of **yd** is due to the form of the relative clause (§ 89).

NOTE.—As Zimmer has shewn, CZ. II. 86 sq. **or**, **ar** is made up of the preposition **o**, **a** + the article **yr**. Similarly **yr=y** *to + yr*: ef a dely medheeynyat rad **yr a uo en e llys** *he is obliged to give free medical attendance to such as are in the palace* BCh. 18.

(b) Without an antecedent **a**, neg. **ny**, is used in the sense of *what* as the subject or the object of a sentence, in a genitive relation, and after a preposition, e.g. **a gahat** o uedic da *what was got of good physicians*; mi a wnaf **yssyd** waeth it *I shall do what is worse for thee*; ys tir (= dir) nithiau **ny bo** pur *it is necessary to sift what is not pure* BB. 42^b; y kymerth yntev gwrogaeth **a oed** yno onadunt *he received the homage of such of them as were there* RB. 267; **yr a welsynt** o vwyd *on account of what they had seen of food*; **or a glywyssynt** o gerd *of what they had heard of song*; mi a vydaf **wrth a dywedeisti** *I shall follow thy advice*; hyt na cheffwch byth werth un geinawc **oc yssyd** yn y dref *so that you shall never get a pennyworth of what is in the town* Hg. II. 169. In a sentence like: sef a oruc Scuthyn yn llaben g̃neuthur **yr oedit yn y erchi** idaw *Scuthyn did gladly what was asked of him* LA. 111, the form of the relative sentence does not admit of **a** (§ 88).

88. The genitive relation *whose, of which*, is expressed with the help of the possessive adjective before the noun on which in English the *whose* would depend. In Welsh, if the noun following the possessive be not under the government of a preposition the clause is relative, if it be under the government of a preposition the clause is non-relative, e.g. (a) Teithi Hen **a oresgynnwys mor y kyueth** *Teithi Hen whose kingdom the sea submerged* RB. 108; peth arall **ny ellych** byth **y gaffel** *another thing that thou wilt never be able to get*;

(b) *y gur y buost neithwyr yn y dy the man in whose house thou wert last night; y gwr y buost yn y geissaw the man whom thou hast been seeking.*

NOTE.—In: *yr hynn a odologyssynt ac a yttoedynt yn y damunaw that which they craved and were desiring* RB. II. 34, *a* is used where the above rule would require *yd*. In MA. 267^a occurs: *gwr am dotyw gwall oe golli a man from whose destruction loss has come to me*. Further exceptions seem to be very rare; I have noted: *amperfeith yw caru y peth y galler y gassau it is imperfect to love the thing that may be hated* LA. 86; *wrth na bu yn dyn y bei arnaf i y ofyn because there was no living man the fear of whom was on me* CM. 30.

89. Where in English the relative is preceded by a preposition (*to whom*, etc.) in Welsh the relation is expressed by a preposition + personal pronoun, and the clause is non-relative, e.g. *hŷn y elŷch yr koet y dodhwyt trwydaw till thou goest to the wood through which thou hast come* WB. 228; *yno y byd eneideu ry darffo udunt penydyaw there are souls that have finished penance* (lit. *to whom penance is past*) LA. 129.

NOTE 1.—In the inverted sentence (§ 85) *Madawc uab Maredud a oed idaw Powys Madawg son of Maredudd had Powys* RB. 144, the clause is expressed relatively. Similarly in another special type of sentence: *Achelarwy a uu lawen gantaw Achilles was pleased* RB. II. 31, cf. RB. II. 189·20, RB. I. 94·5. In the translation literature a number of exceptions occur:—*y rei a uo ragor armunt those on whom there is pre-eminence* LA. 32, cf. 130·27, 131·2, 135·8, 149·17, all in sentences of the same type; *y rei hynny a ry darroed (=earlier W. rydarroed) udunt gwrthlad Maxen those who had succeeded in expelling Maxen* RB. II. 111; *mein a ellit gwneuthur gweith onadunt stones from which building could be made* RB. II. 167; *gwr...a wedo idaw a man to whom it is fitting* CM. 77.

NOTE 2.—The following is an exceptional construction:—*gwelet y bed a vynnei trw y kaffei (=trw yt gaffei WB. 453) gwreicka he wished to see the grave through which he might be able to marry* RB. 101; *na chadarnhao dyn kelwyd trwy twng trwy y colletto y gymodawc that a man shall not confirm a falsehood by an oath through which he may ruin his neighbour* LA. 143; *trwy y bei through which there should be* LA. 144.

SUBSTITUTES FOR THE RELATIVE.

90. Particularly in the translation literature there are various devices for getting an equivalent of the relative admitting of a casual construction. Such are **yr hwnn**, pl. **y rei** (§ 62c), **y neb** (§ 64b), **y sawl** (§ 77).

THE VERB.

PREVERBAL PARTICLES.

The Particle **yd**.

91. In Mid.W. prose this particle usually appears as **yd** (i.e. **yd**) before a vowel or **h**, as **y** before other consonants. But by the side of **yd** there is found from the fourteenth century **yr**, which in Mod.W. has completely superseded **yd**.

NOTE 1.—Occasionally **y** appears before **h**, e.g. **y hanoed** RB. II. 109, **y hanoed** LA.

NOTE 2.—In RB. **yt** with lenation appears before a consonant in **yt gweirwyt** (from **cyweirwyt**) 120. In the WB. version of the Kulhwch story **yt** (i.e. **yd**) is more frequent: **yt gaffei**, **yt gaffo** 453, **yt uo** 458, **yt wertheý** 470, **yt výd** 471, **yt uerwit** 478. In BB. **yt** (=**yd**) is regular before vowels: **it oet** 10^b, **it aethant** 11^a, **it imne** 15^b, **it elher** 17^a, **yt hoet** 22^b, 23^a, **it adcorssant** 23^b, **it vif** 25^b, **it arwet** 51^a, **it aw** 51^b; it is written **id** twice in **id aeth** 49^a marg. Before consonants there appears both **y** and **yd** (=**yt** of WB.); the latter lenates, though the change is not always expressed. Before **g**, **t**, **d**, **ff**, **s**, **m**, **n**, **ý** only appears: **ý godriccawr** 51^a; **ý tirran** 1^b, **ý talhaur** 16^a, **ý tereu** 32^a, **ý traghó** 35^b; **ý deuthan** 1^b, **ý daeth**, **ý doethan** 2^a, **ý doethan** 2^b, **ý darparan** 3^a, **ý dýlanuan**, **ý daruuán** 3^b, **ý diadaud** 10^b, **ý dinwassute** 11^b, **ý deuth**, **ý del** 21^a, **ý doeth** 22^b, **ý deuthant** 23^b, **ý deuant** 25^a, **ý dav** 32^a, **ý dinwassune** 44^a, **ý duc** 44^b, **ý diwedi** 51^b, **ý dodir** 53^b; **ý ffoes** 22^b; **ý sirthei** 50^a; **ý mae** 13^b, 32^a, 34^a, 34^b, 35^a, 41^b; **ý nottvý** 38^b. Before **p** and **r** **yd** only: **id pridaw** 21^a, **yd portheise** 27^a; **yd rotir** 23^b. Before other consonants the usage varies,—**c**: **ý kuýnan** (infixed pron.?) 2^a, **ý kisceisse** 25^a, **ý keweis** (infixed pron.?) 43^b, but **id gan** 8^a, **id keiff** 43^a, **id cuitin** 48^a, **yd gan** 54^a. **gw**: **ý gvna** 34^b, **ý gweleise** 36^a, 36^b, **ý guýstluy** 38^a, **ý guiscav** 41^b, but **id woriv** 9^a, **yd welese** 27^a, **yd vna** 32^a. **b**: **ý bu** 33^b, **ý bit** 28^a, but **yd vei** 34^b, **yd vo**, **yd vit** 42^a, **yd uit** 44^b. **ll**: **ý llas** 36^b, **ý lleinw** 51^a, but **id lathennawr** 26^a, **id lathei** 48^b. In the O.W. glosses it only appears: **it dagatte** Mart. Cap. 4^b, **it darnesti** Iuv. p. 88. From all this it may be inferred that there was a period in Welsh when the particle was **yd** before vowels, **yd** with lenation before consonants. As to the origin of non-lenating **y**, it is probable that it started from verbs beginning with **d**. As **adyn wretch** comes from ***ad-dýn**, so, e.g. ***yd duc** would give ***yd uc**. From association with the other forms of the verb this would naturally come to be regarded as **y duc**, and hence, probably with the help of **y** containing an infixed pronoun (§ 50^b), **y** might spread as the general form before consonants. As to the later **yr**: **y** for **yd**: **y**, it is probably due to the influence of the forms of the article **yr**: **y**.

NOTE 3.—In **ac yr gyscwys** RB. 28, **ual yr lygryssit** RB. 54, **ual yr notayssynt** CM. 57, **yr=y ry**, cf. § 93 note 4.

Usage of **yd**.

92. In normal Mid.W. prose the particle **yd**, which has no appreciable meaning, is, with certain exceptions, used regularly before indicatives and subjunctives, e.g. **yd af** yn egyl gyt ac wynt *I will go as angel along with them*; **y deuei** y kythreul *the devil used to come*; ac yno **y gwelas** ef pedeir gwraged *and there he saw four women*; yn y lle **y gwelsei** Gynon *in the place where he had seen Cynon*; lle **y gwelych** eglwys *wherever thou seest a church*; **val y gwelas** y gwr Peredur yn dyuot *as the man saw Peredur coming*; megys **y mynnei** ehun *as he himself desired*; hyt **y buant** *as long as they were*.

93. But it is not used:—

(a) at the beginning of a clause before a subjunctive of wish or command, e.g. **diwýccom-ne** a digonhom o gamuet *may we make atonement for the iniquity which we have done* BB. 15^b; **hanpych** gwell hail! dos titheu ar Arthur . . . ac **erchých** hýnný idaw go thou to Arthur and ask that of him WB. 454; Agamemnon . . . a dwawt . . . **gossottynt** hwy y neb a vynnynt yn y le ef Agamemnon said they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place RB. II. 24.

NOTE 1.—Contrast **yng ngoleu addef nef yt nodder in the light of the heavenly home may he be protected** MA. 174^a.

(b) When the verb is repeated in answers, e.g. **a bery di?** **paraf** *wilt thou effect?* **I will.**

(c) In such instances as the following:—Bei dywedut ti y mi y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn y titheu yr hwnn a ovynny ditheu. **Dywedaf** yn llawen, heb yr Owein “*if thou wouldest tell me what I ask of thee, I would tell thee what thou askest.*” “*I will tell gladly,*” says Owein; ath gedymdeithas yssydadolwyn gennyf y gaffel. **Keffy** myn vyg cret “*and I pray to obtain thy friendship.*” “*Thou shalt obtain it by my faith;*” ac yna y dywawt Peredur: **diolchaf** ynneu y **Duw na** thorreis vy llw and then Peredur said: “*I give thanks to God that I have not broken my oath*” (cf. the use of **na** § 237 c).

(d) When the predicate precedes the copula, e.g. **llawen vuant** *they were glad.*

NOTE 2.—But with verbs of naming **yd** with an infixd pronoun is used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **Peredur ym gelwir** *I am called Peredur.*

(e) After a negative, e.g. **ny welas** *he did not see*; **pony wdost** *dost thou not know?*

(f) In relative construction, e.g. **ef a doeth** *he came.*

(g) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. **a wely di** *dost thou see?*

(h) After the particle **neut**, e.g. **neud ynt** *geith now they are slaves* MA. 157^b.

(i) After **mad** *well*, e.g. **mad devthoste** *happily didst thou come*, BB. 44^a, unless there be an infixd pronoun, e.g. **mat yth anet** *happily wert thou born* FB. 101.

(k) After **moch** *soon* (= Ir. mos), e.g. **moch guelher** *soon will be seen* BB. 1^b.

(l) After certain conjunctions, e.g. **can buost** *since thou hast been*; **kwt gaffei** *where he should get* WB. 453; **cyn gwnel** *though he does*; **kyt dywetto** *though he should say*; **o gwely** *if thou seest*; **pan welsant** *when they saw*; **pei kaffwn** *if I should get*; **tra vych** *while thou art*; **yny digwyd** *till he falls*. But it is used with an infixd pronoun after **pan**, e.g. **yr pan yth weleis** *since I saw thee*; so after **tra** (but cf. § 49^b), e.g. **hyt tra yn dygyrcher** *so long as we are visited* RB. 105.

NOTE 3.—After **gwedy** after the usage is not very clear. Before a following vowel, we have on the one hand **gwedy ed eystedont** *after they sit* BCh. 53, **gwedy yd elont** *after they go* Hg. I. 11, **gwedy yd elom** *after we go* Hg. II. 146, on the other hand **gwedy aruerych** *after thou dost practise* LA. 90. Before a following consonant, in BCh. **gwedy y** (e.g. **gwedy e kafo** *after he gets* 34) is more common than **gwedy** (e.g. **gwedy roder** *after she is given* 130); in BB. is found wide **kýwisscaran** (leg. **kýwisscarun**) *after we separate* 12^b; **gwýdi darffo** *after it is over* 4^b; in Mid. W. prose **gwedy** is much more common than **gwedy y**, but it is a question how far **gwedy** comes after fusion from **gwedy y**. It is to be noted that infixing **a-** (§ 94) is found after **gwedy** as well as after the conjunctions which are not followed by **yd**; this would seem to suggest that the use of **yd** after **gwedy** was not original, but there is need for further investigation based on fuller material.

NOTE 4.—In Mid. W. prose **yd** is sometimes found before **ry**, even when there is no infixd pronoun, e.g. **fford y ry** [d]uuost *the way by which thou hast come* WB. 138; **ym pob gwlat or y rýfuum** *in every country in which I have been* ib. 144; **y ry dugassei** *he had brought* RB. II. 139; **megys y ry wnathoed** *as he had done* ib. 161. Cf. the instances of **yr** § 91 n. 3.

94. In later Mid.W. the use of *yd* is more extensive than at an earlier period. In the archaic prose of the story of *Kulhwch* and *Olwen* it is often wanting in the White Book version where it is present in the Red Book, and in the earlier poetry it is rarer still; the conditions of the earlier usage have still to be investigated. It may be noted that in earlier Welsh, when *yd* is not syntactically permissible, *a-* is used to infix a pronoun, e.g. *a-m bo may there be to me* BB. 17^b; *ath uendiguiste he has blessed thee* 18^a; *as attebwys answered them* FB. 139; as *redwn* (leg. *rodwn*) *we will give it* WB. 475. In prose this usage survives after some conjunctions, e.g. *gwedy an gwellwch after ye see us* Hg. II. 1; *gwedy as cladawch hi after ye bury her* LA. 81; *pei as rodei if he gave it* RB. 136. This *a* tends to become *y* under the influence of the infix pronoun after *yd* (*y-m*, etc.), e.g. *ýs po may there be to him* BB. 53^b; *bei ýscuýpun if I had known it* BB. 41^a; *bei ýs gattein if it had permitted it* WB. 424 = *pei as gattein* RB. 274; *kyt ym lladho though he slay me* RB. 280 = *kyt am llatho* Peniarth MS. 4. With fusion, e.g. *peis mynnnynt if they desired it* LA. 69.

THE PARTICLE *ry*.

95. The particle *ry*, which corresponds etymologically to the Ir. verbal particle *ro-*, and resembles it in its uses, is in Welsh a disappearing particle; it is much less frequent in Mid.W. prose than in the early poetry.

NOTE.—**Ry** is sometimes reduced to *r*, e.g. *nýr darffo* WB. 230 = *ny darffo* RB. 168; *nar geueis that I did not get* Hg. II. 265; *ar ethynt* (v.l. *a ethynt*) *that have passed* RB. II. 205; *ar doethoed* (= *a dathoed* RB. 197) *who had come* WB. 62; *wedyr vligaw* (= *wedy y vlingaw* Hg. II. 112) *after his flaying* CM. 102. From *neu + ry* has come the common Mid.W. *neur*, cf. *neur dialawd* (= *neu rý dialawd* WB. 404) *he has avenged* RB. 259; *neur daroed* (= *neu rý daroed* WB. 402) *it was over* RB. 258. For *yr = y ry* see § 91 n. 3.

96. In Mid.W. prose *ry* is used :—

A. With the indicative.

(a) Optionally with the perfect (as distinguished from the preterite, § 108), e.g. *uý llýsuam ry dýgvýs* (= *a dynghwys* RB. 102) *im my stepmother has sworn to me* WB. 454; *pawb ry gauas* (= *a gauas* RB. 113) *ý gýuarws everyone has received his boon* WB. 470; *drycheuwch ý fýrch uý aeieu ry syrthwýs* (= *a syrthwýs* RB. 119) *ar aualeu vý llygeit raise the forks of my eyelashes which have fallen on my eyeballs* WB. 478; *llawer dyd yth ry gereis* *I have loved thee many a day* RB. 118; *nýs ry geueis* (= *nys keueis* RB. 126) *I have not got him* WB. 487; *ny ry giglef i eirmoet dim y wrth y uorwyn* *I have never heard anything of the*

maiden RB. 113; a ffan ry dyuu amser mab a anet a elwit Bown and when the time was come, there was born a son who was called Bown Hg. II. 119.

(b) Optionally with the pluperfect, e.g. gwallocau a oruc ý rýn ry adawsei (= yr hyn a **adawssei** RB. 101) *he neglected what he had promised* WB. 453; a thirst oed genthi, **kaný ry welsei** (= **kany welsei** RB. 116) eiroet ý uýnet ae eneit ganthaw a delhei ý erchi ý neges honno *and she was sad, for she had never seen anyone who came on that quest depart with his life* WB. 474; a chael yn y uedwl **na ry welsei** eiryoet mab a that kyndebucket ar mab y Pwyll *and he thought that he had never seen son and father so like as the boy was to Pwyll*; a chynn ymgweiraw yn y gyfrwy neur **ry adoed** heibyaw *and before he had settled himself in his saddle, she had passed by*. In the sentence: dechreu amouyn a gwyrd a wlat beth uuassei y arglydiaeth ef arnadunt hwy y vlwydyn honno y wrth **ry uuassei** kyn no hynny *he began to ask the nobles of his country how his rule over them had been that year compared with what it had been before* RB. 7, **ry uuassei** seems to express priority relatively to the preceding **buassei**.

B. With the subjunctive.

(a) With the present subjunctive **ry** appears sometimes when it has a perfect sense, e.g. ohonot ti ýt gaffo ef kanýs **ry gaffo** (= **yr nas kaffo** RB. 101) o arall *from thee he shall get (offspring) though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **kyt ry wnelych** di sarhaedeu . . . kyn no hynn nys gwney bellach *though thou hast committed outrages before this, thou shalt not commit them further* RB. 99; yno y byd eneideu ry darfso vdunt penydyaw *there are the souls that have ended their penance* LA. 129. But also without **ry**, e.g. a chyn **gwnel** gameu it . . . ny buost ti hawlwr tir a dayar eiryoet *and though he has wronged thee, thou hast never been a claimant of land and earth* RB. 44.

(b) With the past subjunctive, when it has the sense of a pluperfect, **ry** not infrequently appears, e.g. mýnet a oruc serch ý uorwýn ým pob aelawt itaw **kýnnýs ry welhei** (= **yr nas gwelsei** RB. 102) eiroet *love for the maiden entered every limb of him though*

he had never seen her WB. 454; *nýd oed waeth kýuarwýd ýn ý wlad ný rý welei* (= **nys ry welsei** RB. 114) *eiroet noc ýn ý wlad ehun he was not a worse guide in a country that he had never seen than in his own country* WB. 471; *a chyn lawenet vu a chyt ry delei idaw iechyt and he was as joyous as though health had come to him* RB. II. 183; *pei mi rý wascut* (= **a wascut** RB. 116) *uelliý ný oruýdei ar arall uyth rodi serch im if it had been me whom thou hadst so squeezed, no other one would ever have been able to show me love* WB. 474. But also without **ry**, e.g. *pei ys gwypwn ny down yma if I had known it, I would not have come hither* RB. 29, 20.

C. With the infinitive when it has a perfect or pluperfect sense, e.g. *adnabot a oruc ry gaffel* *dyrnawt ohonaw he perceived that he had got a buffet*; *gwedy ry golli eu kyrn after their horns had been lost* RB. 194.

97. In early Welsh poetry the use of **ry** is much more common than in prose; there it has also some syntactical uses which have been lost in prose (cf. Eriu II. 215 sq.).

(a) With the indicative preterite, when it has a perfect sense, **ry** is much more frequent than in the prose language. As in the case of Irish **ro**, the general definition of this usage is that the past is viewed from the standpoint of the present. There may be a reference either to the personal experience of the speaker, e.g. *mi ryth welas I have seen thee* BB. 51^a, *rim artuad I have been blackened* BB. 12^a, or to an indefinite past, e.g. *ry gadwys Duw dial ar plwyf Pharaonus God has kept vengeance on Pharaoh's people* FB. 170.

With respect to this usage, however, the following points have to be noted:—

1. **ry** is not found:—

(a) After a negative, e.g. *ni threghis ev hoes their life has not passed away* BB. 11^a; contrast *ry treghis eu hoes* FB. 128. There are rare exceptions in the later poetry.

(β) After *mad well*, e.g. *mad devthoste ýg corffolaeth happily hast Thou come into the flesh* BB. 44^a.

(γ) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. *a gueleiste gureic hast thou seen a woman?* BB. 22^b. But in prose *a ry fu has he been?* WB. 121.

2. **ry** is not preceded by relative **a**. In the later poetry there are very rare exceptions.

3. A pronoun is infixated after **ry**; it is not put before it with **yd** or **a**, e.g. *ry-n gwarawt has helped us* FB. 126, *os Dofyd ry-n digones if it is the Lord that has made us* FB. 113. In the later poetry there are rare exceptions.

(b) With the subjunctive of wish it is used optionally in positive (but never in negative) sentences, e.g. *ry phrinomne di gerenhit may we buy Thy friendship* BB. 44^b; *rym gwares dy voli may Thy praise help me* FB. 109, *by ath uendicco may it bless thee* BB. 18^a; but *ný buve trist may I not be sad* BB. 17^b.

(c) With the present indicative:—

1. **Ry** may express possibility, e.g. *rŷ seiw gur ar vn conin a man can stand on a single reed* BB. 45^a.

NOTE.—In prose there is an instance of **ry** with the present indicative in: *ef a ry eill ych neckau he may refuse you* RB. 60. With **gallu**, **ry** is also found in the potential, e.g. *ef ar allei vot yn wir a dywedy di what thou sayest may be true* Hg. I. 81, similarly 224, 267, 272; without **ry**: *ef a allei llawer mab colli y eneit many youths might lose their life* WB. 100. From the perfect sense inherent in the verb, **ry** is found with the present and imperfect of **darvot** *to be finished*, e.g. *os y uwrrw rŷ deryw if he has been thrown* WB. 125; *neur daroed idaw diffeithaw traean Iwerdon he had already laid waste the third part of Ireland* RB. 135.

2. In a subordinate clause of a general sentence it may have the sense of a perfect, e.g. *ti a nodyd a ry geryd Thou savest those whom Thou hast loved* FB. 180. The same sense is found in the subjunctive, when that mood is syntactically required, e.g. *ry brynw[y] nef nyt ef synn whosoever has purchased heaven will not be confounded* FB. 307; a *ry gotwy* glew gogeled ragtaw *let him who has angered a brave man shun him* MA. 191^a.

(d) In the later poetry it is used with the future, or with the subjunctive in a future sense, without any apparent meaning, e.g. *arth o Deheubarth a dirchafuŷ, rŷ lletaud y wir ew tra thir mŷnwy a bear from the South will arise. His men will spread over the land of Mynwy* BB. 30^a; *bydinoed Katwaladyr kadyr y deuant, ry drychafwynt Kymry, kat a wnant the hosts of Cadwaladr mightily will they come. The Cymry will rise up, they will give battle* FB. 126.

CONJUGATION OF THE VERB.

Verbal Classes.

98. In Celtic as in Latin there were various types of verbal conjugation. In Old Irish the different types may still to a great extent be distinguished, e.g. 3 sg. **-beir** *carries* from ***beret**, **-guid** *prays* from ***godit** (cf. Lat. *capit*), **-cara** *loves* from ***carāt** (cf. Lat. *amat*), **-lēici** *leaves* from ***lancīt** or the like (cf. Lat. *audit* or *monet*; in Celtic ē became ī). In Welsh the several types have become obscured. There remain, however, some traces of an original difference. Such are the different forms of the 3 sg. pres. ind., e.g. **geill** (to **gallu** *to be able*) which would go back to ***gallit** or the like, **cymmer** *takes* which would correspond to an Ir. con-beir and would go back to **com-beret**, **car** *loves* = Ir. -cara; further the various forms of the 3 sg. pret. act. in **-as**, **-es**, **-is** and of the pret. pass. in **-at**, **-et**, **-it**. In particular should be noted such series as **geilw** (to **galw**, *to call*): **gelwis**: **gelwit**; **ceidw** (to **cadw** *to preserve*): **cedwis**: **cedwit**; **llysg** (to **llosgi** *to*

burn): **ilosges**: **ilosget**; **ceiff** (to **caffael** *to get*): **cavas**: **cavat**. Here there is great need for a collection of material from early texts. In some cases an original radical conjugation is indicated by certain formations peculiar to verbs of the root class, e.g. the **-t** preterites **aeth** = Ir. *-acht* and **cymmerth** = Ir. *con-bert* to pres. **a** = Ir. *-aig* and **cymmer** = Ir. *con-beir*; the pret. **gwarawt** = Ir. *fo-rāith* to **gwaret** *to help*; and preterites passive like **llas** = Ir. *-lass* to **llad** *to kill*.

Voice.

99. There are two voices, the active and the passive. The deponential form which is found in Old-Irish has disappeared in Welsh.

Number.

100. In the active there are two numbers, the singular and the plural. In the passive there is only one form for both numbers.

101. In the concord of a verb with a plural subject Welsh shews certain peculiarities:—

(a) If the subject be unexpressed, or if it be a personal pronoun, the verb is in the plural, e.g. **y doethant**, **y doethant wy**, **wynt a doethant** *they came*.

NOTE.—Exceptions are rare, e.g. **os wynteu ae med hi if it is they that possess it** RB. 91; poet **wynt athiffero let it be they who defend thee** CM. 35; **nyt wy dyweit geu llyfreu Beda the books of Beda do not lie** FB. 159; **wy a gynheil y bit they support the world** FB. 217; **hwyl a orfyt they shall prevail** MA. 141^b. An example with the copula is: **ys hwyl yr rei hynnyn (=sef yw y rei hynny RB. 121)** *Nýnhýaw a Pheibýaw they are Nynnyaw and Peibyw* WB. 480.

(b) Otherwise in the prose of the Mabinogion the singular is the usual construction, e.g. **y kerdwys y kennadeu** *the messengers set out*; **beth yw y rei racko?** *eglyon ynt what are those yonder? They are angels.* But sometimes the verb is in the plural, particularly in WB. and in the more archaic texts, e.g. **y deu vrenhin a nessayssant** *the two kings drew near* RB. 5; a **meicheit Matholwch a oedýnt (=oed RB. 35)** *ar lan y weilgi and the swineherds of Matholwch were by the shore of the sea* WB. 50; **y trywyr a ganant eu kýrn** *the three sound their horns* WB. 485 = RB. 125, 18;

naw brenhin coronawc a oedýnt wyr idaw *nine crowned kings who were his men* RB. 244; **seithwyr a oydýnt** y danaw *seven men were under him* (by **naw eglwys ereill a vydei** *there were nine other churches*) WB. 385 = RB. 245; **ŷ rei a oedýnt** (=oed RB. 165) **ŷn gwassanaethu** *those who were serving* WB. 227; **bliant oedýnt** (=oed RB. 165) **ŷ llieinýeu** y bwrt *the tablecloths were of fine linen* WB. 227; **kwt ýnt** (=ble **mae** RB. 101) **plant ý gwr** *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453. Sometimes the plural is found with a collective noun, e.g. **gwelsant niuer** *Otgar eu meint the people of Otgar saw their number* RB. 136, 3. In the earlier poetry the plural is quite common, and in corresponding constructions in Old Irish the plural is regular. In Welsh there has been an encroachment of the singular upon the plural, as there has been in later Irish.

Person.

102. In the active there are three persons of each number. In the passive there is only a third person, the first and second persons being expressed, as in Irish, by means of pronouns, e.g. **y-m gelwir** *I am called*, **y-th elwir** *thou art called*, **ny-n cerir** *we are not loved*, **ny-ch cerir** *ye are not loved*; **kattwer vi** *let me be kept*.

NOTE.—In the third person there are instances of an infix pronoun, when the verb is non-relative, e.g. **kyt ys galwer** *though they are called* LA. 88, **megys pei as gossottit** *as if it were placed* Hg. I. 304; but, on the other hand, e.g. **na rodher** *that it be not given* RB. 258, **pan olyngit** *when it was set free* Hg. I. 315. The matter calls for further observation.

103. The verb regularly agrees in person with the subject, e.g. **mi a welaf** *I see*, **ti a wely** *thou seest*, **ny a dywedwn** *we say*, **mi a thi a ryuelwn** *thou and I will fight*, **mi a Bown a wysgwn** *yn arueu ymdanam a thitheu a wysgy ymdanat Bown and I will put on our arms, and thou wilt put on thine*. In the passive, where there is no distinction of person, the third person is used everywhere, e.g. **mi a gerir** *I am loved*. The 3 sg. copula form **ys** is used, like the corresponding Ir. is, with pronouns of the first and second persons, e.g. **ys mi** (=Ir. is mē) *it is I.*

Occasionally in a relative clause the verb is in the 3 sg. when the antecedent is in the first or second person, e.g. *mi rýth welas* *I have seen thee* BB. 51^a; *ae ti a eirch uy merch?* *ys mi ae heirch* *is it thou who askest for my daughter?* *It is I who ask for her* WB. 479; *mi ay had[e]ilyawd* *I built it* WB. 394.

NOTE.—These last examples represent the original construction, which has in Welsh been replaced by congruence with the pronoun. The 3 sg. is the regular construction in Breton, e.g. *me guelas* *I saw*, in Cornish, e.g. *why a ergh ye seek*, and in Old Irish, e.g. *is mē asbeir* *it is I who say*.

The Moods.

104. There are three finite moods, the indicative, the subjunctive and the imperative. The Celtic languages have developed no proper infinitive; the place of the infinitive in Welsh as in the other Celtic languages is taken by a verbal noun, with nominal inflexion and with nominal construction. There is a passive participle in **-edic** and a verbal of necessity in **-adwy** (corresponding to the Irish verbal of necessity in **-thi**).

The Indicative.

105. The tenses of the indicative are present, imperfect, preterite, and pluperfect. Syntactically the present serves also as a future; in the earlier language, however, there are also special future forms (§ 130). The imperfect is used both as an imperfect indicative and as a conditional (in the latter usage it corresponds in usage to the Irish secondary future). The preterite is used both as preterite and as perfect; in the latter usage it is often preceded by **ry**, particularly in the earlier language (§§ 96, 97). The pluperfect is a new development of the British division of Celtic; it has the same endings as the imperfect, and has been formed to the preterite stem on the analogy of the imperfect to the present. It is used (a) as a pluperfect indicative, (b) as a pluperfect conditional, in which sense, however, the imperfect continues to be used in Mid.W., (c) as a pluperfect subjunctive, in which usage it tends in Mid.W. to replace the past tense of the subjunctive (§ 111). The following examples will illustrate the uses of the tenses of the indicative.

PRESENT.

106. (a) Actual present, e.g. beth **yw** hwnn? Kyfrwy **yw** *what is this?* *It is a saddle;* ti a **welý** ý sawl vorýnýon hýgar **ýssyd** ýn ý llýs hon *thou seest all the amiable maidens who are in this court* WB. 155.

(b) Consuetudinal present, e.g. ef a **wýl** pawb or a del ý míwn ac nýs **gwýl** neb efo *he sees everyone who enters and no one sees him* WB. 156.

(c) Of an action lasting into the present, e.g. **ys** gwers **yd wyf** yn keissaw a olchei vyg cledyf *I have been seeking for a while some one to burnish my sword* RB. 126; pump mlyned ar ethynt yr pan **yttym** ni yn arueru or ryw seguryt hwnnw *five years have passed away since we have been enjoying that ease* RB. II. 205.

(d) Historic present, e.g. nyt kynt **yd yskynn** ef ar y uarch noc **yd a** hitheu hebdaw ef *no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him* RB. 11; nachaf gwr du . . . a **welant** *lo! they saw a black man* WB. 486; a phan **daw** (=doeth WB. p. 204) hyt lle **yd oed** Gwenhwyvar kyuarch gwell a oruc idi *and when he came to the place where Gwenhwyvar was he greeted her* RB. 262; gossot a oruc ynteu ar y marchawc . . . yny **hyllt** y daryan ac yny **dyrr** yr aruev *he made an onset on the horseman, till he cleft the shield and broke the arms* RB. 271.

(e) As future, e.g. dywet y Arthur pa le bynnac y bwyf i gwr idaw **vydaf**, ac o **gallaf** lles a gwassanaeth idaw, mi ae **gwnaf**. *A dywet na deuaf y lys vyth yny ymgaffwyf ar gwr hir say to Arthur that wherever I am I will be his man, and if I can do him advantage and service, I will do it. And say that I will never come to his court till I encounter the tall man.*

IMPERFECT.

107. (a) Of an action going on or a state existing in past time, e.g. val y **kyrchei** ef y bont ef a **welei** varchawc yn dyuot *as he was making for the bridge, he saw a horseman coming* WB. p. 216; nyt y fford a **gyrchei** y tref or bont a gerdawd Gereint *it was not by the road that went from the bridge to the town that Gereint went*

WB. p. 217; yma **yd oedwn** yn kerdet ui ar gwr mwýaf a **garwn**. ac ar hynny y doeth tri chawr o gewri attam *we were travelling, I and the man whom I most loved. And thereupon there came to us three giants* WB. 441; pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eingon gof a **oed** yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc **oedwn** *when first I came here there was here a smith's anvil, and I was a young bird* RB. 129.

NOTE 1.—Note the use of the imperfect with a negative in such sentences as the following: *nyt eynt hwy oe bod they would not go willingly* RB. 32; *yr hynny ny thawai yny dygwydwys kysgu arnei for all that she would not be silent, till sleep fell upon her* RB. II. 51.

NOTE 2.—The imperfects of *clybot to hear* and of *gwelet to see* are frequent in narrative, parallel with the preterite of other verbs, e.g. *y dyd yd aeth ef parth a chaer Dathyl, troi o vywn y llys a wnaeth hi; a hi a glywei lef corn the day that he went towards Caer Dathyl, she walked within the court, and she heard the sound of a horn* RB. 74, 6; *a dyuot yr brifford ae chanlyn a orugant. A choet mawr a welynt y wrthunt. A ffarth ar coet y deuthant. Ac yn dyuot or koet allan y gwelynt pedwar marchawe aruawc. Ac edrych a orugant arnunt and they came to the highway and followed it. And they saw before them a great wood. And they went towards the wood. And they saw four armed horsemen coming out of the wood. And they gazed upon them* RB. 270, 19.

(b) Representing in indirect speech a present indicative of direct speech, e.g. *a galw a wnaeth attaw y verch hynaf idaw Goronilla a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi efo. A thygu a wnaeth hitheu y nef a daear bot yn vwy y karei hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chreda u wnaeth ynteu idi hynny, a dywedut, kan oed kymeint y karei hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean y gyuoth genti hi y wr a dewissei yn ynys Prydein and he called to him his eldest daughter Goronilla, and asked her how much she loved him. And she swore by heaven and earth that she loved him more than her own life. And he believed her in that and said that, since she loved him so much as that, he would give the third of his kingdom with her to the man whom she should choose in the island of Britain* RB. II. 65.

(c) Of a repeated or customary action in past time, e.g. *a phybeth bynnac a dywetei ar y dauawt, ef ae kadarnhei oe weithret ae arueu and whatever he said with his tongue, he used to make it good by his deeds and his arms* RB. II. 41; *kymeint ac a wnelit y dyd or gweith, tranoeth pan gyuotit neur daruydei yr dayar y lynku as much of the work as was done by day, overnight when they arose the earth had swallowed it* RB. II. 141; *ar twym a wneyit*

yna rwng deu dyn a wnaethpwyt y rwng Gereint ar uorwyn *and the bond that used to be made then between two persons was made between Gereint and the maiden* RB. 262, 25.

(d) As secondary future or conditional.

(a) As a secondary tense to the future, e.g. can gwýdýwn i **ýdout** ti ým keissyaw i *for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me* WB. 249; diheu oed genthi na **deuei** Ereint uyth *she was sure that Gereint would never come* WB. 441; ny wydyat hi beth a **wnaei** *she did not know what she should do* RB. 268, 29.

(β) In the apodosis of a future or possible conditional clause, e.g. bei gwnelhit uýg kýghor i ný **thorrit** kýfreitheu llýs ýrdaw *if my counsel were followed, the laws of the court would not be broken on his account* WB. 458; pei clywhut ti ymdidan y marchogyon racco . . . mwy **vydei** dy oual noc y mae *if thou heard the discourse of yonder horsemen, thy anxiety would be greater than it is.*

(γ) In the apodosis of a past or impossible conditional clause, e.g. py ham vilein, heb ef, y gadut ti efo heb y uenegi imi. Arglwyd, heb ef, ny orchymyneisti euo imi; pei as gorchymynnut nys **gadwn** *"why, villain," said he, "didst thou let him go without letting me know?" "Lord," said he, "thou didst not give me such instructions. If thou hadst instructed me I should not have let him go"* WB. p. 216; pei oet idaw, ef a **ledit** (= **ladyssit** RB. 193, 8) *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* WB. 117.

NOTE 3. To **bot** *to be* the regular conditional is **bydwn**. The imperfect **oed**, however, (like Ir. *ba*) is used in a modal sense in expressions like the following: **oed well genhýf** (= Ir. *ba ferr limm*) *noc ýssýd ým gwlat bei oll ýt uei val hýnn I should prefer to all that is in my kingdom that it should be all like that* WB. 487.

PRETERITE.

108. (a) As preterite (the regular narrative tense), e.g. ac ýmhoý lud a **oruc** ar ý marchawc, ac ar ý gossot kýntaf ý uwrw ýr llawr ý dan draet ý uarch. a thra **barh[a]awd** ýr un or pedwarugein marchawc, ar ý gossot kýntaf ý **býrýawd** pob un onadunt. Ac o oreu ý oreu ý **doe[t]hont** attaw eithýr ý iarll. Ac ýn diwethaf oll ý **doeth** ý iarll attaw *and he turned on the horseman, and at the*

first onset he threw him to the ground, under the feet of his horse. And while there remained one of the eighty horsemen, at the first onset he overthrew every one of them. And there came to him always one better than the last, except the earl. And last of all the earl came to him WB. 432 ; *y gysgu yd aethant y nos honno. a phan welas y meichat lliw y dyd, ef a deffroes Wydyon that night they went to sleep. And when the swineherd saw the hue of day, he aroused Gwydyon* RB. 78, 12.

(b) Corresponding to a perfect in indirect speech, e.g. a thranoeth Agamemnon a wyssywys y bobyl y gyt, ac a diwadawd na **bu** ef eiryoet chwanawc yr amherodraeth honno. ac a dywawt nas **kymerth** ef hi onyt o uedwl iawn *and next day Agamemnon summoned the people together, and denied that he had ever been desirous of that sovereignty. And he said that he had not taken it except with just intention* RB. II. 24.

(c) As perfect, e.g. coet **ry welsom** ar y weilgi yn y lle ny **welsam** eiryoet vn prenn *we have seen a wood upon the sea where we have never seen a single tree* RB. 35, 24; pwy a **ganhadwys** iti eisted yna *who has given thee permission to sit there?* WB. p. 225 ; Bendigeit Uran ar niuer a **dywedassam** ni a hwylyassant parth ac Iwerdon *Bendigeit Vran and those whom we have mentioned set out towards Ireland* RB. 35, 14.

PLUPERFECT.

109. (a) As pluperfect indicative, e.g. or a **welsei** ef o helgwn y byt ny **welsei** cwn un lliw ac wynt *of all the hounds that he had seen anywhere he had never seen dogs of the same colour as them* RB. 1, 21; ual **y gnottayssei** tra uu yn llys Arthur kyrchu twrneimeint a wnaei *he resorted to tournaments as he had been wont to do while he was in Arthur's court* RB. 268, 6 ; a dyuot kof idaw y dolur yna yn uwylno phan **y cawssei** *and then there came to him the recollection of his sorrow more than when he had received it* WB. p. 218.

(b) As pluperfect conditional, e.g. **buassei** well iti pei rodassut nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the lad*; a phei nat ystyriei yr Arglwyd Duw ohonunt

wy, ef a **wnaethoed** oual tra messur udunt and if the Lord God had not considered them he would have caused anxiety beyond measure to them Hg. II. 71.

(c) Replacing the subjunctive in a pluperfect sense, e.g. bei **buassut** wrth vy gyghor i, ny chyuaruydei a thi na thrallawt na gofit if thou hadst followed my counsel, neither affliction nor trouble would have come nigh unto thee Hg. II. 123; pei **doethoed** ef yn y lle wedy dilyw, wynt a dywedyst y mae vrth Noe ac Effream y dywedassei Duw pob peth or a dywedessynt if he had come immediately after the Flood they would have said that it was to Noah and Abraham that God had said everything that they had said LA. 17.

The Subjunctive Mood.

THE FORMATION OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

110. The sign of the subjunctive is **h**; for the changes that **h** undergoes in conjunction with a preceding sound see § 112. Examples:—sg. 3 pres., **coffaho**: **coffau** to remember; **carho**: **caru** to love; **sorho**: **sorri** to be angry; **talho**: **talu** pay; **prynho**: **prynu** to buy; **mynho**: **mynnu** to desire; **bendicco**: **bendigaw** to bless; **cretto**: **credu** to believe; **atteppo**: **attebu** to answer; **llatho**: **llad** to slay; **tyffo**: **tyvu** to grow. After a preceding **h**, **h** is lost by dissimilation, e.g. **parhao**: **parhau** to continue; **amheuo**: **amheu** to doubt. Further **h** does not appear after **ch**, e.g. **archo**: **erchi** to ask, after **ff**, e.g. **caffo**: **caffael** to get, after **ll**, e.g. **gallo**: **gallu** to be able, or after **s**, e.g. **keisser** BB. 26^b, **llafassed** BB. 27^a, **ÿssynt** WB. 467. In the present tense the subjunctive has distinctive endings; in the past tense the endings are the same as in the imperfect indicative, so that here the **h** is the only distinguishing mark, except in the few verbs that have a special subjunctive stem.

NOTE 1.—In Mid.W. a new **h** subjunctive is formed analogically to the indicative of verbal stems ending in **d**, e.g. **cerdho** RB. 293 = **certho** WB. p. 211: **cerdet** to go, **lladho** WB. p. 210 = **llatho** WB. 419: **llad**, **rothom** RB. 105 = **rothom** WB. 458: **rodi** to give; from stems ending in **v** the regular form is rare, **tyffei** : **tyvu** WB. 453, but **prouher** : **provi** prove BB. 3^b, **safhei** : **sevyll** to stand WB. 466 = RB. 110. There are already in Mid.W., particularly in its later period, examples of complete confusion

of the subjunctive with the indicative stem, e.g. **clywut** RB. 274 = **clyvut** WB. 423 = **clywhut** WB. p. 212 : **clybot** to hear, **clywych** RB. 270 = **clywhych** WB. p. 209, **guelud** : **gwelet** to see BB. 29^b, **talo** RB. 268 = **talho** WB. 415, **sorro** : **sorti** BB. 28^b, **cenich** : **canu** to sing BB. 42^b, **medrei** RB. 76 = **metrei** WB. 104 : **medru** aim at, **mynnei** RB. 277 = **mynhei** WB. p. 214, **cerdo** RB. 273 = **certho** WB. p. 211, **llado** RB. 270 = **lladho** WB. p. 210 = **llatho** WB. 419, **rodo** RB. 286 = **rotho** WB. p. 220, **ÿvei** : **ÿvet** to drink BB. 48^b. This confusion has spread analogically from cases like **gallu**, **erchi**, etc., where the subjunctive stem was in Old Welsh identical with the indicative, and from cases where later the two forms fell together by the operation of phonetic law, e.g. **mynho** to **mynno**, like **minheu** *I* to **minneu**. The old forms are most persistent in stems in **g**, **d**, **b**.

NOTE 2.—The earlier history of the Welsh subjunctive is very obscure. Vendryès, however, in the *Mémoires de la Société de linguistique de Paris*, XI. 258 sq. has made it probable that **h** came from prehistoric **s**, so that the formation would resemble that of the Irish *s*-subjunctive, from which, however, it differs in that in Welsh there must have been a vowel between **s** and the final consonant of the verbal stem. The explanation given by Stern, CZ. III. 383 sq. is untenable. In Early Welsh there are two subjunctives identical in formation with the Irish *s*-subjunctive:—**duch** may he lead from ***douc-set** : **dwyn** to lead, and **gwares** may he help from ***vo-ret-set** : **gwaret** to help.

THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

III. In early Welsh, as in Irish, the subjunctive had two tenses, a present, which syntactically had the function of a present and of a perfect, and a past, which syntactically had the function of an imperfect and of a pluperfect; in the sense of perfect and pluperfect the subjunctive may be preceded by **ry** (§ 96B.) In the later Mid.W. period the past subjunctive in a pluperfect sense tended to be replaced by the pluperfect indicative (§ 109c); sometimes in the same passage one text has the original subjunctive while another has the pluperfect indicative, e.g. **kýn nýs ry welhei** WB. 454 = **yr nas gwelsei** RB. 102, 5 *though he had not seen her*; **pei as gorchymynnut** WB. p. 216 = **pei as gorchymynnassut** RB. 280, 7 *if thou hadst commanded it*. The indicative origin of the usage is particularly clear in forms like **pei doethoed** *if he had come* LA. 17.

NOTE.—This substitution is parallel to the general tendency to replace the subjunctive stem by the indicative; it was noted above that no instances have been found of subjunctive **h** after **s**; thus, if **ysswn** from **yssu** to eat might be either indicative or subjunctive, a pluperfect indicative like **carasswn** *I had loved* might easily have come to be used in a subjunctive sense. In **ry wnelsut** WB. p. 223 = **gwnelut** WB. 445, RB. 290, a pluperfect has been formed analogically to the past subjunctive **gwnelut** (§ 142).

THE USAGES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

112. A thorough investigation of the uses of the subjunctive as contrasted with the indicative in Mid.W. is still wanting^a. The following examples may serve to illustrate the principal types; further instances will be found under the conjunctions. Under the various headings are given, so far as they occur, (a) instances of the present subjunctive, (β) instances of the past subjunctive.

113. A. The subjunctive in main clauses.

(a) Wish.

(a) **an duch** ir gulet *may He bring us to the feast* BB. 20^b; **Duw a rotho** da itt *may God give good to thee* WB. p. 204; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine* RB. 103, 6.

NOTE.—A wish with reference to the past is expressed by the indicative, e.g. *Och Iessu na dýffv wý nihenit O Jesus! that my death had come* (lit. *Alas! Jesus, that my death did not come*) BB. 25^b; *och Gindilie na buost gureic would, Cynddilig, that thou hadst been a woman* BB. 46^a.

(b) Command.

(a) **yscýthrich fort** a delhich ti. a **llunhich** tagneuet *make smooth a road that thou mayest come and cultivate peace* BB. 42^b; **dos . . . ac erchych** hynny idaw *go and ask that of him* RB. 102, 11; **dyuot a wnelhych** gennyf *come with me* RB. 118, 2; **dabre genhiw** **nym gwatter** *come with me, let me not be refused* BB. 51^a.

(β) In indirect speech a command is transferred to the past subjunctive, e.g. *Agamemnon . . . a d[y]awt y peidei ef ar llywodraeth honno yn llawen . . . a gossottynt hwy y neb a vynnynt yn y le ef Agamemnon said that he would gladly give up that command, and that they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

(c) Futurity. This usage is common in poetry, but rare in prose.

(a) **ohonot ti ýt gaffo** ef kanýs rý gaffo o arall *from thee he shall get it, though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **nyth atter** ti (= **nyth ellyngir** di RB. 104, 8) ý mýwn *thou shalt not be admitted* WB. 457; **nyt arbettwy** car corff y gilyd *one kinsman will not*

^a A beginning has been made by Atkinson, *On the Use of the Subjunctive Mood in Welsh*, "Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy, 1894," pp. 459 sq., but he deals only with the present subjunctive.

spare the body of another FB. 127; *cad a uyt ym Myny Carn a Thrahaearn a later there will be a battle in Mynydd Carn, and Trahaearn will be slain* MA. 142^a.

114. B. The subjunctive in subordinate clauses.

(a) Negatively after verbs of thinking, swearing, etc.

(a) *ny thybygaf inheu na wypych ti haedu ohonaw ef hynny I do not think that thou dost not know that he has deserved that* RB. II. 157; *hyt na bo neb a wypo na bo ti vo Gwrlois so that no one may know that thou art not Gwrlois* RB. II. 179; *mi a tyngaf dynghet idaw na chaffo ef enw yny kaffo gennfy i I lay this fate on him that he will not get a name till he gets it from me* RB. 69, 21; *o rodwch gret na wneloch gam idi if ye pledge yourselves to do her no wrong* RB. 117, 15.

NOTE 1.—But in indirect speech as such the indicative is the mood used. With the last example contrast: *y Duw y dygaf vvg kyffes nae werthu nae ellwng nas gwylaf i I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56, 8; similarly 215, 15.

(β) *nyt er tebygu ohonaw ef na bei deilwg it was not because he thought that it was not worthy* RB. II. 26; *neb or ae gwelei ny wydyat na beynt eur no one who saw them knew that they were not gold* RB. 62, 1. After a primary tense:—*na wn . . . pei kahwn dýsc nas gwylpwñ I do not know that, if I got instruction, I would not know how to do it* WB. 127.

(b) In indirect interrogation.

(a) *aet un y wybot pwy vo let some one go to learn who he may be* RB. 9, 1; *manac y mi pa furyf y gallwyf hynny show me how I can do that* RB. 3, 4; *yny wyper a uo byw until it be known whether he will live* RB. 261, 4; *y edrych a allwyf y dial arnaw to see whether I can avenge him on him* RB. 204, 12; *dewis ae ti a elych yr llys ae titheu a delych gyt a mi y hela ae minneu a yrro vn or teulu choose whether thou wilt go to the court, or whether thou wilt come with me to the chase, or whether I shall send one of the household* RB. 237, 9.

(β) *heb wybot pwy vei eu gelynyon pwy vei eu gwyr ehunein without knowing who were their enemies, who their own men* RB. II. 105; *val yd oed Kynan Meiradawc yn pedrussaw beth a wnelei as Kynan Meiradawg was hesitating as to what he should do*

RB. II. 114; a medylyaw pa ffuruf **y gellynt** ymlad ar deu lu *and they considered how they could fight with the two armies* RB. II. 76; ef a peris y dwyn yw lys y edrych a **uei** vyw *he caused him to be brought to his court to see whether he would live* WB. p. 222.

NOTE 2.—But in dependent interrogation as such the subjunctive is not required, e.g. ny wn i pwy **wyt** ti *I do not know who thou art* RB. 2; govyn a oruc pwy **oed** ynt a pha le pan **hanhoed** ynt a phy daear **y magyssit** arnei a phy achaws **y dathoed** ynt *deyrnas ef he asked who they were, and whence they came, and in what land they had been reared, and for what reason they had come to his kingdom* RB. II. 131; gouyn a wnaeth ae offeiryat oed ef *he asked if he was a priest* Hg. I. 33; edrych yn y chylech a oruc a **yttoed** ef yn deffroi *she looked round about her to see if he was awaking* RB. 274, 30.

(c) Concessive clauses:—

(a) a **chyt archo** ef ytti yr eil na dyro *and though he ask thee for a second (blow), do not give it* RB. 3, 19; tydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *thou shalt see me, though I do not see thee* RB. 173, 18.

(b) a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took her warning* WB. p. 215.

(d) Conditional clauses:—

(b) e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130, 5; bei **ys cuypun...**nys gunaun *if I had known it I would not have done it* BB. 41^a; or **gwnelei** ef hynny ynteu a rodei y verch idaw ef *if he did that he would give him his daughter* RB. II. 26.

NOTE 3.—In present conditional clauses the present indicative with **o** is used (§ 224^a).

(e) Clauses of comparison:—

(a) gwnaet iawn **mal y barno** goreugwyr y llys *let him give satisfaction as the nobles of the court shall decide* RB. 261, 4.

(b) **mal y dycke** eu teghetuenneu y ffoassant *they fled as their fortunes led them* RB. II. 73. Of unreal comparison, e.g. llyma yssyd iawnhaf itti . . . dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i **mal na wyppwn** i dim y wrth hynny *that is thy most proper course, to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

(f) Temporal clauses:—

(a) o lladaf i y gwr racco mi ath gaf ti **tra vynhwyf**. a **gwedy** nath **vynhwyf** mi ath yrraf ymdeith *if I slay yonder man, I will*

take thee as long as I desire; and when I no longer desire thee, I will cast thee forth WB. p. 215; **pan agorer** y creu beunyd yd a allan *when the sty is opened every day, it goes out* RB. 78, 7; **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely a wneuthum yrot ti *when thou thyself comest to thy land, thou wilt see what I have done for thee* RB. 6; ny luniaf i esgydyeu idi **yny welwyf** y throet *I will not shape shoes for her till I see her foot* RB. 70, 24.

(β) a pheri yr kigyd **gwedy y bei** yn dryllyaw kic dyuot idi a tharaw bonclust arnei beunyd *and he made the butcher, after he had been cutting up the flesh, come to her and box her ears every day* RB. 34, 9; a **ffan uei** hýttraf Gereint ý llawenhaei ý gwr *and whenever Gereint prevailed, the man rejoiced* WB. 398; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood, he would travel on the top of the wood* RB. 108, 21; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were thrown into the cauldron till it was full* RB. 39, 23.

(g) Final clauses, and clauses following verbs of effecting, commanding, desiring, etc.

(a) carchara wynt **hyt nat elont** dracheuyn *imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14; mi a wnaf **na chaffo** ef viui vyth *I shall effect that he shall never get me* RB. 13, 16; ny allaf i **na chyssgwyf** *I cannot refrain from sleep* RB. 277, 4; sef y harchaf itt **na mynnych** wreic *my request of thee is that thou shalt not seek a wife* RB. 100, 20.

(β) ereill a gyghorei it rodi dy uerch y un o dlyedogyon y deyrmas hon **ual y bei** vrenhin gwedy ti *others counselled thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom, so that there might be a king after thee* RB. II. 114; Andromacta...a anuones at Briaf y beri idaw wahard Ector **nat elei** y dyd hwnnw yr vrwyd yr *Andromache sent to Priam to get him to prevent Hector from going to the battle that day* RB. II. 22; adolwyn a wnaeth Elenus **na wnelit** hynny *Helenus begged that that might not be done* RB. II. 32.

NOTE 4.—But in mere consecution the indicative is used, e.g. ar y llech y mae kawc aryaunt wrth gadwyn aryaunt **mal ia ellir eu gwahanu** *on the flag there is a silver goblet on a silver chain, so that they cannot be separated* RB. 167; kyseu a wneuthum i **ual na wybuum** pan aeth ef *I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 26.

(h) Relative clauses, including similar clauses of a non-relative type.

(a) *wely di a wnelych here is what thou must do* RB. 271, 23; *kein wlad nef boed ef yt el the fair land of heaven, may it be there that he goes* MA. 263b; a **vo** penn bit bont *let him who is head be bridge* RB. 36; *y gymeint a wypwyf i mi ae dywedaf all that I know I will tell* RB. 131; o mynwn nineu arueru o rydit a **vo** hwy *if we wish to enjoy freedom any longer*; pwy bynnac a **vynno** kanlyn Arthur bit heno y Ghernyw gyt ac ef *whoever wishes to accompany Arthur, let him be with him to-night in Cornwall* RB. 160; *kymer y march kyntaf a welych take the first horse that thou seest* RB. 9; na uyd...**yr** a **dotter** yndi vyth *however much be put into it it will never be (full)* RB. 15; ny cheiff ymwan...y gwr ny **bo** gyt ac ef y wreic vwyhaf a **garho** *no man will be allowed to contend who has not with him the lady whom he most loves* RB. 252; a oes ohonawch chwi a **adnapo** y uarchoges racco *is there any one of you who knows yonder horsewoman?* RB. 8; keis ath **ladho** *seek someone to slay thee* RB. 5; gwna ty...**y geingho** ef *make a house in which he may find room* RB. 37, 21

(β) *Sef y gwelei y llew yn y ganlyn . . . ual milgi a uackei ehun he saw the lion following him like a hound that he had reared himself* RB. 187; *pedeir meillonen gwynnion a dýuei yn y hol mýn yd elhei four white blades of clover grew after her wherever she went* WB. 476; *digavn oed hýnný yn tal gwasanaeth a uei uwý nor un a wneuthum i that were sufficient as pay for a greater service than that which I have done* WB. 426; a pheth bynnac a **dywettei** Peredur wrthi chwerthin a wnay hitheu yn uchel and whatever Peredur said to her, she laughed aloud RB. 237; a chymeint oed eu gwybot ac nat oed ymadrawd . . . yr isset **y dywettit** . . . nys **gwypynt** and such was their knowledge that there was no conversation, however low it was uttered, that they did not know RB. 94, 18. After a primary tense: *kynhebic yw yr neb a wasgarei* gemeu mawrweirthyawc dan draet moch *he is like one who should scatter precious stones under the feet of swine* RB. II. 122.

The Imperative.

115. In the active the imperative has two persons in the singular and three in the plural; in the passive it is identical in form with the subjunctive. The negative is **na**. Examples:—**gat** i mi vynet *allow me to go*; **na wiscet** dim ymdanei *let her not put anything on*; **kyrchu tref arall a wnawn** *let us make for another town*; **na rodher** *let there not be given*. The only idiom that calls for special notice is the following:—**mi a rodaf vy iarllaeth yth uedyant a thric** *gyt a mi I will give my earldom into thy possession, if thou wilt stay with me* (lit. *and stay with me*) RB. 278, 14.

The Participle Passive in -edic.

116. Examples:—**arueu y gwyr lladedic** *the arms of the slain men*; **ynteu madeuedic yw** *ganthaw y godyant ef as for him, the injury done to him is forgiven by him* WB. 404; **Gwawl . . . a doeth parth ar wled a oed darparedic** *idaw Gwawl went to the feast that was prepared for him* RB. 14, 22.

The Verbal in -adwy.

117. Examples:—**nyt barnadwy** *yn volyant it is not to be judged a praise* Hg. II. 83; **nyt kredadwy** *it is not to be believed* CM. 111; **a chanys credadwy** *yw y anedigaeth credadwy* *y varwoly-aeth and since his birth is credible, his death is credible* CM. 21; **midwyf bard moladwy** *I am a poet worthy of praise* FB. 203; **odit a uo molediw** *few are worthy of praise* FB. 272; **os da gennyt ti ac or byd ragadwy** *bod it if thou approvest and if it is pleasing to thee* RB. II. 133; **a phrofadwy** *yw ry golli ohonaf i vyn ngolwc and it is clear that I have lost my sight* Hg. I. 83; **vegys bilein profadwy** *like a proved villain* Hg. II. 129.

The Verbal Noun or Infinitive.

FORMATION.

118. The following are the chief types of formation of the verbal noun:—

(a) The prehistoric suffix has disappeared, so that the verbal noun is now identical in form with the stem of the verb. Examples:

ammeu <i>doubt</i> : amheu-af	I	galw <i>call</i> : galw-af
<i>doubt</i>		gellwng <i>let go</i> : gellyng-af
cyvarch <i>ask</i> : cyvarch-af		gwarandaw <i>listen</i> : gwaran-
dianc <i>escape</i> : diangh-af		daw-af
diodef <i>suffer</i> : diodev-af		llad <i>slay</i> : llad-af

Further in some denominatives, e.g. **bwytta** *eating*: **bwytta-af**, **cardotta** *begging*, **lledratta** *stealing*, **pyscotta** *fishing*.

119. (b) The verbal noun still shows a suffix.

(a) **-i**, e.g.—

bod-i <i>drown</i> : bod-af	mol-i (O.W. <i>molim</i>) <i>praise</i> :
cyvod-i <i>rise</i> : cyvod-af	mol-af
erch-i (O.W. <i>erchim</i>) <i>ask</i> : arch-af	per-i <i>cause</i> : par-af
meneg-i <i>shew</i> : manag-af	tew-i <i>be silent</i> : taw-af

(β) **-u**, e.g.—

can-u <i>sing</i> : can-af	gwassanaeth-u <i>minister</i> :
car-u <i>love</i> : car-af	gwassanaeth-af
dysg-u <i>teach</i> : dysg-af	mynn-u <i>desire</i> : mynn-af
gall-u <i>be able</i> : gall-af	pryn-u <i>buy</i> : pryn-af

This is the common form of the verbal noun from denominatives in **-ha-**, e.g. **cennatta-u** *send message*: **cennatta-af**, **dynessa-u** *approach*: **dynessa-af**, **rydha-u** *free*: **rydha-af**.

(γ) **-aw**, e.g.—

gwisg-aw <i>clothe</i> : gwisg-af	bedydy-aw <i>baptize</i> : bedydy-af
lliw-aw <i>colour</i> : lliw-af	medyly-aw <i>think</i> : medyly-af

(δ) **-at, -et, -ut**, e.g.—

adeil-at *build*: **adeil-af**

cerd-et *go*: **cerd-af**

gwel-et *see*: **gwel-af**

dywed-ut (also **dywedwyt**)

say: **dywed-af**

gorderch-at *make love*: **gor-derch-af**

yv-et *drink*: **yv-af**

ymchoel-ut *turn*; **ymchoel-af**

(ε) Various suffixes found only in a few verbs:—

cymryt *take*: **cymmer-af**

dyffryt *protect*: **differ-af**

edvryd *restore*: **adver-af**

goglyt *shun*: **gogel-af**

dilit *follow*: **dilyn-af**

ymlit *pursue*: **ymlyn-af**

godiwes *overtake*: **godiwed-af**

arhos *await*: **arho-af**

adolwyn *entreat*: **adolyg-af**

amwyn *protect*: **amyg-af**

dwyn *lead*: **dyg-af**

ehed-ec *fly*: **ehed-af**

ered-ic *plough*: **ard-af**

red-ec *run*: **red-af**

caffael, cael *get*: **caff-af**

gadael (by **gadu**) *allow*:

gad-af

gallel (by **gallu**) *be able*: **gall-af**

sev-yll *stand*: **sav-af**

chwerthin *laugh*: **chward-af**

darllein *read*: **darlle-af**

igian *sob*: **igi-af**

llevain *cry*: **llev-af**

USAGE.

120. The infinitive, being merely a verbal noun, has all the constructions of a noun; it has, however, become so far attached to the verbal system that it forms a perfect by prefixing the particle **ry** (§ 96c). Examples:—

(a) *nyt oed vynych yt gaffel bud* *it was not a common thing for you to get profit*; *mynneu a ryuedeis gallu* *ohonaw ef mynet yn dirybud y mi* *I wondered that he could go without informing me*; *gwedyd llad y gwyr hynny* *after those men had been slain*; *cyn awch mynet* *ymdeith ateb a geffwch* *before you depart* (lit. *before your*

going) you shall get an answer; heb y uenegi imi without showing it to me; y eu gochel to avoid them.

(b) gwedy clybot yn Rufein **ry oresgyn** o Garawn ynys Brydein *after it had been heard in Rome that Carawn had conquered the island of Britain.* Sef a wnaethant llidiaw yn vwy no meint am **ry wneuthur** ac wynt kyfryw dwyll a hwnnw *they were exceeding wroth that such treachery had been done to them* RB. II. 75.

121. The verbal noun has no distinction of voice. If it depends upon **gallu** *to be able* or **dylyu** *to owe*, then, if the sense be passive, **gallu** and **dylyu** are put in the passive, e.g. gwreic **y gellir dywedut** idi y bot yn deckaf or gwraged *a woman of whom it can be said that she is the fairest of women*; ni a atwaenwn y neb a **dylyer y kymryt** y gantaw *we know those that ought to be taken from him* RB. 16, 20.

122. The agent with the verbal noun is commonly expressed by the preposition **o** following the noun (cf. the corresponding Irish construction with *do*), e.g. gwedy **gorwed ohonaw ef** ar traws yr auon *after he had lain across the river*; gwedy **ry gyscu ohonaw** *after he had slept*; rac dy **lad ohonaw** *lest thou shouldst be slain by him*. It may also be expressed by the preposition **y**, e.g. **tygu llyein mawr udunt wynteu** y vot yn wir *they swore great oaths that it was true* Hg. II. 131; **kymryt** ofyn mawr y Vradmwnd *Bradmwnd became sore afraid* Hg. II. 133; gwedy **udunt oresgyn** yr holl wlat *after they had conquered the whole country* RB. II. 116; gwedy **y Amic gaffel** kennyat *after Amic had got permission* Rev. Celt. IV. 218; nyt oed neb o vilwyr y vort gronn heb **idaw eu bwrw** oll yr llawr *there was no one of the warriors of the Round Table that he had not thrown down* Hg. I. 9; yr **y pawb disgynnu** *though everyone else dismounted* RB. 105, 7. Or the verbal noun may be preceded by a possessive adjective, e.g. gwedy **eu dyuot yr weirglawd** *after they came to the meadow* Hg. I. 9.

123. The verbal noun is often used in periphrasis with **gwneuthur** *to do*, e.g. **dysgynnu** ar y pren a **wnant** *they will alight upon the tree*; ac yna **ymlad a wnaem** ninneu am y maen *and then we would fight for the stone*; a **cherdet** recdi yr coet a

oruc ý uorwyn and the maiden went on to the wood; **rodi** penn y karw a **wnaethpwyt** y Enid the head of the stag was given to Enid.

124. The verbal noun may carry on the construction of a finite verb, e.g. drýchael ý wýneb a oruc ynteu ac **ýdrych** arnei ýn llidiawc he raised his face and looked on her angrily WB. 419; kennatau ý mab a orucpwyt, ae **dýuot** ýnteu ýr llýs and the boy was sent for and came to the court WB. 454; ac a dywawt na wnaethpwyt oe bleit ef drwc yn y byt y Briaf, namyn **rodi** Esonia idaw ef o achaws y dewret and he said that on his part no evil in the world had been done to Priam, but that Hesione had been given to him for his valour RB. II. 5; pan **bebillo** Lloegir in tir Ethlin a **guneuthur** Dýganhuý dinas degin when the English shall encamp in the land of Ethlin, and make Deganwy a strong fort BB. 28*; pan gyfodes y bobyl a **chael** Lawnslot megys ynuarw when the people rose and found Launcelot like one dead Hg. I. 155.

125. Without a preceding finite verb the verbal noun may serve as an historical infinitive, e.g. tra yttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, **rwygaw** o Gei y uagwyr a **chymryt** y carcharawr ar y geuyn while Arthur's warriors were fighting with the city, *Kei broke through the wall and took the prisoner on his back* RB. 131, 28; **deuy** yrof a Duw, heb ynteu. ae **dwyn** gyt ac ef yr uort oe hanuod, ac **erchi** idi vwyta yn uynych "between God and me thou shalt come," said he. And he took her to the table against her will and asked her repeatedly to eat RB. 289; a gwedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir **dýuot** seit Iwerdon attaw y erchi nawd idaw and after Arthur landed, the saints of Ireland came to him to ask his protection RB. 136; **dýuot** (= **dýuot a oruc** RB. 126) ý porthawr ac **agori** ý porth the porter came and opened the gate WB. 487.

126. The verbal noun has special uses with certain prepositions.

(a) With **yn** the verbal noun has the force of a present participle (cf. the Irish construction with *oc*), e.g. val y gwelas y gwr...Peredur **yn dýuot** as the man saw Peredur coming; lleidyr...a geueis **yn lletratta** arnaf a thief whom I caught stealing from me. It is often used with the substantive verb to express continuing action; e.g. yr hynny hyt hediw **yd wyf i yn darparu gwled** ytti from that time

till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee RB. 182; canys ar y medwl hwnnw **yd wyt** titheu **yn trigyaw** *since it is on this purpose that thou art fixed* RB. 253; ual **yd oed** y sarff **yn dyuot** or garrec, y tharaw a oruc Owein a chledyf *as the snake was coming from the rock, Owein struck it with a sword.* When the verbal noun precedes the verb **yn** may be added, but it is more commonly omitted, e.g. **yn eisted yd oedynt** ar garrec Hardlech *they were seated on the rock of Harlech* RB. 26, **ynadolwc y mae** y ti arglwyd (= **adolwyn** itti arglwyd **y mae** Erbin WB. p. 205) ellwng Gereint y uab attaw *he entreats thee, Lord, to let go his son Gereint to him* RB. 264; **dywedut** yrydunt ehun **y maent** *they are saying among themselves* WB. p. 211; **medylyaw yd wyf** *I am considering* RB. 75, 26 (but **yd wyf yn medylyaw** RB. 76, 22).

(b) With **gwedy** after the verbal noun has the force of a perfect participle (cf. the use of Irish *iar n-*), e.g. **ý mae gwedy mynet** gyd a Gwenhwývar **ý hystavell** *he has gone with Gwenhwývar to her chamber* WB. 408, a phan yttoedynt **gwedy gware** talym, sef y klywynt kynnwryf mawr *when they had played a while, they heard a great din* RB. 157; a ffan welas **ý gwry...** Gereint **gwedy caffel** dýrnawd *and when the man saw that Gereint had received a blow* WB. 398; Enýt a oed heb gýscu **ý mywn ýstauell wýdrin**, ar heul **ýn týwýnnu** ar **ý gwely**, ar dillad **gwedy rý lithraw** **ý ar** **ý dwýuron** ef *Enid was sleepless in a chamber of glass, with the sun shining on the bed, while the clothes had slipped from his breast* WB. 416.

(c) With **can** with and **tan** under the verbal noun is used in sentences like the following: Pascen...a gyffroes y bobyl honno... **gan adaw** udunt anheruynedic amylder o eur ac aryant *Pascen stirred up that people, promising them an unlimited abundance of gold and silver* RB. II. 169; tywyssawc Kernywae hymlynawd **gan eu llad** *the prince of Cornwall followed them slaying them* RB. II. 191; dyuot dracheuynt at Wenhwyuar **dan gwynaw** **y dolur** *she came back to Gwenhwýuar bewailing her anguish* RB. 249; (wynt) a gyrchassant parth a Ruuein **dan anreithaw** a wrthwynepei udunt *they set out towards Rome, plundering all who resisted them* RB. II. 75.

PARADIGM OF THE REGULAR VERB.

127. Types: **caru** *to love*, and the denominative **rydhaü** *to set free*. Forms in brackets are forms that have not been noted from a verb of the type.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.	sing.	plur.
1.	car-af	car-wn	rydha-af	rydha-wn
2.	cer-i, cer-y	cer-wch	rydhe-y	rydhe-wch
3.	car	car-ant	rydha	rydha-ant
pass.	cer-ir		rydhe-ir	

IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	car-wn	car-em	rydha-wn	(rydha-em)
2.	car-ut	car-ewch	rydha-ut	ryda-ewch
3.	car-ei	cer-ynt	rydha-ei	rydhe-ynt
pass.	cer-it		rydhe-it	

PREFERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	cereis	carass-am	rydheeis	rydhaass-am
2.	cereis-t	carass-awch	rydheeis-t	rydhaas-awch
3.	caras	carass-ant	rydha-awd	rydhaass-ant
pass.	carat		rydha-wyt	

PLUPERFECT.

1.	carass-wn	(carass-em)	(rydhaass-wn)	(rydhaass-em)
2.	carass-ut	(carass-ewch)	(rydhaass-ut)	(rydhaass-ewch)
3.	carass-ei	(carass-ynt)	rydhaass-ei	rydhaess-ynt
pass.	carass-it		(rydhaass-it)	

IMPERATIVE.

1.	car-wn		(rydha-wn)
2.	car	cer-wch	rydha
3.	car-et	car-ent	rydha-et
pass.	car(h)-er		(rydha-ent)

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.	car(h)-wyf	car(h)-om	rydha-wyf	rydha-om
	car(h)-oef			
2.	cer(h)-ych	car(h)-och	rydhe-ych	(rydha-och)
3.	car(h)-wy	car(h)-wynt		
	car(h)-oe	car(h)-oent		
	car(h)-o	car(h)-ont	rydha-o	rydha-wynt
				rydha-ont
pass.	car(h)-er		rydha-er	

PAST.

1.	car(h)-wn	car(h)-em	rydha-wn	(rydha-em)
2.	car(h)-ut	car(h)-ewch	rydha-ut	rydha-ewch
3.	car(h)-ei	cer(h)-ynt	rydha-ei	rydhe-ynt
pass.	cer(h)-it		rydhe-it	

REMARKS ON THE VERBAL PARADIGM.

Present and Future Indicative.

128. (a) sg. 3. Many verbs show vowel infection (§ 5), e.g. eirch : arch-af *I ask*, ceidw : cadw-af *I preserve*, ceiff : caff-af *I get*, geilw : galw-af *I call*, lleinw : llanw-af *I fill*, peir : par-af *I cause*, peirch : parch-af *I honour*, seif : sav-af *I stand*, teifl : tafl-af *I cast*, etteil : attal-af *I stop*, gweheird : gwa-hard-af *I forbid*, lleveir : llavar-af *I speak*, edeu, edy : adaw-af *I leave*, edeu : adaw-af *I promise*, gwerendeu, gwerendy : gwarandaw-af *I listen*, teu : taw-af *I am silent*, tereu, tery : traw-af *I strike*, gwyl : gwel-af *I see*, gweryt : gwared-af *I help*, cyll : coll-af *I destroy*, dyt : dod-af *I put*, llysg : llosg-af *I burn*, hyllt : hollt-af *I split*, ryd : rod-af *I give*, tyrr : torr-af *I break*, egyr : agor-af *I open*, envyn : anvon-af *I send*, ervyll : arvoll-af *I receive*, erhys : arhos-af *I await*, deffry : deffro-af *I arouse*, ffy : ffo-af *I flee*, try : tro-af *I turn*. It should be noted that, except in the 3 sg. of the present,

no vowel but **a** is subject to infection in the verb, e.g. 2. pl. **gwel-wch, rod-wch, ffo-wch** (cf. § 7 note 1).

NOTE.—Irregular are: **menyc**: **manag-af** *I shew*; **dyweit**: **dywed-af** *I say*.

(b) From the denominatives in **-hau**, **-a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **cerda**: **cerdet** *to go*, **teruyna**: **tervynu** *to end*. Further, it is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **gnottaa**: **gnotta-af** *I am wont*. Form **-áa** comes by contraction in Mod.W. **-á**.

129. In the older language some other forms appear.

sg. 1. By **-af**, **-if** is sometimes found, e.g. **gwneif** *I will make* FB. 62, **cenif** *I will sing* MA. 140^a, **gweinifi** *I will serve* 142^a, **cerif i** *I will love* 147^b.

sg. 2. In this person there is also an ending **-yd** (i.e. **yd**, cf. Bret. **-ez**, Corn. **-yth**), e.g. **ceryd** *thou lovest*, **gwesceryd** *thou scatterest*, **dywedyd** *thou sayest*, **nodyd** *thou protestest*, **clywyd** *thou hearest*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1873, pp. 143 sq.

sg. 3. In O. Irish there are two forms of the ending, a longer which is found only in simple verbs, and a shorter which is used in compound verbs, and also in simple verbs when a negative or certain other particles precede, e.g. **berid** (from ***bhereti**) *he carries*, but **nī beir** (from ***bheret**) *he does not carry*, **do-beir** *he gives*. In Early Welsh there are traces of a similar distinction of ending, e.g. **pereid y ryeu**. **ny phara ae goreu the trenches remain**, *he who made them remains not* FB. 289; and in the proverb: **trengid golud, ni threing molud** *wealth perishes, fame perishes not*. Further examples of the ending are: **prinit buys**, **agit**, **egit** *goes* (= Mid.W. **eyt** FB. 304) in the O.W. glosses; **llicrid** : **llygru** *destroy*, **reuhid** : **rewi** *freeze*, **ottid** : **odi** *snow*, **gosgupid** *sweeps*, **tohid** : **toi** *cover* BB. 45^a, **meccid** : **magu** *nourish* BB. 45^b, **briuhid** : **briwaw** *break* BB. 46^a, cf. further Arch. Cambr. 1872, pp. 303 sq., 1873, pp. 145 sq. It will be seen that the **h** which appears in the old future (§ 130), and in the subjunctive has also made its way into these presents. In usage Mid.W. agrees with O.Ir. in that the longer ending is not found when the verb is preceded by a negative, it differs from O.Ir. in that the longer ending has spread to compound verbs. In early poetry there seem to be instances of a corresponding present in **-awt** (which would originally belong to **á**-stems, cf. O.Bret. **-ot** in **fleriot** gl. **ridolet**, O.Ir. **caraid**, from ***carāti**, *loves*, Lat. **amat**); **barywhaud** *grows a beard*, **gvyrhaud** *bends* BB. 45^a, **llewychawt** *shines* FB. 117, **gwisgawt** *clothes* FB. 307.

pl. 3. In the O.W. glosses by the ending **-ant** in **itercludant** gl. **subigant** there appears also **-int** in **limnint** gl. **tondent**, **nertheint** gl. **armant**, **scannhegint** gl. **levant**. This ending seems to survive in Mid.W. poetry, e.g. **diuryssint** *hasten* BB. 45^a, 54^b (cf. pan **vryssyant** FB. 257), **dywedynt** *will say* FB. 223, **torrynt** *will break* FB. 229. It seems probable that this served as a primary ending, but the matter demands further investigation.

Passive.—In the passive there is found in poetry and occasionally in proverbs a variety of forms in **-tor**, e.g. **megittor** *will be nourished* BB. 31^b, **kenhittor** *will be sung* BB. 26^b, **kwynitor** *is lamented* FB. 280; **kymysgetor** *is mixed* FB. 181, **kyrbwylletor** *will be mentioned* FB. 200;

traethattor *will be discoursed* FB. 137, *canhator* *is sung* FB. 209 : *brithottor* *is variegated* BB. 17^a. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1872 pp. 305 sq., Dottin, *Désinences verbales en R*, 177 sq. These forms, which are clearly based on the longer form of the 3 sg. act., are especially common in the poetry of the twelfth century. Their syntactical function is present or future.

130. In Early Welsh there are also some specially future forms :

sg. 3 (a) -hawt (i.e. -hawd), e.g. *parahaud* *will continue* BB. 50^b, *briuhaud* *will break* BB. 29^b, *methawd* *will fail* WB. 457, *lletawt* *will spread* FB. 236, *llwyprawd* (: *llwybraw*) *will travel* MA 232^b. Cf. CZ. III. 402.

(b) After a negative, -haw : *ny chaffaw* *will not get* BB. 4^b, *nys gwnaw* *will not make* FB. 126 ; but also a *wnaw* *who will make* FB. 150.

Pl. 3. -hawnt, e.g. O.W. *cuinhaunt* gl. *deflebunt*, *gwnahawnt* *will make* FB. 124, *pebillyawnt* *will encamp* FB. 212.

Pass. -hawr, e.g. *agorawr* *will be opened* WB. 456, *ffohawr* *there will be flight* FB. 126, *talhaur* *will be paid* BB. 16^a, *nŷn lladawr* *we shall not be killed* WB. 475, *edmŷccausr* *will be honoured* BB. 29^b. Cf. Dottin, *op. cit.*, 169 sq., CZ. III. 403.

NOTE.—There also occur forms of the type of -ettor, -attor above, e.g. *torredawd* *will break* FB. 236, *lletatawt* *will spread* FB. 129, *dýgettaur* *will be led* BB. 13^a, *lloscetawr* *will be burned* FB. 119, *galwetawr* *will be called* FB. 165.

Imperfect Indicative and Conditional.

131. sg. 3. (a) In poetry there is also an ending -i, infecting a preceding a, e.g. *ceri* *loved*, *nodi* *protected*, *torri* *broke*, *clywi* *heard*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1874, p. 117, Cymrod. IX. 54, Rev. Celt. VI. 16.

(b) There is also an ending -at (i.e. -ad); see the irregular verbs **gwybot** (§ 143), **adnabot** (§ 144), **pieu** (§ 160), and the verb **bot** (§ 152). So in the plup. *ry dywedyssyat* *had said* MA. 485^b.

pl. 3. In this person there is an ending -eint :—**achubeint** WB. 466 = pass. **achubit** RB. 110, 28, **caneint** LA. 95 = **cenynt** Hg. II. 447, **deueint**, **syrrhyeint** LA. 97, **traweint** Hg. II. 184, **llauryeint** ib. 213 ; cf. the subjunctive *ket yvein* *though they drank* FB. 66, *wyntwy yn llad gyt as ledeint* *they slaying though they slew them* FB. 276 = a *chin ri llethid ve latysseint and before they were slain they had slain* FB. 38, cf. Cymrod. IX. 67. This -eint is an analogical formation to sg. 3 -ei.

NOTE.—More peculiar is *ny lesseint* BB. 32^a which seems to mean *they were not slain* (cf. *yt lesseint* FB. 285, *llesseint* MA. 194^a), apparently based on *llas* *was slain* ; cf. further *meithyeint* *was reared?* *lledeint* *were slain?* *colledeint* *were destroyed?* FB. 264, MA. 94^b.

Preterite and Perfect Indicative Active.

132. sg. 3. In this person there is a variety of endings.

(a) -as, e.g. **bradas** *betrayed*, **caffas** *got*, **gwelas** *saw*.

(b) -es, e.g. **agores** *opened*, **dodes** *put*, **gweles** *saw*.

(c) -is, e.g. **erchis** *asked*, **edewis** *left*, **gelwis** *called*.

(d) -wys, becoming -ws, e.g. **bendigwys** and **bendigws** *blessed*, **cyscwys** and **cyscws** *slept*. In the southern dialect -ws became the characteristic ending in this person.

(e) -awd (i.e. awd), e.g. **parawd** *caused*, **cerdawd** *journeyed*, **parhaawd** *continued*. This is an encroaching ending, whence comes the Mod. literary Welsh ending -od.

NOTE.—In early poetry there is an absolute ending -sit (corresponding to the present ending -it (§ 129), e.g. **kewssit** *got*, **prynessid** *bought*, **delyessid** (: **dala**) *held*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1873, pp. 151 sq. It corresponds to the O. Bret. ending in **tinsit** gl. **sparsit**, **toreusit** gl. **attruit**.

1 pl., 3 pl. In these persons by -sam, -sant, there appear also -som, -sont.

Plur.—In the plural there are three types of formation, (a) -sam, etc., (b) -assam, etc., (c) -yssam, etc., e.g.—

(a) **cawsam**, **cawsawch**, **cawsant** : **caffael** *get*, **kymersam**, **kymersant** : **cymryt** *take*, **gwelsam**, **gwelsant** : **gwelet** *see*.

(b) **dywedassam** : **dywedut** *say*, **lladassant** : **llad** *slay*, **nessaassant** : **nessaü** *approach*.

(c) **dodyssam**, **dodyssant** : **dodi** *place*, **kwplayssam** : **kwplai** *complete*, **nessayassant** : **nessaü** *approach*.

133. In Mid.W., as in Mid.Ir., the s-preterite has become the prevalent formation, in which the other types of the preterite tend to merge. But particularly in poetry, and especially in the 3 sg., there are examples of two other types of the preterite.

(a) The t-preterite (corresponding to the Irish t-preterite, e.g. **asbert** *he said* : **asbeir** *says*).

canu *sing* : sg. 1 **ceint** and **ceintum**, sg. 2 **ceuntost**, sg. 3 **cant**.

gwan *pierce* : sg. 1 **gweint**, sg. 3 **gwant**.

cymryt *take* : sg. 3 **kymerth**, **kymyrth**.

diffryt *protect* : sg. 3 **differth**, **diffyrth**.

mynet *go*: **aeth** (= Ir. *acht*) *went* (§ 140); in composition **doeth** (§ 141), and sg. 1 **ymdeith** *went about*, sg. 3 **ymdaeth**.

gwneuthor *make*: **gwnaeth** (§ 142).

magu *nourish*: sg. 3 **maeth**, pl. 3 **maethant**.

dyrreith *returned* ($\sqrt{\text{reg-}}$).

amwyn *protect*: sg. 3 **amwyth**.

dydwyn *bring*: sg. 3 **dydwyth**.

(b) Forms with reduplication, or unreduplicated forms of the type of O.Ir. **rāith ran**: **rethid runs**.

clybot *hear*: sg. 1 **kigleu** (= Ir. *cūala* from **cuklova*) and **kiglef**, sg. 3 **kigleu**.

adnabot *recognize*: **atwaen** (§ 144).

dywedut *say*: sg. 3 **dywawt**, also **dywot**, **dywat** (cf. Ir. *adcuaid* *has related* from **ad-co-faith*).

godiwes *overtake*: sg. 3 **godiwawd**.

gwaret *help*: sg. 3 **gwarawt** (= Ir. *fo-rāith helped*).

The same form of inflexion is exhibited by:—

amwyn *defend*: sg. 3 **amuc**.

dwyn *lead*: sg. 1 **dugum**, sg. 2 **dugost**, sg. 3 **duc**, pl. 1 **dugam**, pl. 3 **dugant**.

gwneuthor *make*: **goruc** (§ 142).

Here seems to belong also **amkawd** *said*, pl. 3 **amkeudant**, frequent in the WB. text of *Kulhwch* and *Olwen*.

Preterite and Perfect Indicative Passive.

134. In origin the Welsh like the Irish preterite passive developed out of a past participle passive in **-to-**, identical in formation with Latin participles like *captus*, *amatus*, etc.

(a) In **llas** (= Ir. *-slass*): **llad** *slay* and **gwys** (= Ir. *-fess*): **gwybot** *know*, the **t** of the suffix together with the dental of the root has become **ss**, **s** (§ 11a; cf. Lat. *missus* : *mitto*, etc.).

(b) **-at**, e.g. **gwelat**: **gwelet** *see*, **caffat**: **caffael** *get*.

(c) **-et**, e.g. **dodet**: **dodi** *place*, **llosged**: **llosgi** *burn*.

(d) **-it**, e.g. **edewit**: **adaw** *promise*, **erchit**: **erchi** *ask*, **gelwit**: **galw** *call*.

(e) -wyt, liable to become -wt, e.g. **cymerwyt**: **cymryt** *take, hewyt*; **heü sow**, **lladwyt**: **llad** *slay, kennatawyd*: **kennataüi** *send*.

(f) Forms in -pwyt, e.g. **dywespwyd** and **dywetpwyt**: **dywedut** *say, clywspwyd*, **clywyspwyt**: **clybot** *hear, dechreuspwyd*: **dechreu** *begin, roespwyd*: **roi** *give, kanpwyt*: **canu** *sing, gwanpwyt*: **gwanu** *pierce, ducpwyt*: **dwyn** *lead, maethpwyt*: **magu** *nourish, gwassanaethpwyt*: **gwassan-aethu** *serve, talpwyt*: **talu** *pay*. Cf. Cymrod. IX. 75 sq.

Pluperfect Indicative.

135. Corresponding to the three types in the plural of the preterite active, there are in the pluperfect three types (a) -swn, (b) -asswn, (c) -ysswn, e.g. :—

(a) **cawssei** : **caffael** *get, gwelsei*, **gwelsynt**, pass. **gwelsit** : **gwelet** *see, edewssit* : **adaw** *leave*.

(b) **mynasswn** : **mynessynt**, pass. **mynassit** : **mynnu** *desire, cysgassei* : **cysgu** *sleep, lladassant*, pass. **lladessit** : **llad** *slay, gnottaessynt* : **gnottaiü** *be accustomed*.

(c) **archyssei**, pass. **erchyssit**, **archyssit** : **erchi** *ask, managyssei* : **menegi** *shew, lladyssit* : **llad** *slay, mynnessynt* : **mynnu** *demand, gnottayssei* : **gnottaiü** *be accustomed*.

136. (a) In the active there is a periphrastic pluperfect with -oed *was in* **athoed** (§ 140), **doethoed** (§ 141), **gwnaethoed** (§ 142). Forms in -oed occur also from **caffael** *get*, e.g., sg. 1 **cawssoed-dwn**, sg. 2 **cawssoedut**, sg. 3 **cawssoed**, **cassoed**, **cawssoed-yat**, pl. 3 **cassoedynt**, pass. **cassoedit**; further **mynnassoed** : **mynnu**; **planasoed**; **rodassoed**, **roessoed**; **rassoed**, pass. **rossoedit** : **rodi**. Cf. Cymrod. IX. 76 sq.

(b) In the passive there are some periphrastic forms with -oed :— sg. 3 **archadoed** *had been asked* : **erchi** *ask, dysgadoed* : **dysgu** *teach, ganadoed*, **ganydoed** : **geni** *be born, managadoed* : **menegi** *shew*; further **cathoed** : **caffael** *get*. Cf. Cymrod. IX. 77.

Imperative.

137. sg. 2. From denominatives in **-haü a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **prydera** : **pryderu** *be anxious*, **paratoa** : **paratoi** *prepare*. Further **a** is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **cwplaä** : **cwplaü** *complete*, **naccaä** : **naccaü** *refuse*. From **-ää** comes Mod.W. **-ä**.

sg. 3. There appears sometimes an ending **-it**, e.g. **bernit** (v.l. **barned**) : **barnu** *judge* MA. 182^b, **elhid** : **mynet** *go* WB. 31^a, **gobwyllit** : **gobwyllaw** *take heed* FB. 199, **gwrthledit** : **gwrthlad** *repulse* LA. 26, **gwrthottit** : **gwrthot** *repel* FB. 125, **rwydheyt** : **rwydhaü** *make easy* RB. 228, **madeuit** : **maddeu** *forgive* Hg. II. 185, **rothit** : **rodi** *give* BB. 47^a. It will be observed that these forms shew the subjunctive stem.

Present Subjunctive.

138. In the 3 sg. and 3 pl. the **o** forms become the regular forms in Mid.W. Sometimes **o** spreads to the 1 sg., e.g. **gwysgof** WB. 97. In the pass. an **wy** form appears in **rothwyr** FB. 109.

NOTE.—For **duch** *may he lead*, **gwares** *may he help*, see § 110, note 2.

Past Subjunctive.

139. In the passive by **-it** there is found sometimes **-et** : **cladhet** WB. 469 = **cledit** RB. 112 : **cladu** *bury*, **gofynnet** WB. p. 220 = **gouynnit** RB. 286 : **govynnu** *ask*, **llafassed** : **llavassu** *dare* BB. 27^a.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

140. **mynet** *go*.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1. sing.	2. plur.
1. af	awn
2. ey	ewch
3. a	ant
pass. eir	

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 absolute O.W. **agit**, **egit**, Mid.W. **eyt**.

IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

	sing.		plur.
1.	awn		aem
2.	aut		
3.	aey		eynt
pass.	eit		

PREFERITE AND PERFECT.

(a)	1. euthum	aetham
	2. aethost	aethawch
	3. aeth	aethant, aethont
	pass. aethpwyt	

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 absolute eithyd FB. 179, 188.

(b)	1. athwyf, adwyf, ethwyf, ethym	
	edwyf	
	2. athwyt, adwyt	
	3. ethyw, edyw	ethynt, edynt

NOTE 3.—Forms (b) have a perfect sense, cf. § 141, note 4.

PLUPERFECT.

1.	athoedwn	
2.		
3.	athoed, adoed	athoedynt

IMPERATIVE.

1.		awn
2.	dos	ewch
3.	aet	aent

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also elhid (§ 137).

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.	el(h)wyf	el(h)om
2.	el(h)ych	el(h)och
3.	el	el(h)wynt, el(h)ont
pass.	el(h)er	

NOTE 5.—Also, in future sense, sg. 3 **aho** RB. 140, 16, pl. 3 **ahont** FB. 128.

	PAST.	
	sing.	plur.
1. el(h)wn		
2. el(h)ut		
3. el(h)ei		el(h)ynt
pass. (el(h)it)		

141. dyvot *come.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1. deuaf	deuwn, down
2. deuy, doy	deuwch
3. daw	deuant, doant

NOTE 1.—sg. 2 doit (i.e. doyd) BB. 51^{b1}.

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also another set of forms in a future sense:

1.	dybydaf	
	dybyd, dyvyd, dybydawt	dybydant
3.	deubyd	
	dypi, dybi, dyvi	
	deupi, deubi	

NOTE 3.—Preceded by dy-: sg. 3 dydaw, pl. 3 dydeuant, pass. dydeuhawr.

IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	down	
2.	dout, deuyt	
3.	deuei, deuhei, doey,	doynt
	doi	
pass.	deuit	

PTETERITE AND PERFECT.

(a)	1.	deuthum, doethum	doetham
	2.	deuthost, doethost,	doethawch, doethoch
		daethost	
	3.	doeth, deuth, daeth	deuthant, doethant,
			dothant, doethont
pass.		deuthpwyt, doethpwyt	

	sing.	plur.
(b) 1.		
2. dyvuost		
3. dybu, dyvu, deubu		dybuant, dyvuant
(c) 1. dothwyf, dodwyf		dodym, deuthym
2. dothwyt, dodwyt		dodywch, doethywch
3. doethyw, dothyw,		dodynt, dethynt
dodyw, dedyw		

NOTE 4.—Forms (b) are chiefly poetical, but **dyvuost**, **dyvu**, **dyvuant** occur in the prose of WB. Forms (c) are perfect in sense; in later Mid. W. they are replaced by forms (a), e.g. **deuth** RB. 126, 9 = **dodyw** WB. 486, **deuthum** RB. 105, 21 = **dothwýf** WB. 459, **doeth** RB. 115, 25, **deuth** RB. 126, 9, = **dodyw** WB. 473, 486.

PLUPERFECT.

1. dathoedywn		
2.		
3. doethoed, daethoed,	doethoedynt, dothoedynt	
dathoed, dothoed		

IMPERATIVE.

1.	down
2. dyret, dabre	dowch
3. deuet, doet	deuent, doent

NOTE 5.—There is also a 3 sg. **deuit** Hg. II. 51, and **delit** Hg. I. 4, 307.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1. del(h)wyf	del(h)om
2. del(h)ych	del(h)och
3. del	del(h)wynt, del(h)ont
pass. del(h)er	

NOTE 6.—There are also forms sg. 1 **dybwýf**, sg. 3 **dyppo**, **dyffo**, **dyvo**, **deupo**, **dideuho**, pl. 3 **dyffont**, pass. **dyffer**.

PAST.

1. del(h)wn	
2. del(h)ut	del(h)ewch
3. del(h)ei	del(h)ynt

NOTE 7.—There is also 3 sg. **dybei** and **dyffei**.

142. *gwneuthor to make.*

PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.
1.	gwnaf	gwnawn
2.	gwney	gwnewch
3.	gwna	gwnant
pass.	gwneir	

NOTE 1.—Fut. sg. 3 **gunahaud** BB. 27^b, **gwnawt** FB. 224, **gwnaw** FB. 126, 150, pl. 3 **gwnahawnt** FB. 124.

IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	gwnawn	gwnaem
2.	gwnaut	gwnaewch
3.	gwnaei	gwnaent
pass.	gwneit	

PREFERITE AND PERFECT.

(a)	1. gorugum	gorugam
	2. gorugost	
	3. goruc	gorugant
	pass. gorucpwyt	
(b)	1. gwneuthorum	gwnaetham, gwnaethom
	2. gwnaethost	gwnaethawch
	3. gwnaeth, gwneuth	gwnaethant, gwnaethont
	pass. gwnaethpwyt	

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also sg. 3 **goreu**, cf. Mid.Bret. **guereu**.

NOTE 3.—The **gwnaeth** forms encroach at the expense of the **goruc** forms, e.g. **gorucpwyt** WB. 452, 477, 487 = **gwnaethpwyt** RB. 100, 118, 127.

PLUPERFECT.

1.	gwnathoedwn	
2.	gwnaethodut	
3.	gwnaethoed, gwnath-oed, gwnadoed	gwnathoedynt
pass.	gwnathoedit	

IMPERATIVE.

sing.	plur.
1.	gwnawn
2. gwna	gnewch
3. gwnaet	gwnaent
pass. gwnel(h)er	

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1. gwnel(h)wyf	
2. gwnel(h)ych	gwnel(h)och
3. gwnel	gwnel(h)wynt, gwnel(h)- ont
pass. gwnel(h)er	

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also gunelwy BB. 24^a, gunaho BB. 35^b, gwnaho FB. 119, 235, pl. 3 gynahont BB. 31^a, gwnahon FB. 155. With fut. ending gwnelawr FB. 213.

PAST.

1. gwnel(h)wn	
2. gwnel(h)ut	
4. gwnel(h)ei	gwnel(h)ynt
pass. gwnel(h)it	

143. *gwybot* *know.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

1. gwnn	gwdam, gwdom
2. gwydost, gwdost	gwydawch, gwdawch, gwdoch
3. gwyr	gwydant, gwdant
pass. gwys	

IMPERFECT.

1. gwydwn, gwydywn	gwydem, gwydyem
2. gwydut, gwydyut	
3. gwydat, gwydyat	gwydynt
pass. gwydit	

ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.
1.	gwybydaf	
2.	gwybydy	gwybydwch
3.	gwybyd	gwybydant
pass.	gwybydir	

NOTE 1.—In poetry there is also 3 sg. **gwybi**.

ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.		gwybydem
2.	gwybydut	gwybydwch
3.	gwybydei	
pass.	gwybydit	

NOTE 2.—This comes to be used for the past subjunctive, e.g. *Bei athwybydem if we had known thee* FB. 122.

PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	gwybuum	
2.	gwybuost	
3.	gwybu	gwybuant
pass.	gwybuwyt	

PLUPERFECT.

3.		gwybuassynt
pass.	gwybuassit	

IMPERATIVE.

1.		gwybydwn
2.	gwybyd	gwybydwch
3.	gwybydet, gwypet	gwybydent
pass.	gwybyder	

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.	gwypwyf	gwypom
2.	gwypych	gwypoch
3.	gwypwy, gwypo	gwypwynt, gwypont
pass.	gwyper	

PAST.

sing.

plur.

1. gwypwn	
2. gwyput	
3. gwypei	gwypynt

144. *adnabot* *recognize.*

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

1. adwaen, adwen, atwen	atwaenwn
2. atwaenost	etweynwch, atweynwch, etwenwch
9. edwyn, atwen	atwaenant

IMPERFECT.

1. atwaenwn	adwaenam
2. atwaenut	
3. atwaenat, atwaeniat	atwaenynt
pass. etweinit	

ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1. adnabydaf, etnebydaf	adnabydwn
2. adnabydy	
3. adnebyd, ednebyd	adnabydant
pass. adnabydir	

ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	adnabydem
2.	
3. adnebydei	

PTETERITE AND PERFECT.

1. adnabuum	adnabuam
2.	
3. adnabu	adnabuant

IMPERATIVE.

sing.

plur.

1.

2. **ednebyd, adnebyd****adnebydwch**

3.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1.

adnapom2. **adnepych**3. **adnapo****adnappoent, adnappont**pass. **adnaper**

PAST.

1.

2.

3. **adnapei**pass. **adnepit**145. **caffael, caffel, cahel, cael** *get.*

INDICATIVE.

Pres. and Fut. :—**caffaf, ceffy, ceiff**, etc.; also **caf, cehy, cey**, etc.

Imperf. and Cond. :—**caffwn**, etc., also **cawn**, etc.

Pret. and Perf. :—**ceveis, ceis, ceveist, cavas, cawssam, cawssawch, cawssant, cawssont**; pass. **caffat, cavat, cahat, cat.**

Pluperf. :—(a) **cawsswn**, etc., (b) **cawssoedwn**, etc. (§ 136^a).

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres. :—**caffwyf**, etc.

Past :—**caffwn**, etc., also **cahwn, cawn**, etc.

NOTE.—For an enumeration of forms see Cymrod. IX. 111 sq.

146. **rodi, roi** *give.*

The peculiarity of this verb is that it has forms with and without **d**, e.g. ind. pres. sg. 2 **rody** and **roy**, imper. sg. 2 **ro**, subj. pres. sg. 3 **rotho, rodo** and **ro**. In the ind. pret. by **rodeis, rodeist, rodes** occur **roesum, roesost, roes**, and in the pass. by **rodet, also roespwyt**. In the plup. by the regular forms occur sg. 2 **roessut**, sg. 3 **roessei, royssei, roessoed, rasoed**, pl. 3 **rassoedynt**.

147. **tawr, dawr.**

This verb is used impersonally, e.g. **ny-m-tawr** *it does not concern me* RB. 284, 28, **pathawr** (= **pa-th-dawr**) *what does it concern thee?* RB. 279, 19, **ny-m-torei** WB. 172 = **ny-m-torei** RB. I. 238, *it would not concern me*, **ni-m-dorbi** BB. 30^b. In the same sense is found the compound **didawr**; verb. noun **didarbot** Hg. I. 320.

148. **moes** *give.*

Only as imperative:—sg. 2 **moes**, pl. 2 **moeswch.**

149. **hwde** *take.* Used only as imperative.150. **med** *says.*

Inflected in the present and imperfect; it is used in quotation, e.g. a wdost di pwy yw? heb hi. gwnn, heb ynteu. Edyrn uab Nud **yw, med** ef “*dost thou know who he is?*” *says she.* “*Yes, said he.*” “*He is Edyrn son of Nudd, he says,*” RB. 259; y gouynnei beth yssyd yman. Broch, **medynt** wynteu *he asked what was there.* “*A badger,*” *said they* RB. 15.

151. **heb** *says.*

This word, of adverbial origin and uninflected, is used like Ir. **ol** to give the very words of the speaker, **heb ef** *says he*, **heb wynt** *they say*, etc.

Before a proper name **heb** is followed by **y, yr**, e.g. **heb y Goewin, heb y Gwenhwyfar, heb yr Arthur.** The same is not infrequently found before a pronoun, e.g. **heb y mi** RB. 32, 7, **heb yr ynteu** RB. 245, 181 = **heb ynteu** WB. 386, p. 217, **heb yr ef** WB. 386 = **heb ef** RB. 245, **heb yr wynt** WB. 185 = **eb wynt** WB. p. 93^a; cf. Mod. W. **ebr.** No satisfactory explanation of this has yet been given.

THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB **bot** *to be.*

Paradigm.

INDICATIVE.

152. PRESENT.

	sing.	plur.
1.	wyf	ym
2.	wyt	ywch
3.	iw, yw mae	ynt maent
	oes	
	ys	
	neut	
	nyt <i>is not</i>	
	nat <i>is not</i> (dependent)	
	os <i>if it is</i>	
	yssit <i>there is</i>	yssydynt
	ossit <i>if there is</i>	
	yssyd, syd, yssy, sy , rel. <i>who, which is, are</i>	
	Impersonal ys, ydys	

PAST.

1.	oedwn	oedem
2.	oedut, oedyt	oedewch
3.	oed, oedat, oedyat	oedynt
	Impersonal oedet	

NOTE 1.—There are also forms preceded by **ytt**, **yd**: **yttwyf**, **ytiw**, **ydiw**, **yttoedwn**, etc.

ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	bydaf	bydwn
2.	bydy	bydwch
3.	byd	bydant

NOTE 2.—Specially future forms: sg. 3 **bythawt**, **bydhawt**, **bydawt**, **biawt**, **bi**; pl. 3 **bydawnt**.

NOTE 3.—In poetry there seems to be a consuetudinal sg. 3 **bit**, cf. FB. 245, 247, where the imperative sense does not suit.

ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

sing.

plur.

1. bydwn	bydem
2. bydut	bydewch
3. bydei	bydynt

impers. **bydit**NOTE 4.—Poetical forms: sg. 3 **buei**, **bwyat**, pl. 3 **buyint** (i.e. **bwynt**).

PREDERITE AND PERFECT.

1. buum, bum	buam
2. buost	buawch
3. bu	buant, buont

impers. **buwyt**

PLUPERFECT.

1. buasswn	
2. buassut	
3. buassei	buassynt, buessynt, buyssynt

IMPERATIVE.

1.	bydwn
2. byd	bydwch
3. bit, boet, poet	bint

NOTE 5.—**bynt** is clearly imperative BCh. 17, cf. **bint** LA. 81. RB. 105 has **bint** where WB. 457 has the future **bythawd**.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1. bwyf, bof	bom, bwym
2. bych	boch
3. bo	bwynt, boent, bont

NOTE 6.—There are, particularly in poetry, analogical subjunctive forms from the indicative stem: sg. 1 **bydwyf**, sg. 2 **bydych**, sg. 3 **bytho**, pl. 3 **bydont**.

PAST.

1. bewn	beym
2. beut	
3. bei	beynt

NOTE 7.—Both in poetry and in prose the past indicative is often used for the subjunctive, e.g. **kyny bydwn** WB. 172= **kyn ny bewn** RB. 238. The impersonal **pan uythit** WB. 104= **pan vydit** RB. 76 is a subjunctive form based on the indicative.

REMARKS ON **bot.**

Present and Imperfect.

153. The precise syntactical functions of the various forms of these tenses still require a detailed investigation, particularly their uses in early poetry. From the material to hand the following points of prose usage may be noted, (A) where the forms have the function of a substantive verb predicating existence, (B) where the forms are merely copular.

154. A. Substantive verb.

(a) In the 3 sg. pres. *he is*, etc., is expressed by **mae**, pl. **maent**, unless the verb is preceded by the negative or by other preverbal particles and conjunctions which are not followed by the particle **yd** (§ 93 g sq.), e.g. *yma y mae brenhin Iwerdon here is the king of Ireland*; *o ellwng Riannon or poen y mae yndaw from releasing Riannon from the punishment in which she is*; *nat gan y vod y mae yn dyuot that it is not with his will that he is coming*; *y mae y enw yn barawt his name is ready*; *y maent yn symudaw enweu they are changing names*. **Mae** is also used in the sense of *where are?* e.g. *mae Ynwl iarll . . . ae wreic ae uerch*. **maent** (= **y maent** RB. 256) *yn y loft racco where are Ynwl and his wife and his daughter?* *They are in the chamber yonder* WB. 400. In the sense of *there is, there are* **yssit**, **yssydynt** are found, e.g. *yssit* *nas keffych there is something that you will not get* RB. 121 sq.; *chwedleu porth y gennyt*. **ysydynt** *gennyf hast thou tidings of the gate?* *I have* RB. 126. If the verb is preceded by a negative, etc., then (a) if the subject is definite **yttiu**, **ydyw**, pl. **ytynt**, **ydynt** are used, (β) if the subject is indefinite **oes** is used, e.g.—

(a) **nyt yttiu** *y clawr y lle kyntaf y kefeist the board is not where thou didst get it first* RB. 241; **nat ydiw** *y uorwyn honno yn y byt that that maiden is not in the world* RB. 113; **nyt ytynt** *namyn pedwar they are only four* CM. 46; **neut ydynt** *yn gynyon boneu vy esgyll the stumps of my wings are like wedges* RB. 130; **a yttiw** *Kei yn llýs Arthur. yttiw is Kei in Arthur's court?* *He is* WB. 143.

(β) **nyt oes** yndi neb nyth adnapo *there is no one in it who will not recognize thee* RB. 3; **a oes** borthawr. **oes** *is there a porter?* *There is* RB. 103. With **o if**, the definite form is **ot ydiw**, e.g. **ot ydiw** yg karchar *if he is in prison* RB. 179, the indefinite **os sit**, e.g. **osit rann y mi** oth uab di *if I have any part in thy son* RB. 109; **osid ay** hammehuo *if there is any one who doubts it* BCh. 53. The relative form is **yssyd**, e.g. **y gwr hir yssyd** yno *the tall man who is there*; **pa ryw chwedleu yssyd** gennyt. **nyt oes** namyn da *what kind of news hast thou?* *Only good news.*

NOTE 1.—In poetry **yssit** is found also with a definite subject, e.g. **yssit imi teir kadeir** *I have three seats* FB. 154; **yssit ym argluyd** *I have a lord* MA. 176^a. It seems to be a disappearing form, cf. **y mae yni** beth a wnelom *we have something to do* Hg. 1. 10, **y mae ym ..a wnelwyf** 69. **Ossit** also seems to be a disappearing form; for **ossit a uynho if there is anyone who desires** WB. 122, RB. 197 has: **or byd** neb kyehofnet.

(b) In the first and second persons the subject is always definite, and here after negatives etc., **yttwyf**, **ydwylf** are usual both in the present and in the imperfect, e.g. **nyt yttwyf** (= **nyt ydwylf i** WB. 437) **yn ansawd** *I am not in a condition* WB. p. 219; **nyt yttoedwn** i yn holi dim ytti *I was not claiming anything from thee* RB. 5. In the third persons of the imperfect there is in the Mabinogion a very general distinction after negatives etc., between (a) **yttoed**, **ydoed** when the subject is definite, (b) **oed** when the subject is indefinite, e.g. (a) **ýdrých yn ý chýlch a oruc a yttoed** ef **ýn deffroi** *she looked about her to see if he was stirring* WB. 424; **pann yttoed** (= **pan ydoed** WB. 99) **y dyd yn dyuot** *when the day was coming* RB. 72; **tra yttoed** ef **yn hynny** *while he was in that* RB. 133; **ýny ýttoýd** ý chwýs ar gwaet yn dwyn lleuuer ý llýgeit udunt *until the sweat and the blood were taking the light of their eyes from them* WB. 398; (b) **nyt oed** dim yno *there was nothing there* RB.; **Gereint a ofynnawd y wr y ty a oed** getymdeithon idaw . . . oes, heb ynteu *Gereint asked the master of the house if he had friends.* “*I have,*” said he.

NOTE 2.—But there are a good many instances of (b) for (a): **nat oes** (= **nat ydiw** RB. 113) **hi yn y byt that she is not in the world** WB. 470; **kwt ynt plant y gwr where are the children of the man?** WB. 453; **pan oed** **y dyd yn goleuhau** *when the day was becoming light* RB. 72; **ýny oed yn y eidaw ef Ardudwy till Ardudwy was in his possession** RB. 77; **ýny oed y**

gwaet yn lliaw y llenn till the blood was colouring the mantle WB. 391 = RB. 249; **yny oed** (=hyny yttoed WB. p. 218) eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuuer till their eyes were losing their light WB. 435 = RB. 283.

NOTE 3.—In a number of cases the **ytt-**, **yd-** forms are found not preceded by a negative, etc.; berth **yd ytwyt** (=yd wyt RB. 115) *finely thou art* WB. 473; **yth ewylls yd ydym** *we are at thy will* RB. 66; **hyt yd ydiw** *dayar as long as the earth is* WB. 459 = RB. 105; **ar hynny yd yttoed** *yn deffroi thereupon he was stirring* WB. p. 212; **yma yd yttoedwn** (=yd oedwn WB. 441, RB. 287) *yn kerdet there I was journeying* WB. p. 221; **ual yd yttoed yn kerdet** WB. 170 = RB. 236; **ymlodeu dy dreedw yd yttwyt** (=yt wyt WB. 413 = yd wyt RB. 266) *thou art in the flower of thy might* WB. p. 207; for: **o hynny yd yttoed** RB. 218, WB. 149 has ac **hyny yttoed**, and for **ae yd yttoed yn troi** RB. 215 WB. 145 has **y doeth yd ydoed yn troi**. So in the present impersonal forms occur: **vyg karcharu yd ydys** (yd ydys om. WB. 235) *I am imprisoned* RB. 187; **yn y gyveistydyaw yd ydys** (=yd yttys WB. 167) *it is being besieged* RB. 233, by **yd ys yn kadw** or **enw hwnnw** *that name is preserved* RB. 60; **yd ys yn lluydaw yn an hol** *there is a hosting after us* RB. 63, 1.

NOTE 4.—In Hg. I. **ytiw**, etc., are not unfrequently copula forms, e.g. **gwell ytiw vy marw** *it is better that I should die* 145, **pa un ytwyt who art thou** 95; cf. **hyny yttoedynt** (=hyny oedynt WB. 446, RB. 291) **kystal ac y buont oreu eiroet till they were as good as they had ever been** WB. p. 223.

155. B. Copula.

(a) In the third person of the present there is a variety of forms:—

(a) **ys**, used (like Ir. is) at the beginning of a clause before its predicate, e.g. **is gwell** *it is better*; **is gohelyon** *hwnn he is a remnant*; **ys mi** *ae heirch it is I who ask her*. It is often preceded by the conjunction **can**, e.g. **kanyys** *gwell yw genyt ti since thou preferrest*; **kanyys** *arnam ni y berneist since it is on us that thou hast passed judgment*.

NOTE 1.—In poetry **ys** is used with an infixed personal pronoun, e.g. **yssim ediar I repent** BB. 51^a, cf. O.Ir. **issum éeen** *it is necessary for me*.

(β) **yw**, used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **negessawl yw wrhyt** *he has business with thee*; **pwy yw hi who is she?** **miui yw Llwyd**; **y deu lygat yw y dwy lynn** *the two lakes are his two eyes*; **nyt gwr yw hwnnw** *that is not a man*; **kanyys mawr yw** *since it is great*. It is also used after the conjunction **pan**, e.g. **y dyuedassant wynteu pan yw merchet ieirll oedynt** *they said that they were daughters of earls* (cf. § 226, 5).

(γ) **ynt** is the plural form, e.g. **bychein ynt wynteu** *they are small*; **nyt ynt iach** *they are not whole*.

(δ) **nyt** is a negative form, e.g. **nyt oet** ymi gwreicka *it is not time for me to wed*; **nyt egylýon** ý rei racko *those yonder are not angels*; **nyt wyntwy** bioed yr antur *it is not to them that the adventure belonged*.

(ε) **nat** is the dependent negative, e.g. menegwch . . . **nat hawd** gennysf ynheu nae lad ef nae diuetha *declare that it is not easy for me to slay him or to destroy him*.

(ζ) **os** is the form with **o if**, e.g. **os da** gennyt ti *if it seems good to thee*; **os wynteū** ae med hi *if it is they that have it in their power*.

(η) **ae** is the interrogative = *is it?* e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* **ae kyscu** yd wyt ti *art thou asleep?*

(θ) **ponyt** is the interrogative = *is it not?* e.g. **ponyt** dros y neb yssyd yna *is it not for one who is there?*

(ι) **neut** is the copula form with the particle **neu** (§ 220), e.g. **neut araf** *he is gentle*.

(κ) The relative form is positively **yssyd**, negatively **nyt**, e.g. kanys mi **yssyd athro** itt *for it is I who am thy teacher*; gwaew **nyt gwaeth** *a spear that is not worse*.

(λ) **mae** seems to be used where according to § 159 the predicate follows, e.g. am hýnný ý **may reit** ý titheu uot *therefore it is necessary for thee to be* WB. 396, o achaws hynny ý **mae dygassawc** yr adar yr tylluan *because of that the birds are enemies to the owl* RB. 80; ýn ý **mae goreu** y gwyr *where the men are best* WB. 119. **Mae** is used also in indirect speech, e.g. menegi ý Arthur **mae** mi ath výrýawd *to declare to Arthur that it is I who have thrown thee* WB. ; ereyll a deueyt **e may** hyn eu y naud *others say that this is his protection* BCh. 9.

(μ) Otherwise the forms **wyf**, etc., are used for the copula, e.g. **pwy wyt** *who art thou*, **yd ym** drist ni *we are sad*, **nyt oed ef nes** idi *he was no nearer to her*.

bydaf and bydwn.

156. **bydaf** is used :—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal present, e.g. mi a **uydaf** borthawr y Arthur bop duw kalan Ionawr *I am Arthur's gate-*

keeper every New Year's Day RB. 103, 7; lle ny bo dysc ny byd
dawn where there is no learning there is no gift FB. 244.

(b) As an historical present, e.g. ual **y bydant** yn eisted wynt a welynt gwreic *as they were sitting they saw a woman RB. 8;* a chyuaros Gereint a oruc yny **uyd** yn agos idi *and she waited for Gereint till he was near her RB. 271, 1.*

(c) As a future, the most common use, e.g. y gyt a mi **y bydy** yn dyscu marchogaeth *thou shalt be with me learning horsemanship;* mi a **vydaf** athro it *I shall be thy teacher.*

157. **bydwn** is used:—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal past, e.g. a phei vwyhaf uei y vrys ef pellaf **vydei** hitheu y wrthaw ef *the greater his haste the further she was from him RB. 9, 5.*

(b) Describing a single action in past tense: ual **y bydynt** yn eisted wynt a welynt y wreic *as they were sitting they saw the woman RB. 9, 29.*

(c) As a secondary future or conditional, e.g. wynt a welsant or kaffei vedic da **y bydei** vyw *they saw that if he got a good leech he would live RB. 212, 12.*

Past Subjunctive.

158. The following forms are to be noted: **pei yt uewn i** (= *bei etu6ni* WB. 71) yn dechreu vy ieuencit *if I had been in the beginning of my youth RB. 51, 24;* **beyt uei** ar y ffuryf iawn *if she had been in her proper form RB. 175, 18;* ar mul ae kanlynawd megys **pei at uei** milgi *and the mule followed him as if it had been a hound* Hg. I., 336; hi a vynnei **pet vei** hi a Lawnslot yn y fforest *she would that she and Launcelot were in the forest* Hg. I., 368; a **phettut** un wreic di or byt, ny mynnwn i ddim ohonat ti *and if thou wert the only woman in the world, I would desire nothing of thee* Hg. II., 315. Like the modern **pettwn** these forms seem to express unreality.

POSITION OF THE COPULA.

159. In Middle Welsh prose in positive affirmative sentences (with the exception of **ys** which always precedes the predicate) the normal position of the predicate is before the copula, e.g. **Lunet wylfi** *I am Lunet, cennadeu ym ni we are messengers, llawen vu he was glad, reit vyd it will be necessary, trwy gynghor Branwen uu hynny oll all that was through the advice of Branwen.* But the predicate follows the copula in the imperative, in negative and interrogative sentences, in subordinate clauses, and very generally when an adverb or an adverbial phrase precedes, e.g. **a vo penn bit bont** *let him who is head be bridge, nyt da dy gyghor thy advice is not good, a wyt uorwyn* *art thou a maiden? o byd reit if it is necessary, tra vu da as long as it was good, ual y bydynt gadarnach so that they would be stronger, paham ydwyf trist i why am I sad? yna y bu marw there he died, undyd ym penn y vlwydyn y bu barawt on the same day at the end of the year it was ready.* But after adverbs and adverbial phrases there are instances where the predicate precedes, e.g. **yna ryued uu gan Arthur hynny then Arthur wondered at that** Hg. I., 339; **am hynny reit vyd therefore it will be necessary** Hg. I., 311 (by **am hynny y byd reit 307**); **ar eil vlwydyn mab mawr oed and the second year he was a big boy** RB. 69. 4.

NOTE 1.—This order seems to have developed from sentences in which a copula form **ys**, etc., preceded, such as, e.g. **canys gwr uuassei** lit. *since it is a man that he had been, os byw vyd* lit. *if it is alive that he shall be.* Thus the development would be parallel to that of sentences like **Peredur a oruc Peredur did** (§ 85).

NOTE 2.—In the early poetry the copula freely precedes the predicate, as in Irish. And in the more archaic prose there are instances of the same order, e.g. **oed dyhed** (= **ys oed gryssyn** RB. 116) **kelu y ryw was hwnn it were a grievous thing to hide such a lad as that** WB. 475; **oed melynach, oed gwynnach** WB. 476 = **melynach oed, gwynnach oed** RB. 117; **oed reit** WB. 487 = **asoed reit** RB. 126, 27; **oed glyssyn** WB. 151 = **ys oed gryssyn** RB. 220; **oed dyhed mawr, oed iawn** RB. 173; **oed well** RB. 176. As to **as oed**, **ys oed the as, ys** is in origin the infixing particle **a** (§ 94) with an infix pronoun which has become meaningless, cf. **as bwyf may I be!** MA. 142^b; this usage has developed from cases like **ys caffo drugared may he find mercy!** MA. 224^b, where formally **s** may be an anticipation of the object.

COMPOUNDS OF *bot.*

160. **ar-gan-vot** *perceive*, **can-vot** *perceive*, **cyv-ar-vot** *encounter*, **dar-vot** *to be ended*, **gor-vot** *overcome*, **han-vot** *to be sprung*.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

sing.

plur.

1. canhwyf ; handwyf,	handym, hanym, henym
hanwyf, henwyf	
2. handwyt , hanwyt,	
henwyt	
3. cenyw ; deryw, derw;	derynt; henynt
henyw	

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 *handit* RB. 71, 178, and frequently in poetry; cf. *Cymorrod.* IX. 116, CZ. III. 389. *hanvit* Hg. I. 200.

IMPERFECT.

sing.

plur.

2. handoedut	
3. canoed ; daroed;	hannoedynt
handoed, hanoed	

FUTURE.

1. gorvydaf	gorvydwn
2. gorvydy ; henbydy	cyvarvydwch
3. cyvervyd ; dervyd;	
hanbyd, henbyd	
pass. gorvydit	

ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

3. cyvarvydei ; gorvydei;	gorvydynt
hanbydei	
pass. gorvydit	

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 *handei* RB. 85.

PREFERITE AND PERFECT.

1. **arganvum; cyvarvum; darvuam; gorvuam**
gorvum
2. **cyvarvuost; gorvuost** **gorvuawch, gorvuoch**
3. **arganvu; darvu; gorvu, arganvuant; gorvuant**
pass. **arganvuwyt; cyvarvuwyt; gorvuwyt**

PLUPERFECT.

3. **cyvarvuassei; darvuassei;**
gorvuassei
pass. **gorvuessyt**

IMPERATIVE.

3. **hanvit**

NOTE 3.—sg. 3 derffit RB. 155.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

1. **cyvarffom; gorffom**
2. **henpych**
3. **arganffo; cyvarffo;** **cyvarvoent**
darffo; gorpo,
gorffo; hanffo
pass. **gorffer**

PAST.

3. **cyvarffei; darffei;** **cyverffynt**
hanffei

Pieu.

161. The primary use of **pieu** is in interrogation, direct or indirect, in the sense of *whose is?* e.g. **pieu y gaer, heb wynt. nyt oes yn y byt ny wypo pieu y gaer honn** “*whose is the city?*” *said they.* “*There is no one in the world who does not know to whom this city belongs*” RB. 126; Peredur a ovynnawd **pioedynt gwyr wy** *Peredur asked whose men they were* Hg. I. 314. But it is

frequently used with lenation **bieu**, etc., but not preceded by relative **a**, in a non-interrogative sense *to whom belongs*, e.g. *Effrawc iarll bioed* *iarllaeth y gogled to Effrawc the earl belonged the earldom of the north* RB. 193, 1; *Duw bioedynt* *they belonged to God* Hg I. 426. The inflexion follows that of **bot**, e.g.

INDICATIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 2. **piwyt**; 3. **pieu**; pl. 3. **piewaynt**.

Imperf.:—Sg. 3. **pieuoed**, **pioed**, **piewed**, **pieuat**; pl. 3. **pioedynt**.

Fut.:—Sg. 3. **pieivyd**; pl. 1. **pieivydwn**.

Condit.:—Sg. 3. **pieivydei**.

Pret.:—Sg. 3. **pieivu**, **pieuu**.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 3. **pieuvo**.

Past:—Sg. 3. **pieiffei**, **pieuvei**.

NOTE.—cf. Bezz Beitr. XVII. 292 sq. In: ni ae **pieifydwn** *we shall possess them* CM. **pieu** has developed into a transitive verb *to possess*, as it did in Cornish, cf. Cymrod. IX. 100.

THE PREPOSITION.

162. **ac**, **a** *with*; with the article **ar**; with possessive pronouns **am**, **ath**, **ae** etc., e.g. *minneu a chwaryaf a thitheu* *I shall play with thee*; *wrth ryuelu a Gwrtheyrn* *to fight with Vortigern*; *yny oedynt gynefin ac ef* *till they were familiar with him*; *taraw a oruc Owein a chledyf* *he struck Owein with a sword*; *llanw crochan a dwfyr* *to fill a vessel with water*; *taw ath ucheneidaw* *have done with thy sighing*; **peidaw a bwyta** *a oruc he stopped eating*; in **amvin** *ev terwin a guir* *Dulin defending their land from the men of Dublin*. It is often used after verbs compounded with **ym**, e.g. **ymadaw** *a oruc Arthur ar llyn* *Arthur left the lake*; **yngolli ae gedymdeithon** *to lose his comrades*; *a doy y ymwelet ac Arthur* *wilt thou come to see Arthur?*

163. **ach**. In the phrase **ach y law** *beside him*.

164. **am** (Ir. imm) *about, on account of*, e.g. corn canu **am y vynwg1** *a horn about his neck*; gwisc **ymdanat** *dress thyself*; **am y uagwyr ar karcharawr** *on the other side of the wall from the prisoner*; iawn y medreis i **am benn** y carw *rightly did I determine about the head of the stag*; hyt na dywedit **am vn vorwyn** vwy noc **amdanei** *so that there was not more talk about any maiden than about her*; **am hanner bwytta** *amofyn a oruc y gwr about the middle of the meal the man asked*; haelaf oed **am rodyon** *he was most liberal with respect to gifts*; y oual **am y wreic** *his anxiety about his wife*; or sarhaet a wpathoed **am adaw** y llys *for the outrage which he had committed in leaving the court*; dothyw **am Oweyn** *Owein has perished* MA. 252^a; a deryv **am Keduylv** *has K. perished?* BB. 1^a; trist oed **am angeu** y uab *he was grieved because of the death of his son*. In the phrase **am benn**, e.g. yn y del y iarll . . . **am penn** y lle hwnn *until the earl comes to attack this place*; pan yttoedynt pawb yn mynu mynet **am penn** y Saeson *when they were all eager to attack the Saxons*.

ymdan, e.g. **ymdan y varch** *about his horse*.

y am (O.W. **diam**) *from off*, e.g. y dynnu y wisc hela **y amdanaw** *to pull off his hunting dress*; dogyn o arueu **y am hynny** *plenty of arms besides* WB. p. 225; o lu uii nyn **e am e mam ay tat** ae y brodir a chuarit *by the oath of seven people including her mother and her father and her brothers and her sisters* BCh. 36.

165. **ar on**, etc., **ar uarch** *on a horse*; Lawnslot a eistedawd y wwyta **ar y bwrd** *Launcelot sat down at the table to eat*; **edrych** a wnaeth Manawydan **ar y dref** *Manawyddan looked upon his town*; **y dodet ar yr avon** *Hafren the river was called the Severn*; ae geuyn **ar yr heul** *and his back towards the sun*; cymryt cleuyt **arnaw** a oruc *he pretended to be ill*; rac meint karyat y brenhin **arnei** *because of the greatness of the king's love for her*; rac caffael y gaer **arnaw** *lest the city should be taken on him*; **y wassanaethu** *arnaw to wait upon him*; **taerwn arnei** *ehun diuetha y mab let us insist that she herself killed her son*; nyd **gwerth arnaw** ef dim *it is not worth anything*; hitheu . . . a gytsynnywys **ar anvon** y mab y Pwyll *she agreed to send the boy to Pwyll*; dyuot a oruc ef **ar**

(=att RB. 287) **Enyd** *he came to Enid* WB. p. 221; a roti ŷ uanec **ar** (=att RB. 116) ŷ **kymhar** *and he gave the glove to his wife* WB. 473.

In phrases, e.g. **ar y drydyd** *with two others*; **ar y ganuet** *with a hundred men*; **sef y key yn nef ar y ganuet** *thou shalt receive in heaven a hundredfold*; **ar vrys** *in haste*; **am eu carcharu ar gam** *because they were wrongfully imprisoned*; **ar gel** *secretly*; **ar gyhoed** *publicly*; **y marchawc y gwnaethpwyt ar y odeu** *the knight for whom it has been made*; **y marchogyon goreu a oed ar y helw** *the best horsemen that were in his possession*; **ar hynny** *after that*; **ar hyt y glynn** *along the valley*; **ar hyt y dyd** *throughout the day*; **ar eu hol** *after them*; **ar uedwl** *mynet with the intention of going*; **ar uessur** *llad y benn with the purpose of cutting off his head*; **ar tal y pebyll** *before the tent*; **ar tal y lin** *on his knee*; **ar draws** *yr avon across the river*; **y tharaw ar draws y hwyneb** *he struck her across her face*.

NOTE 1.—For the phrase **ar y ganvet** see Rev. Celt. 28, p. 206.

y ar (O.W. **diar**), **odyar** *from*, e.g. **y dygwydawd yn varw y ar y uarch** *he fell dead from his horse*; **byrywch awch blinder y arnawch** *cast your weariness from you*.

NOTE 2.—But **y ar** is used also in the sense of **on**, e.g. **y gwelynt wreic y ar uarch** *they saw a woman on a horse* RB. 248.

NOTE 3.—In O.W. **guar** (=Ir. **for**), e.g. **guar ir** *dreb gl. edito*, **guar ir henn rit** *above the old ford* Lib. Land. 73. In Lib. Land. is also found **ar**, cf. Ir. **ar**. In Mid. W. the two prepositions are confused.

166. att to, e.g. **dyuot a oruc att y uorwyn** *he came to the maiden*; **y chwedyl a doeth att Uatholwch** *the tidings came to Matholwch*; **dyret y gyt a mi hyt att Arthur** *come with me to Arthur*.

167. can, gan (corresponding in sense to Ir. **la**) *with, by*, e.g. **mynet a oruc Mabon ganthaw** *Mabon went with him*; **ef a edewis genthi dwy iarllaeth** *he left with her two earldoms*; **a chan gennyat y ewythyr cychwyn ymeith** *and with his uncle's leave he set out*; **nawd a geffy . . gan uynet dracheuyn y ffod y deuthost** *thou shalt have mercy on condition that thou returnest by the way by*

which thou hast come ; hyntyd eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuuer gan y chwys ar gwaet till their eyes were losing their light with the sweat and the blood ; atteb nys kauas ef genthi hi he got no answer from her ; ny phrynit dim ganthunt nothing was bought from them ; ny chollet oen eiryoet ganthaw not a lamb had ever been lost by him ; gan lan y weilgi by the shore of the sea ; os da gan y uorwyn da yw gennfyd ynneu if it pleases the maiden, it pleases me ; drwc vyd gantunt it will be displeasing to them.

y gan from, e.g. cymer gedernit **y ganthaw** take security from him ; annerch **y genhyf i** ef greet him from me.

168. cer, ger near by, e.g. **ker tir** Tyssilyaw by the land of Tyssilyaw MA. 237^b ; **ger glan** yr avon by the bank of the river ; ae kymerth **ger y awwyneu** he took him by his reins CM. 56 ; yn ymauel ar ebawl geir y vwng seizing the foal by its mane. In some phrases :—**ger bronn**, e.g. ae vwrw **ger bronn** Owein and threw it before Owein ; ar abat . . . a doeth ac ef hyt **geyr bronn** yr allawr and the abbot took him before the altar ; **ger llaw**, e.g. ae dodi **ger llaw** y gerwyn and placed it beside the cauldron.

169. cyvrwng between, e.g. **kýfrwg deu ýskyuarn** Twrch Trwýth between the ears of Twrch Trwyth ; **cyfrwng mor a glan** between sea and shore.

170. cyn before, e.g. **kynn y nos** before night ; **cyn myned** mab Cynan y dan dywawd before Cynan's son went under the sod MA. 140^a.

171. cyt union serves as a preposition in the phrases **cyt ac**, **y gyt ac** together with, e.g. mynet a orugant **gyt ar mackwy** they went along with the youth ; yn gorymdeith **y gyt ar amherawdwr** walking together with the Emperor.

172. eithyr (= Ir. echtar) outside of, except, beyond, e.g. neb rýw dim ný welýnt **eithyr guydlwdyn** they saw nothing except wild beasts ; a phan welas Chyarlys hynny ryuedu a oruc **eithyr mod** and when Charlemagne saw that he was astonished beyond measure.

dieithyr, e.g. ef a edewis y holl longeu . . . **dyeithyr un llong** he left all his ships except one ship.

odieithyr, e.g. gwede mýnet Arthur **odieithyr y llýs** after Arthur

*went out of the palace ; ef . . . ae cassaawd **odieithyr messur** he hated him beyond measure.*

173. **erbyn** (prep. **er** + dat. of **penn** *head* = Ir. *ar chiunn* cf. § 25) *against, before, by*, e.g. *mi ae paraf . . . yn gyniachet erbyn penn y mis ac y gallo marchogaeth I will make him so well by the end of the month that he will be able to ride* ; *ar abat yna erbyn y law ae kymmerth and the abbot then took him by his hand.*

174. **gwedy, wedy** (O.W. *guetig*) *after*, e.g. **gwedy y gawat** *goleuhau a oruc yr awyr after the shower the sky cleared* ; *uot y crydyon wedy duunaw ar y lad that the cobblers had conspired to slay him* ; *hyd guedy gosper till after evening.*

175. **heb** (= Ir. *sech*) *past, without, besides*, e.g. *nyt kynt yd yskynn ef ar y uarch noc yd a hitheu **hebdaw ef** no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him* ; *heb dant yn y phenn without a tooth in her head* ; *abreid vu eu hattal **heb torri** eu hamot they could hardly be kept from breaking their covenant* ; *y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun trugein mil o varchogyon arauwc **heb deg mil** a adawssei urenhin Llydaw there was got from the island of Britain itself sixty thousand armed horsemen besides ten thousand that the King of Brittany had promised*. In the phrase **heb law**, e.g. *pan yttoed honno yn kerdet **heb law** Breint when she was going past Breint* RB. II., 246.

176. **herwyd** *according to, by*, e.g. **herwyd anyan** *according to nature* ; **herwyd vyg gallu i** *according to my power* ; *a chymryt y mab **herwyd y draet** and he seized the boy by his feet.*

177. **hyt** (a prepositional use of **hyt** *length*) *as far as, up to*, e.g. *o vor Ut **hyd vor** Iwerton from the English Channel to the Irish Sea* MA. 202^a ; *hyt dyd brawt until Doomsday* ; **educher** (= **hyt ucher**) *until evening*.

NOTE.—In O.W. there are also prepositional phrases **behet**, e.g. **behet hirmain** *as far as the long stone* Lib. Land., **bet rit ir main** *as far as the ford of the stone* ib., and **cihit**, e.g. **cihit i nant** *to the valley*, **cihitian**, e.g. **cihitian clouuric** Lib. Land., and **cihitun**, e.g. **cihitun ceng ir esceir** Ox. gl.

178. **is** (= Ir. *is*) *below*, e.g. **is nef** *below heaven*. In the phrase **islaw** *below*, e.g. *kawc a oed **islaw y drws** a bowl that was below*

the door; y dodit islaw y teulu he was placed beneath the household; odis, e.g. neur disgynnassei Arthur . . . odis Kaer Vadon Arthur had descended beneath Caer Vaddon RB. 151, 22; adhis Guaissav Lib. Land. 241.

179. **ithr** (only O.W. = Ir. *etir*) *between*, e.g. **ithr ir dwy ail** *between the two eyelashes* Mart. Cap.

180. **mynn** (a nominal preposition = Ir. *mind a holy relic, an oath*) *by* (in oaths), e.g. **myn dy law di . . . mi a af y gyt a thi** *by thy hand I will go with thee; myn vyg cret* *nyth gredaf by my faith I do not believe thee.*

181. **mywn** (nominal preposition) *in*, e.g. *wynteua dywedassant bot adanc mywn gogof they said that there was a monster in a cave; ryuedu . . . a orugant bot mywn un dyn . . . hanner hynny o nerth they marvelled that half as much strength should be in one man; neuad a welsant y mywn (=o vewn WB. p. 93a) y gaer they saw a palace within the city RB. 87, 17.*

182. **nes** (cf. **nes** *nearer*) *until, unless*, e.g. *ny cheffir Mabon vyth . . . nes caffel Eidoel Mabon will never be got till Eidoel is got; nes dyuot Guilenhin urenhin Ffreinc ny helir Twrch Trwyth výth hebdaw unless Gwilenhin King of France comes, Twrch Trwyth will never be hunted without him RB. 124, 28.*

183. **o, a of, from, by**; with the article **or**; with possessive pronouns **om, oth, oe** etc.; before pronouns beginning with a vowel there is also a form **oc**: **oc awch** *of your, oc eu* *of their, oc a of what*, e.g., *mil o bunneu* *aryant a thousand pounds of silver; y rann vwyhaf or vlwydyn* *the greatest part of the year; mawr a beth yw gwelet dwyawl dial ar y bobyl a great thing it is to see divine vengeance on the people; pebilly o bali a tent of satin; yn llawn or dwfyr* *full of the water; kany cheffynt o ennyt* *wiskaw eu harueu for they got no time to put on their arms; pei karei Duw wynt o dim if God loved them at all; aduet o oet ripe in years; wytt ditawl o bob chwant thou art free from every desire; o mynwn nineu arueru o rydit if we wish to enjoy freedom; na naccaa ui ohonunt do not refuse them to me; ef a gychynnwys o Arberth he set forth from Arberth; yn dyuot or coet allan*

coming out of the wood; am lad **honat titheu** y gwr priawt *because her husband has been slain by thee*; na ellir kynnal dy gyuoeth di namyn **o vilwryaeth ac arueu** *that thy dominion can be maintained only by valour and arms*. In phrases, e.g. **o achaws** *because of*; **oe vod** *with his will*; **oe hanvod** *against his will*; **or diwed** *at last*; **o hynny allan** *from that time forth*; **o barth y vam** *on his mother's side*; **oc eu plith** *from among them*.

184. **parth part**, in **parth ac**, **parth ac att** *towards*, e.g. bryssyaw a orugant **parth ar mwc** *they hastened towards the smoke*, yn dyuot ar hyt y dyffryn **parth ac attaf** *coming along the valley towards me*.

185. **py** (= Ir. *co*) *to*; with possessive pronoun **pwy**, **py**, e.g. or mor **pwy gilyd** *from one sea to the other*; ar ffo o le **py gilyd** *in flight from place to place*; ac yna y kymerth Seint Alban Amphibalus yd oedit **awr py awr** yn y dwyn oe verthyrus ac y kudywys yn y dyehun = *quorum Albanus confessorem suum Amphibalum a persecutoribus insectatum et iam iamque comprehendendum primum in domo sua oculuit* RB. II. 107.

186. **rac** *before, against, on account of*, e.g. mal heu **rac moch** meryerid *like scattering pearls before swine*; kymer di y pedwar meirch a gyrr **rac dy vronn** *take the four horses and drive them before thee*; kerdet a orugant **racdunt** hyt att vwyalch Gilgwri *they went on till they came to the blackbird of Kilgwri*; am notwy **rac auar** *may he protect me against grief*; nys kelaf **ragot** *I will not hide it from thee*; ffo ditheu ymeith **rac dyuot** ohonaw *flee forth lest he should come*; yn keissaw diffryt y deu wr **rac eu bodi** *in seeking to save the two men from drowning*; llidiaw a oruc Arthur **rac hwyret** y gwelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idaw *Arthur was angry because he saw the victory coming to him so slowly*; y kenir efferenneu **rac y eneit** *masses are sung for his soul*; yn aballu **rac newyn** *dying of hunger*.

y rac *from*, e.g. ninheu a dygwn **y racdunt** yr eidunt *we will take their property from them* RB. II. 207.

187. **rwng, y rwng** *between*, e.g. **rwg nef a dayar** *between heaven and earth*; **y rwng deuglust** Twrch Trwyth *between the*

ears of Twrch Trwyth; pany bei ammot **yrof am gwlat** amdanunt *if there were not a covenant between me and my land about them*; **rwng dicter a llit** taraw ym plith y llygot a wnaeth *between rage and anger he struck among the mice*; dywedut **y ryngthunt** ehunein y maent *they are saying among themselves*; **rwg deu** onadunt *between two of them* RB. II. 141; y kerdwys **y ryngtaw a Ruuein** *he set out to Rome* RB. 85, cf. ib. 12, 24.

odyrwng *from between*, e.g. a ducpwyt yn teirnossic **odyrwng y vam** ar paret *who when three nights old was taken from between his mother and the wall* RB. 129, 10.

188. tan, dan, ydan, adan (cf. O.W. **guotan**) *under*, e.g. ffynnawn a welwn **dan y prenn** *I saw a fountain under the tree*; **y clywei dygyuor . . . y dan** (= **dan** WB. 92 = **adan** RB. 66) *baret yr ystauell he heard a commotion under a wall of the chamber* RB. 67, 15; gobennyd **dan penn y elin** *a cushion under his elbow*; **dan wynt a glaw** *under wind and rain*; **y ellwng y gwn dan y coet** *to let loose his dogs in the wood* RB. 1, 10; awn **adanunt** (= **ydanunt** RB. 48) **a lladwn** *let us attack and slay them* WB. 67; yny uyd y llygot yn gwan **adan y groft** *until the mice were falling upon the field* RB. 53, 27, cf. RB. 28, 29; dyuot a wnaeth Corineus at Locrinus **dan dreiglaw bwyell** *Corineus came to Locrinus brandishing an axe*.

189. trag, tra *beyond, across*, e.g. ton **tra thon** toid tu tir *wave beyond wave covers the side of the land* BB. 45^a; ac eigyl racdaw draw **dra thonneu** *and angels before him yonder across the waves* MA. 196^a; maith dy dreisiau **drag Ewas** *great are thy deeds of violence across Ewas* MA. 145^a; oes **trag oes** *age beyond age* FB. 230; **tra messur** *beyond measure* FB. 155; rybud **drae gilyd** = *quotidianos rumores* RB. II. 131.

NOTE.—Often in the phrase *drachefyn back*, by which there are also forms with possessive adjectives, e.g. **tra-m-kefyn** WB. 232 = *drachefen* RB. 169, 16, **tra-th-gefyn** WB. 124 = *drachefyn* RB. 198, 25, **dra-e-gefyn** CM. 73, **dra-e-chefyn** RB. 177, 12, **dra-e-kefyn** CM. 45, also forms like *drach eu kevyn* Hg. I. 301.

190. trus, tros, dros *across*, e.g. **trus ir minid** *across the*

mountain Lib. Land ; ual yd oed . . . yn kerdet dros vynyd as he was journeying across a mountain ; yny echedawd y glot dros wyneb y deyrnas until his fame flew over his dominion ; y ymlad dros y wlat to fight for his country ; y rodes Hengyst atteb idaw dros y gedymdeithyon Hengist answered him on behalf of his companions ; pan allasant wy gyntaf talu drwc dros da as soon as they were able to return evil for good.

191. **trwy, drwy** (Ir. *tre*) *through*, e.g. **trwy y koet** *through the wood*; **trwy gynghor** *Branwen through the advice of Branwen*; ar tes oed vawr, ar arueu **trwy y chwys ar gwaet** *yn glynu wrth y gnawt and the heat was great, and the armour by reason of the sweat and blood was sticking to his flesh*; ar dyd hwnnw ar nos honno a treulassant **trwy gerdeu a didanwch** *and that day and that night they spent in songs and entertainment* WB. p. 204; Arthur **drwy amlaf rodyon** *ae henrydedei Arthur honoured him with many gifts.*

192. **tu** *side in* **tu ac, tu ac att** *towards*, e.g. pan daw **tu ar drws** *when he goes towards the door*; yn dyuot . . . **tu ac attat** *coming towards thee*.

193. **uch** (Ir. *ūas*) *above*, e.g. **uch nef** *above heaven*; yn eisted **uch penn y weilgi** *sitting above the sea*; **uch law y bont . . . y gwelynt kastelltref** *above the bridge they saw a fortified town.*

diuch : diuch i lan Lib. Land. 73.

oduch, e.g. **oduch y dwvyr** *above the water* WB. p. 90^b; eithyd **oduch gwynt** *he went above the wind* FB. 179; pei delhei y být **oduchti** *if the world should come above it* WB. 481.

194. **wrth** (O.W. *gurth*, Ir. *fri*) *against, towards, etc.*, e.g. ny ellir dim **wrth a** uynho Duw *nothing can be done contrary to what God wills*; pan ýuei o wual ýuei **urth peduar** *when he drank from the horn, he would drink against four* BB. 48^b; **wrth y drws** *llyma vab bychan lo!* *at the door was a little boy*; yn eu pobi **wrth y tan** *being cooked at the fire*; yn dyuot **wrth y diaspat** *coming at the cry*; pob kyfryw anidueileit a ducpwyd yno **wrth eu haberthu** *every kind of animals was led there to be sacrificed*; reit oed ym **wrth gynghor** *I had need of counsel*; y

dynu a orugant **wrth raffeu** *y mywn they pulled him in with ropes* ; **wrth ych kynghor** *y bydaf I will follow your advice* ; llew **wrth aer** a llwfr **wrth eirchyeid** *a lion for battle and a weakling towards suppliants* ; cyt bei lityawc ef **wrthi hi** *though he was angry with her* ; **wrthyt ti** *y mae vy neges my business is with thee* ; yn glyn **wrth y gnawt** *sticking to his flesh* ; y dywawt y dat **wrthaw** *his father said to him* ; sef a wnaeth gwyr Rufein drychafel Geta yn vrenhin . . . **wrth hanuot** *y vam o Rufein the men of Rome raised Geta to be king because his mother was sprung from Rome* ; **wrth hynny** *therefore* ; **y wrth** *from*, e.g. yr pan athoed **y wrthunt hwy** *since he had gone from them* ; ny ry giglef i eirmoet dim **y wrth y uorwyn** *I have never heard anything of the maiden.*

195. y (O.W. **di**, Ir. **do**) *to*. With the article **yr** ; with possessive adjectives **ym**, **yth**, **yw**, etc. (§ 58b), e.g. dyuot **yw** (=y RB. 284) *lety came to his lodging* WB. p. 219 ; gwyr Troea ae hymlityassant **y eu llogeu** *the men of Troy pursued them to their ships* ; y deuyn *drannoeth* **oc eu hamdiffyn** *they would come on the following day to defend them* ; deu uab oed **im** *I had two sons* ; keuyn *nderw* **dŷ** (=y RB. 100, 13) *Arthur oed he was a cousin of Arthur* WB. 452 ; or tu draw **yr bont** *on the further side of the bridge* ; heb wybot **yr kawr** *without the knowledge of the giant* ; mi ae talaf **ywch** *I will pay it to you* ; ni ae dywedwn **itti** *we will tell it to thee* ; gouyn a oruc Gwrhyr **idi** *Gwrhyr asked her* ; na hawl ef **ynni** *do not demand him of us* ; pan daruu **udunt** *darlein when they had finished reading.*

NOTE.—In Irish **do**=*to* (cf. Bret. **da**), **di**=*from*. Already in Old Welsh **di** has the sense of Ir. **do**, e.g. *map di Iob*=Ir. *macc do Iob a son of Jupiter*, *anu di Iuno*=Ir. *ainm do Iuno a name of Juno*, *di erchim* to *ask*. The sense of *from* is kept before other prepositions, e.g. **di am** later **y am** *from off*, **y wrth** *from*, and in some phrases, e.g. *blwydyn y hediw* *a year from to-day*, **y dreis** *by violence*, **y werth** WB. p. 214=ar **werth** RB. 277, 21 *for a price*.

196. yn (Ir. **i n-**) *into, in*. With possessive pronouns **ym**, **yth**, e.g. *kyllell a edyw y mwyd a llynn y mual* (*the*) *knife has gone into (the) food and (the) drink into the horn* ; dyuot a orugant **hyt yn lle** *yd oed karw Redynure* *they came to where the stag of*

Redynvre was ; nŷ chlŷweist yth wlat dŷ hun eiryoet kerd kŷstal ac a ganant hwŷ thou hast never heard in thy own country such song as they will sing ; ny byd vy eneit ym korff my life will not be in my body ; pa rŷw weith ſŷd wŷti yndaw in what manner of work art thou engaged? ym penn y seith mlyned at the end of the seven years ; gormod vyd agheu gwas kystal ac Edern yn sarhaet morwyn the death of so excellent a youth as Edern will be too much for an insult to a maiden. In many phrases :—dwy (ŷstandard) yssyd yn y vlaen a dwy yn y ol two standards are before it and two after it ; yn ol y twryf y daw kawat after the noise will come a shower ; ym bron close by ; yg kylch y tan round about the fire ; edrych a orugant yn eu kylch they looked around them ; yg gwyd Arthur in the presence of Arthur ; nat elych ym herbyn that thou shalt not go against me ; yn herwyd gweledigaeth according to appearance ; y mywn cadeir in a chair ; ef a chwbwl or a gollassei hyt yn oet y tlws lleihaf a gafas he got all that he had lost even to the smallest treasure ; ef a welei bebyll ym plith y pebylleu ereill he saw a tent among the other tents ; y vrenhines a eistedawd yn ymyl Galaath the queen sat beside Galahad.

197. **yr, er for, on account of, since, e.g. oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy ellwng ae yr aur ae yr aryant hast thou any hope of obtaining thy liberation either for gold or for silver? py glot a geffy ti yr llad gwr marw what fame wilt thou get for slaying a dead man? nyt yr drwc itti y deuthum I have not come to thee for evil; pei tebygwn y wneuthur ohonat ti yrof i beth if I thought that thou wouldst do something for me; yr y byt na wnewch hynny for the world do not do that; yr Duw a wdost ti dim y wrth Uabon for God's sake, dost thou know anything of Mabon? yr mwyn y gwr mwyhaf a gery arho vi for the sake of the man whom thou most lovest, wait for me; pa hustyng bynnac yr y vychanet a uo y rwng dynyon whatever whisper, however low, there is between men; yr a uyrif yndi ny bydei lawnach no chynt however much was thrown into it, it was not fuller than before; oed llesach yr march pei ass archut yr meittyn it would have been better for the horse if thou hadst asked it a while ago; y gwr y buost yr ys talym o amser yn**

y geissaw *the man whom thou hast been seeking for a long time* (lit. *since it is a while of time*).

NOTE.—This preposition is frequent with *oet time*, together with a possessive adjective, e.g. *ny ry giglef i eirmoet I have never heard*; *na welsei eiryoet that he had never seen*. The form *eiryoet* becomes petrified into a phrase used of all persons, e.g. *ny chiglef i eiryoet I have never heard*; *ny chlyweist eiryoet thou hast never seen*.

THE CONJUNCTION.

198. a and; ac before vowels and the negative particles **ny, na**, and sometimes before other consonants; with the article, **ar**; with possessive adjectives: **am, ath, ae** etc., e.g. *vyg kewilyd am llit my disgrace and my anger*; **a** phryderu a oruc yn uawr *and she was very anxious*. **a—a both and**, e.g. *y gwassanaeth goreu a allwyf i mi ae gwnaf ac idaw ac y uarch the best service that I can I will render both to him and to his horse*; **a** hediw **a** pheunyd *both to-day and every day*. After the comparative of equality (§ 39), e.g. *vn kyndecket a hi one so fair as she*; similarly, *a honno a aei trwy gallonneu y dynyon ae hofnockaei yn gymeint ac y collei y gwyr eu lliw ac eu nerth and that went through the hearts of the people and terrified them so that the men lost their hue and their strength*. Introducing an accompanying or qualifying circumstance, e.g. *gwelem . . . mynyd mawr geir llaw y coet a hwnnw ar gerdet we saw a great mountain beside the wood, and it walking* RB. 35, 26; *goueileint a delis yndaw o gamhet idaw attal y mab gantaw ac ef yn gwybot y vot yn vab y wr arall he was seized with great sadness because of the wrong that he did in keeping the boy with him though he knew that he was the son of another man* RB. 22, 20; *nyt a mi yn uyw yd aho ef y Gernyw he shall not while I live go to Cornwall* RB. 140, 16. Adversatively, e.g. *mi a rodaf y carcharawr itti ac ny darpanysswn y rodi y neb I will give thee the prisoner, although I had not intended to give him to anyone* RB. 128, 26.

199. achaws (nominal conjunction) *because*, e.g. *galw Gwrhyr Gwalltawt (leg. Gwalstawt) Ieithoed, achaws (om. WB. 471) yr holl ieithoed a wydyat he summoned Gwrhyr, the interpreter of*

tongues, because he knew all languages RB. 114, 14; **o achaws na chaffant** *gennyt because they do not get from thee* RB. 85, 26.

200. am na *because not*, e.g. *tristuart uytaf am na daw* *I shall be a sorrowful bard because he will not come* MA. 183^b; **am na weles** *ef yno na gwr na gwreic ryued vu ganthaw* *he was astonished because he saw there neither man nor woman* Hg. I., 154.

201. yr awr (nominal conjunction) *when*, e.g. **yr awr y kenych** *ef a a y nýwl ýmdeith when thou soundest it the cloud will vanish* WB. 451; **yr awr y rodes** *un llef arnaw ýd aeth y nýwl ýmdeith when he blew a single blast on it the cloud vanished*, ib.

202. can *for, since*; neg. **can ny**; with the present of the copula, **canys**, e.g. *yr hýnný hýt hediw ýd wýf i ýn darparu gwled ýtti, can gwýdýwn* *i ý dout ti ým keissyaw i from that time till today I have been preparing a feast for thee, for I knew that thou wouldest come to seek me* WB. 249; **kanýs gollyngy** *yr hýnný mi a rodaf it pedeir punt ar ugeint o arýant since thou wilt not let it go for that, I will give thee twenty-four pounds of silver* WB. 78; a **chanys** *vy lles i yd oedut ti yn y uenegi im, manac pa fford vei hynny and since thou wert shewing me my advantage, shew how that might be* RB. 177, 15.

NOTE.—The copula form **canys** comes to be used simply in the sense of **can**, e.g. a **chanys nys gwnn** (=a **chanys gwnn** WB. 76) *since I do not know it* RB. 54, 30.

203. cwt, cw *where*, e.g. **kwt ynt** *plant ý gwr where are the children of the man?* WB. 453; *mýnet a oruc ý brenhin ýg kýghor kwt gaffei* *wreic the king took counsel where he could get a wife* ib.; a *wdosti cwd uyd* *nos yn arhos dyd knowest thou where is night waiting for day?* FB. 146; a *thrýdit rýuet ýv merwerit mor, cv threia, cud echwit, cvd a, cvd ymda, cv treigil, cv threwna* *and the third wonder is the tumult of the sea where it ebbs, where it swells, where it goes, where it moves about, where it rolls, where it settles* BB. 44^b.

204. cyn *before*, (a) with indicative, e.g. *gwr a rodei gad kyn dybu i dyt a man who used to give battle before his day came* MA. 141^a; (b) with subjunctive, e.g. *gweinif i hagen ym Reen ri*

cyn bwysf deierin *I yet will serve my Lord King before I am of the earth* MA. 142^a, a **chin ri llethid** ve llatysseint and before they were slain they had slain BB. 36^b.

205. **cyt, cyn, though**; negative **cyn ny, cyny, cany**.

(a) With indicative, e.g. **kid y lleinv** keudaud nis beirv calon *though it fills the body, it does not stir the heart* BB. 51^a; **cyd doeth** ef nid aeth yn warthegawc *though he came, he did not go with spoil of cattle* MA. 140^b.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. **kŷn nŷ buŷf** arglwŷdes, heb i, mi a wnn beth ŷw hŷnný “*though I am not a lady, said she, “I know what that is”* WB. 51; **ked archwyf** ym llyw y lloergant yn rot, ef am ryt yn geugant *though I ask of my sovereign the moon's orb as a gift, he will assuredly give it me* MA. 212^a; a **thydi am gwely i kany welwyf** i dydi and thou wilt see me, *though I see thee not* RB. 173; a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi, ef a gymyrth y rybud and *though he was angry with her, he took the warning* WB. p. 215; **nyt oed ef nes idi yna no chyn bei ar y gam he was no nearer to her there than though he had been at a walking pace**; neur daruydei yr dayar y lynku heb wybot dim y wrthaw mwy no **chyn ny ry fei** eiryoet vch y dayar *the earth had swallowed it so that nothing more was known of it than though it had never been above the earth* RB. II., 141; annoc y Brytanyeit **megys kyt** bei un onadunt *he incited the Britons as though he had been one of them* RB. II., 94.

NOTE.—In the verb “to be” after **cyt** the 3 sg. imper. regularly takes the place of the 3 sg. pres. subj., e.g. ar mab a geiff enw **kyt boet drwe gennyt ti** and *the boy shall get a name though it displease thee* RB. 69, 23.

206. **cyt** *union* in the phrase **y gyt ac**, e.g. **y gyt ac y doethant** rac bron Kynan y hannerchassant o bleit amherawd yr Rufein *as they came before Cynan they greeted him on behalf of the Emperor of Rome* RB. II. 113; **y gyt ac nat** oes since there is not BCh. 81.

207. **delw** (nominal conjunction) *as*, e.g. **delw yt wytt** pen rieu pen reith yt wyf pen prifueirt om prifyeith *as thou art head of princes, head of law, I am head of chief bards from my most excellent speech* MA. 157a.

208. **eissoes** *however, nevertheless*, e.g. a dic vu wreic y melinyd wrth Peredur, ac **eissoes** y melinyd a rodes aryant yn echwyn idaw and the miller's wife was wroth with Peredur; nevertheless the miller gave him a loan of money RB. 229.

209. **eithyr na** *except that not*, e.g. ac erbyn auory y vot yn gystal ac y bu oreu, **eithyr na byd** llyueryd gantaw and by the morrow he will be as good as he ever was, except that he will not have the power of speech RB. 31.

210. **gwedy** *after*; negative **gwedy na** :—(a) with indicative, e.g. keugant kýwraghaun (MS. -um) **wide kywisscarun** (MS. -an) verily we shall meet after we part BB. 12^b; a **gwedy na allwys** Kaswallawn kael y gwr . . . gogyuadaw Auarwy a oruc and after Kaswallawn could not get the man, he threatened Avarwy.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. a **gwedy byryer** llawer yndi, ef a ovyn itt and after a quantity has been thrown into it, he will ask thee RB. 14; mwy boen yw koffau kyoeth **gwedy coller** it is a greater torment to remember power after it is lost RB. II. 67; kanys ymdiret a wnaei ef caffel clot . . . **gwedy y gorffei** ar y alon for he trusted that he would get fame after he had conquered his enemies RB. II. 7; kanys **gwedy darffei** idaw ef llad Galogryuant diogel oed ganthaw y lledit ynteu gwedy hynny for after he had slain Galogryuant he was sure that he would be slain after that Hg. I. 114; a **gwedy na chaffei** dagneued o neb ryw ford y gantaw, sef a wnaeth anuon y geissaw nerth a chanorthwy y gan Ulkesar and after he could not get peace from him in any way, he sent to seek support and help from Julius Caesar RB. II. 89.

211. **hagen** *yet, however*, e.g. a phan deuthant yno tybygu rylad Kei. wynt a welsant **hagen**, or kaffei vedic da y bydei vyw and when they came there, they thought that Kei had been killed. They saw, however, that if he got a good leech he would live RB. 212, 11.

212. **herwyd, yn herwyd** (nominal conjunction) *according as*, e.g. a **herwyd y dyweit** y kýuarwýdýt ef a uu arglwýd wedý hýnný ar Wyned and as the story says, he was lord over Gwynedd after that WB. 111; a gwedy eu hannoc uelly **yn herwyd y gallei**, erchi a wnaeth dineu delw efydeit drwy danawl geluydyt and after he had

thus exhorted them to the best of his power, he asked that a bronze effigy should be cast through the art of fire RB. II. 138.

213. hevyt further, also, likewise, e.g. *þ Duv ȳ harchaw arch hewid of God I will ask a request still* BB. 36^a, ac enryuedodeu ereill **heuyt** a weleist yno and other wonders likewise thou sawest there RB. 233, 2.

214. hyt (nominal conjunction).

i. *as long as, as far as.*

(a) With the indicative, e.g. *ti a geffy y kyfarws a notto dy benn ath dauawt, hyt y sych gwynt, hyt y gwlych glaw, hyt y treigyl heul thou shalt have the gift that thy mouth and thy tongue indicate, as long as wind dries, as long as rain wets, as long as the sun revolves* RB. 105, 25; *hyt y gwelir ymi gwlat ffrwythlawn yw hon as far as appears to me, this is a fruitful land* RB. II. 116; *nyt aeth neb is nef hyt yd aeth ef no one under heaven went as far as he* FB. 197.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. *taw hyt y mynnych be silent as long as thou wilt* RB. 13, 8.

2. **hyt na** *so that not.*

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. *drycruerth a wnaeth hyt nat oed well genti y byw noe marw she made lamentation so that she did not deem her life better than her death* RB. 51, 18.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. *carchara wynt hyt nat elont dracheuyn imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14.

215. lle (nominal conjunction) *where*; negative **lle ny**, e.g. *lle y gwelych eglwys kan dy pader wrthi wherever thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* RB. 195; *am uenegi ohonaf i ytti dy les lle nys metrut dy hun because I shewed thee thy advantage where thou didst not think of it thyself* RB. 177.

216. mal, val (O.W. **amal** = Ir. **amail**).

i. *as, when.*

(a) With indicative, e.g. *sef mal yd eistedassant that is how they sat* WB. p. 224; *pei gwypwn vot yn da gennyt ti mal y mae da gennyf i if I knew that it pleased thee as it pleases me* RB. 213; *ual y daw y mywn arganuot yr adanc a wnaeth as he came in, he perceived the monster* RB. 226, 5; *þd adnabu yr amherawdyr ȳ wlat*

mal y gwelas *the emperor recognised the country when he saw it*
WB. 186.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. *mi wnaf ual y dywettych di I shall act as thou mayest direct* RB. 276; *hwýnt ae torrynt ual y dyckid attunt they broke them as they were brought to them.*

2. *as if* (with past subjunctive), e.g. **mal pei** *teu uei as if it were thine* RB. 127; *dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i mal na wypwn i dim y wrth hynny to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

3. *so that.*

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. *kyscu a wneuthum i ual na wybuum pan aeth ef I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 27.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. *par weithon wahard y llongeu . . . ual nat el neb y Gymry issue now a prohibition to the ships so that no one may go to Wales* RB. 34, 12; *ereill a ghygorei itt rodi dy uerch y un o dlyedogyon y deyrnas hon ual y bei vrenhin gwedy ti others advised thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom so that he might be king after thee* RB. II. 114.

217. **megys**; **megys na**.

1. *as*, e.g. *y gwledychwys Peredur gyt ar amherodres pedeir blyned ar dec, megys y dyweit yr ystoria Peredur ruled with the empress for fourteen years, as the story tells* RB. 232; *megys y gallwys gyntaf ef a aeth parth a Chaerwynt as soon as he could he went towards Caerwynt* RB. II. 173; *megys y del y coelbrenn udunt y deholir as the lot falls to them they are banished* RB. II. 131.

2. *as if*, e.g. *yngaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt drwy lawer o yspeit kyn no hynny they embraced one another, as if they had not seen one another for a long time before that* RB. II. 186.

3. *so that*, e.g. *pa achaws na ladwn ni y mynach hwnn megys y kaffo Gwrtheyrn gwedy hynny y deyrnas why do we not slay this monk, that Vortigern may thereafter get the kingdom?* RB. II. 129.

218. myn *where*, e.g. *dyuot a orugant myn yd oed yr heussawr they came to where the herdsman was* RB. 115, 13; *mŷn yd vo truin yd uit trev wherever there is a nose, there will be a sneeze* BB. 42a.

219. **namyn, namwyn** *except, but.*

e.g. nýt edewis uýnet **namyn** hýt yd elhut titheu *I did not promise to go except so far as thou shouldst go* WB. 472; paham y kymerwn ninneu hynny y gan y taeogeu lladron . . . **namyn** eu llad hwy oll *why do we take this from these thievish churls and not rather slay them all?* RB. 49; y prenn a dyfawd yn dec . . . **namyn na** thyfawd neb ryw ffrwyth arnaw *the tree grew fairly, except that no manner of fruit grew upon it* Hg. I. 130.

220. 1. **neu** = (Ir. nō) *or*, e.g. nýt oed un llestýr . . . namýn eur **neu** aryant **neu** uuelyn *there was not a single vessel...except gold or silver or horn* WB. 227.

221. 2. **neu**, before vowels **neut**; with the present of the copula **neut**; with **ry**, **neur** (§ 95 note), with infixd pronoun: **neu-m**, etc. The original meaning may have been *now*, but the precise force of the particle is not altogether clear.

e.g. pan douthume attad oeth bichan vi anuad. **neu rimartuad** oth laur kiueithad *when I came to thee, my ill was small; now I have been blackened through thy...co-operation* BB. 11^b; och, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atteb uelly; **neus rodes** uelly arglywydes yg gwyd gwyrd, heb y mackwy "Alas!" said Riannon, "why dost thou answer so?" "I have so answered, lady, before nobles," said the youth RB. 13; **neus gwarchae** mynwent y mynwes daear, **neud** gwar gwawr trydar *now the graveyard imprisons him in the bosom of the earth, now the light of battle is gentle* MA. 160^a; **neu** chwitheu pan doethawch. **neur doetham** y erchi Olwen *whence have ye come? We have come to ask for Olwen* RB. 118. Many examples will be found in MA. 275^b.

222. **no, noc** *than*; with the article, **nor**; with possessive adjectives **nom, noth, noe** etc., e.g. oed melýnach ý fenn **no** blodeu ý banadýl *her head was yellower than the blossom of the broom* WB. 476; **noc** amws naw gáyaf oed mwy *he was bigger than a stallion of nine years* WB. 472; nachaf ý twryf ýn dýfot yn vwy . . . **noc** y dywedassei ý gwr du *behold the din became greater than the black man had said* WB. 231; a llawenach uuwyf y nos

hono **nor** nos gynt *I had greater welcome that night than the night before* WB. 233.

With the particle **et**, **nocet**, **nocyt**, **nogyt**, e.g. dial Duw arnaf onyt dewissaf (*leg. dewissach*) genhyf uy agheu oe law ef **nocet** o law arall *God's vengeance on me if I would not rather die by his hand than by the hand of another* WB. p. 210; pa beth yssyd iawnach weithon **nocyt** na chretter idaw *what is more proper now than that he should not be believed?* CM. 76.

NOTE.—For **et** see Rev. Celt. VI. 57.

223. nu, now, e.g. **nu** nŷm car i Guendit *now Gwendydd loves me not* BB. 25^b; yth law di **nu** y rodaf i *into thy hand now I will give it* RB. 266; beth bynnac **nu** a dylyych, kymer yr un march ar dec *whatever then thou art entitled to, take the eleven horses* RB. 279.

NOTE.—In the usual Mid.W. orthography the word should be written **nw** (=Ir. *nu*); it had gone out of use, and so the scribes retained the spelling of an earlier period. Cf. Loth Mab. II. 195.

224. o, before vowels **ot if**; also **or, os**; negative **ony**, before vowels **onyt**; with the present of the copula **os**, negative **onyt**.

(a) With present indicative, e.g. **ot ey** yr hon (sc. fford) issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth *if thou goest by the lower one, thou wilt never return* WB. p. 223; **os** bŷw uýdaf i . . . ti a glŷwŷ chwetleu **o dianghaf** *if I live, thou shalt hear tidings, if I escape* WB. 392; **or dianghaf** i . . . uýg kýwirdeb am cariat a uyd ar ý uorwŷn . . . **oný dianghaf** uinheu kýndiweiret uýd ý uorwŷn a chýnt *if I escape, the maiden shall have my loyalty and my love; if I do not escape, she will be as pure as before* WB. 396; mi ath amdiffynaf **os gallaf** *I will defend thee if I can*; ný mwynha ý gwaet **onyt** ýn dwým ý keffir the blood is of no use unless it is got warm.

NOTE 1.—A negative clause continuing a clause introduced by **o** has **ae na** with the subjunctive (§ 236, note 1).

NOTE 2.—**onyt** sinks to the sense of *except, but* (Mod. W. **ond**), e.g. ny mynnaf i dim **onyt** mynet yr gware *I desire nothing but to go to the play* WB. p. 224; ny mynnaf i neb **onyt** Duw *I desire no one but God* Hg. I. 178.

(b) With the preterite and pluperfect, e.g. **or bu** (=**os** RB. 104) ar dy gam ý dýuuost ý mýwn, dos ar dý redec allan *if thou camest in at a walk, go out at a run* WB. 458; **o ry dywedyssei** hitheu

dim a uei wrthwyneb ganthaw ef, hi a wnaei iawn idaw *if she had said anything to displease him, she would give him satisfaction.* Hg. II. 130.

(c) With the past subjunctive, e.g. **o bei** orderch itt goreu gorderch oedut *if thou hadst a mistress, thou wouldest be a matchless lover* WB. 237; **or bei** esseu dim arnaw n̄y adei ef hun uýth ar legat dýn *if he lacked anything, he would never allow sleep on any man's eye* WB. 465; dywedut na bydei vy eneit ym corff **ony delei** = **deuhei** WB. 256) ef ym amdiffyn i *they said that my life would not be in my body, unless she came to defend me* RB. 187.

NOTE 4.—It will be observed that in the last example corresponding to what in direct speech would be **o daw** the older text has the imperfect indicative, the later the past subjunctive.

NOTE 5.—**os** contains the infix pronoun of the third person singular, **os gallaf** *if I am able (to do) it*; from such cases **os** develops into a special form of the conjunction. **or** comes from **o + ry** as **neur** from **neu + ry** (§ 95 note), so that originally it would have been used before those tenses with which **ry** was used. But it tended to spread beyond its proper bounds, cf. **or clywy**, or **gwely** RB. 195 = **o chlywy**, **o gwely** WB. 119, 120.

225. 1. pan whence? e.g. **pan iv** dý echen *whence is thy lineage?* BB. 49^b; **guaur llv pý dv pan doit.** **Ban deuaw** o kad “*hero of a host, whence comest thou?*” “*I come from battle*” BB. ib.; **pa le pan deuy** di . . . **pan deuaf** o lys Arthur “*whence comest thou?*” “*I come from Arthur's court*” RB. 200, 1. Note the repetition of **pan** in the answer.

226. 2. pan when.

(a) With present (or future) indicative, e.g. **kýntaw geir a dýwedaw** ý bore **ban kyuodaw** *the first word that I will say in the morning when I arise* BB. 41^b; **ban wanha** ý gnaud *when his flesh becomes feeble* BB. 10^a; **pan agorawr** (= **agerer** RB. 103, 24) ý porth . . . býdhawt ragot ti gýntaf ýd agorawr ý porth *when the gate is opened, it will be opened for thee first* WB. 456.

NOTE.—This construction gives place to **pan** with the subjunctive.

(b) With a past tense of the indicative, e.g. a **phan yt oed yn mynet yr llog ac na welei** neb y gyt ac ef namyn ar y drydyd . . . y dywawt *and when he was going to the ship and saw no one with him save his two companions, he said* RB. II. 67; a **ffan deuthum**

ýno hoffach oed genhýf *and when I came there it pleased me more* WB. 229; **pan glywssynt** hwy y uarwolyaeth ef yd ymgynullyssynt *when they had heard of his death, they had assembled* RB. II. 173.

(c) With the subjunctive, e.g. **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely *when thou thyself comest to thy land thou wilt see* RB. 6, 10; **pan agorer** y creu beunyd yd a allan *when the pen is opened every day, it goes forth* RB. 78; **pan elhei** y teulu y yvet y gwin . . . nyt aey ef y gyt a neb onadunt wy *whenever his household went to drink the wine he would not go with any of them* RB. 85.

3. In some phrases.

(a) **hyt pan until**, e.g. ar pump meib hynny a uagassant **hyt pan uuant** weisson mawr *and those four boys they reared till they were big lads* RB. 43; Duw a wyr nat ymchoelwn **hyt pann welhom** y uorwyn *God knows that we will not return till we see the maiden* RB. 117.

(b) **or pan from the time that**, e.g. **or pan gauas** y tir ny allwys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith *from the time that it reached the land neither dog nor man nor horse could keep up with it* RB. 141; **or pann agoroch** y drws hwnnw ny ellwch uot yno after ye open that door *ye will not be able to be there* RB. 40.

(c) **yr pan since the time that**, e.g. kyvriuwch awch treul **yr pan doethawch** yma reckon up *your expenditure since ye came hither* RB. 228; gwedy dwyn ar gof onadunt eu collet **yr pan gollyssynt** arglwydiaeth ynys Brydein *after they called to mind their losses since they had lost the lordship of Britain* RB. II. 108.

4. **since**, e.g. gwae ni **pann** yn trewit o delli *woe to us that we have been struck by blindness* LA. 84; pa gyfryw wr yw awch tat chwi **pan allo** lleassu pawb uelly *what kind of a man is your father that he can kill everyone in this way?* RB. 221; pa drwc a digoneis i ýtti **pan wnelut** titheu ými . . . a wnaethost hediw *what evil have I done to thee that thou shouldst do to me what thou hast done to-day?* WB. 232.

5. **that**, e.g. ny wydyem **pan** oed ti a grogem *we knew not that it was thou whom we were crucifying* FB. 122. In prose it is

common in the phrase **pan yw** *that it is*, e.g. *y dywawt y gwr . . . pan yw* Peredur ae goruussei *the man said that Peredur had overcome him* RB.

227. pei if, negative **pei na**; followed by the past subjunctive or by the pluperfect indicative which takes its place (§ 109c), e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130; *nyt oed gyfyg gennyf ymlad a thidi bei na bei yr anifeil gyt a thi I should not think it difficult to fight with thee if the beast were not with thee* RB. 189; a **phei na ry bylei** y cledyf ar vodrwyeu y benffestin ef a vuassei agheuawl or dyrnawt honnw *et nisi collisione cassidis mucronem hebetasset, mortiferum vulnus forsitan intulisset* RB. II. 198; buassei well itti **pei rodassut** nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the youth* RB. 216.

NOTE.—**pei, bei** is in origin sg. 3 past subjunctive of **bot**. By itself it has the sense of *if it were*, e.g. **pei oet idaw** ef a ladyssit *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* RB. 193.

228. pryt na (nominal conjunction) *since not*.

(a) with the indicative, e.g. *py holy di y mi pryt nam gedy yn y tarren honn what dost thou seek of me that thou dost not leave me in peace on this stony height?* RB. 128; a **phryt na thygyawd** idaw geissyaw mynet y mywn trist vu ganthaw *and since he did not succeed in getting in he was sad* Hg. I. 39.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. *pa uedwl yw dy teu di unben pryt na bwytttehych what is in thy mind, sir, that thou dost not eat? (that keeps thee from eating)* RB. 292; *py wyneb yssyd arnat ti pryt na delut y edrych y gofut a uu arnaf i what face hast thou that thou didst not come to see the grief that was upon me?* RB. 176.

229. pyr (**py + yr** for **what?**).

1. *Why?* e.g. **pyr** (= **py rac** RB. 126) *y kyuerchy dy why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

2. *Since, that*, e.g. *guae vi pir imteith genhicle in kÿueith woe to me that I walked in associateship with thee* BB. 11^b.

230. tra *while*; often preceded by **hyt**.

(a) With the past indicative, e.g. *ny omedwyd neb tra barhaawd no one met with refusal while it lasted* RB. 17; *y*

tyuawd heint yndaw a nychtawt **hyt tra uu** uyw *there developed in him a sickness and a wasting as long as he lived* RB. 108.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. **tra vych** ti yn kyscu mi a af y ymwelet ar iarll *while thou art sleeping, I will go to see the earl* WB. p. 214; **hyt tra ym gatter** yn vyw hanbyd gwaeth drem vlygeit *while I am left alive my eyesight will be worse* RB. 119; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood he would walk on the tops of the trees* RB. 108; pei nam goganewch . . . mi a gysgwn **tra uewn** yn aros vy mwyt *if you would not laugh at me, I would sleep while I wait for my food* RB. 162; **hyt tra uei** yn gorffywys yd archei eu blygaw yn vyw rac y vron *while he was resting he asked that they should be flayed alive before him* RB. II. 79.

231. wrth because; negative **wrth na**, e.g. adolwyn yw genhyf itt y gadw yn da, **wrth nas rodwn** i ef iti yr y seith dinas goreu yth gyuoeth, ac **wrth** hefyd y lledir dy benn eta wa ac ef *I entreat thee to guard it well, because I would not give it thee for the seven best towns in thy kingdom, and because too I will yet cut off thy head with it* CM. 31; **guerth na buost** vffil *because thou hast not been submissive* BB. 11^b.

232. yn 1. where, e.g. dos ragot y lys Arthur **yn y** (=yn lle RB. 195) **mae** goreu y gwyr *go to Arthur's court where the men are best* WB. 119; **yn** (=lle RB. 195) **y gwelych** eglwys can dý pater wrthi *where thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* WB. 119.

2. **when**, e.g. **yn y** bo canmoledig Gruffudd . . . cerddwn weithon ar ddarogan Merddin *when Gruffudd has been praised, let us now pass to the prophecy of Merlin* MA. 723^a; **yn y** bei orchuyugedic anghelu a gyuodes y trydyd dyd *who, when death had been overcome, arose on the third day* Hg. II. 76.

NOTE.—See Rev. Celt. 28, p. 198.

233. yny until.

(a) With a past indicative (or historic present), e.g. wynt a drigyassant **yn y daruu** idaw ef hynny *they stayed until he had finished that* RB. 267; dyuot a orugant yr holl niferoed **hyny**

vydant yn emyl y kae *the whole multitude came till they were beside the enclosure* WB. p 224.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. arhowch y gyt a mi **yny darffo** *ym gymryt gwrogaeth vyg goreugwyr wait with me till I have received the homage of my nobles* RB. 267; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were cast into the cauldron till it should be full* RB. 39.

234. yr na *since not, though not.*

(a) With indicative, e.g. am ernyw **yr na daw** *it afflicted me since he will not come* MA. 183^b.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. darogan yw idaw kaffel etiued ohonat ti **yr nas kaffo** o arall *it is his fate that he shall have offspring of thee though he has had none of another* RB. 101; ny chyffroes un aelawt ar Gopart yr y uedru mwy noc **yr na metrit** *not one limb of Copart was affected, though it was hit more than though it had not been hit* Hg. II. 149.

NEGATIVE PARTICLES.

235. ny, before a vowel **nyt**; infixd pronouns **ny-m-**, **ny-th-**, **ny-s-**, etc.

(a) Except before the imperative, **ny** is the regular negative in main clauses, e.g. **ny chelaf** *I will not conceal*; **ny lyuassei** *neb no one dared*; **nyt oed** da gennyf ynneu hynny *that did not please me*; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine*.

(b) **ny** introduces relative clauses (where Bret. and Corn. like Ir. have **na**), e.g. yn y wlad **ny ry welei** eiroet *in a country that he had never seen*.

NOTE.—In such clauses **na** is exceptional in Welsh, e.g. yssit **nas kefifch** (by yssyd **ny cheffych** 120) *there is something that thou wilt not get* RB. 121—123.

236. na, before a vowel **nat**; with infixd pronouns **na-m-** etc. This is the regular negative in dependent clauses, e.g. ryued yw gennyf i **nam atwaenost** *I wonder that thou dost not know me*; ef a gadarnhaei y gwenwyniei y dwfyr hwnnw genedyl y Corannyeit

ac **na** ladei ac **nat** eidigauei neb oe genedyl ehun *he gave assurance that that water would poison the race of the Corannyeit, and would not kill and would not harm anyone of his own race* RB. 96; breid vu **na** syrthyawd yr llawr *she almost fell to the ground* Hg. I. 308; mi a wnaf itt **na** **bo** reit itt uot yn trist *I will bring it about for thee that there will be no need for thee to be sad*; golychaf y wledic pendefic mawr **na** **bwyf** trist *I will entreat the king, the great Prince, that I may not be sad* FB. 182. Further examples will be found under the conjunctions (but **can ny**, **cyn ny**, **ony**).

NOTE 1.—**na** is found in the second member of a conditional sentence introduced by **o** (of which the negative is **ony**), e.g. *o gwely vwyd a diawt, or byd reit itt wrthaw ac na bo o wybot a dayoni y rodi itt, kymer dy hun ef if thou seest food and drink, if thou hast need of it, and no one has the courtesy and kindness to give it thee, take it thyself* RB. 195.

NOTE 2.—The use of **na** may be noted in sentences like the following: kanystrawn genedyl a phaganyeit ywch ac **nat atwen** inheu etwach moes nach deudeou *for ye are foreigners and pagans, and I do not yet know your character or your customs* RB. II. 134; a gwedy menegi y bawp **o** tywyssogyon Freinc ar neilltu ac **na chauas** na phorth na nerth *after he had set forth the case to each of the chiefs of France separately and got neither help nor support* RB. II. 74.

237. **na**, before vowel **nac** (cf. Ir. *nāch*); with infixd pronouns **na-m-** etc. **na(c)** is used:—

(a) As the negative with the imperative, e.g. **na dos** *do not go*; **nac amouyn** amdanaw *do not ask about it*. **na** is also sometimes found with the subjunctive used in an imperative sense, e.g. **na discynných** *do not dismount* WB. 399.

(b) In negative answers to questions (§ 241).

(c) Not preceded by a question, in vivid negation, e.g. dyret y uwytta, heb ef. **nac af** yrof a Duw, heb hi “*come to eat*,” said he. “*I will not go, between God and me*,” said she RB. 289; eres yw gennyf na uedruth gymedrol i ar wneuthur esgidyeu wrth uessur. **na uedreis**, heb ynteu. mi ae metraf weithon “*I am surprised that thou couldst not succeed in making shoes by measurement*.” “*I could not*,” said he; “*I shall be able to do it now*” RB. 70; erchi a oruc y iarll y Enit ymdiarhenu a chymryt gwisc arall ymdanei. **na uynnaf** yrof a Duw, heb hi *the earl asked Enid to unrobe*

herself and put on another dress. “I will not, between God and me,” said she.

NOTE.—For a similar usage in the other British languages and in Irish see the “Transactions of the London Philological Society” 1898-9, page 54, note.

238. na, disjunctive particle; before vowels **nac**; with the article **nar**; with infixes possessive adjectives **nam**, **nath**, **nae** etc., e.g. tegach oed noc y gallei neb y gredus **nae** dywedut *he was fairer than anyone could believe or tell* CM. 1; heb wybot dim or vrat **nae** thybyaw *without knowing or suspecting anything of the treachery* RB. II. 218; **na—na**, e.g. ny byd reit itt torri **na** gwaew **na** chledyf *there will be no need for thee to break either spear or sword*; y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes **nae** werthu **nae** ellwng nas gwnaf i *I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56; beth bynnac a uo y marchawc racco **na** byw **na** marw *whatever becomes of yonder knight, whether he lives or dies* RB. 289; py beth bynhac a gaffer drwy **na** thwyll **na** chedernit *whatever is got through treachery or force* RB. II. 206; pan dycko beich **na** mawr **na** bychan uo *when he brings a load whether it be great or small* RB. 109.

INTERROGATIVE AND RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

INTERROGATIVE PARTICLES.

239. a; with the present of the copula **ae** (§ 155*n*).

(a) In direct questions, e.g. **a** weleist di varchawc *hast thou seen a horseman?* **ae** amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu *is it time for us to go to table?*

(b) In indirect questions, e.g. govyn a oruc y gwr y Peredur **a** wydyat llad a chledyf *the man asked Peredur whether he knew to smite with a sword*; edrych a oruc **a** yttoed ef yn deffroi *she looked to see if he was stirring*.

(c) **ae—ae** *whether—or*, e.g. yn amheu beth a dywedi **ae** gwir **ae** geu *doubting whether what he said was true or false* RB. II. 47; e kefreith a deueyt bod en yaun provy **ae** moruyn **ae** nyt

moruyn *the law says it is right to try whether she is a maiden or whether she is not a maiden* BCh. p. 40; ny wydyat hitheu beth a wnaei . . . **æ** dywedut hynny **æ** tewi *she did not know what she should do, whether she should tell that or keep silent* R.B. 270; either—or, e.g. a uynny di **æ** diawt **æ** dim *dost thou desire drink or anything?* RB. 276; a thebic yw genhyf i na doeth y wrthunt heb lad **æ** rei onadunt **æ** cwbyl *and I think that he did not leave them without slaying either some or all of them* WB. p 221.

240. pony (= Ir. cani), before vowels **ponyt**; with the present of the copula **ponyt = nonne?** e.g. **pony** chlywy di *dost thou not hear?* RB. 272; **ponyt** oed iawn y titheu *would it not be right for thee?* RB. 246.

RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

241. In answers to questions the verb or the predicate noun is often repeated, e.g. a gaffaf i letty gennyt ti, heb y Peredur. **keffy,** heb ynteu, yn llawen “*shall I get a lodging with thee?*” *said Peredur.* “*Yes,*” *said he,* “*gladly;*” a yttiw Kei yn llys Arthur. Yttiw “*is Kei in Arthur’s court?*” “*Yes;*” ae amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu. **amser** “*is it time for us to go to table?*” “*Yes.*” In negative answers **na(c)** is used, e.g. a atwaenost di y marchawc racco mawr. **nac atwen** “*knowest thou yonder great horseman?*” “*No;*” dywet, heb ef, a vu ef gennyt ti a gwneuthur anuod arnat. **na vu,** myn vyg cret, heb hi, na cham nys goruc ym “*tell me,*” *said he,* “*was he with thee and did he do violence to thee?*” “*No,*” *said she,* “*and he did me no wrong;*” ae byw. **na vyw** “*is he alive?*” “*No.*” In answer to **æ**, **nac ef** (= Mod.W. **nage**) is found, e.g. dywet unbenn, heb ef, ae o anwybot ae o ryfyc y keissut ti colli ohonof i vy mreint . . . **nac ef**, heb y Gereint, ny wydywn i kaethu fford y neb “*tell me, sir, is it through ignorance or arrogance that thou didst seek to make me lose my privilege?*” “*No,*” *said Gereint,* “*I did not know that the road was debarred to any one*” WB. p. 217.

NOTE.—**nac ef** is also found without a preceding question, e.g. arhoch vi yma, heb y Peredur, mi a af y ymwelet ar pryf. **nac ef**, arglywd, heb wynt, awn y gyt y ymlad ar pryf “*wait for me here,*” *said Peredur,* “*I will go to visit the worm.*” “*Nay, lord,*” *said they,* “*let us go together to fight with the worm.*”

242. Certain particles are used in answer.

ie, ieu, affirmatively, e.g. ae gwr y Arthur wyt ti. **Ie** myn vyg kret, heb y Peredur “*art thou one of Arthur's men?*” “*Yes, by my faith,*” said Peredur; gouyn a wnaeth ef yr gwr . . . ae offeiryat oed ef. **Ieu** arglwyd, heb ynteu *he asked the man if he was a priest.* “*Yes, Lord,*” said he.

do (cf. Ir. tō) affirmative, **nado** (Ir. nā thō) negatively, in answer to a preterite (or pluperfect of indirect question), e.g. a unben, heb ef, a leweist ti dy ginnyaw. **do**, heb ef “*Sir,*” said he, “*hast thou eaten thy dinner?*” “*Yes,*” said he; deffroi a oruc Arthur a gofyn a gysgassei hayach. **do** arglwyd, heb yr Owein, dalym *Arthur awoke and asked if he had slept for some time.* “*Yes,*” said Owein, “*for a while.*” a vwyteeist di dim hediw. **nado**, heb ynteu “*hast thou eaten anything to-day?*” “*No,*” said he.

NOTE.—Both **ie, ieu** and **nado** are found without a preceding question, e.g. ar hynny llyma hitheu yr iarles yn datlewygu. **ie**, heb hi, ae kychwyn a yñnný ti. **ie**, heb ef *thereupon lo the countess recovered from her swoon.* “*Really,*” said she “*dost thou desire to set forth?*” “*Yes,*” said he WB. 119; **ie** (=ieu RB. 210), heb y Peredur, ýma y býdwn heno “*truly,*” said Peredur, *we will remain here to-night*” WB. 139; mi a debygaf..na cheueist na bwyt na diawt. **nado** yr of a Duw, heb ynteu “*I think that thou hast got neither food nor drink.*” “*No, between God and me,*” said he RB. 275.

THE INTERJECTION.

243. Interjections proper are :—

a, ha (= Ir. á), in address, e.g. **a vorwýn**, heb y Peredur, a doý ti ý dangos imi yr anieil hwnnw “*maiden,*” said Peredur, “*wilt thou come to shew me that beast?*” **ha** (=a WB. 169) **unbenn**, heb y uorwyn, pei gwnelut vyg kyghor . . . ti a gaeut y drws “*Lord,*” said the maiden, “*if thou wouldst follow my advice, thou wouldst shut the door*” RB. 235.

oi a, e.g. **oi a uorwyn dec a bery** di bot vym march i am arueu yn vn lletty a mi heno *hark! my fair maid, wilt thou see that my horse and my arms are in the same lodging with me to-night?* RB. 217; dyhed a beth bot gwr kystal a thi heb gedymdeith;

oi a wrda y mae y mi gedymdeith “*it is a strange thing that a man like thee should have no companion.*” “*But, my lord, I have a companion*” RB. 127.

oian a, e.g. **oian a parchellan** a parchell dedwit *ho! little pig, happy pig* BB. 26^b.

och, e.g. **och Iessu** na dýffv wý nihenit kyn dýffod ar wi llave lleith mab Guendit *O Jesus that my end had come before the death of Gwendydd's son came upon my hand* BB. 25^b; **och**, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atteb uelly “*alas!*” said Riannon, “*why dost thou answer thus?*” RB. 13; erchi y vendyth a wnaeth; **och a truan**, heb ef, ny dylly gaffel bendyth *he asked him for his blessing.* “*Unhappy wretch,*” said he, “*thou dost not deserve a blessing*” RB. 236.

ub, e.g. neu chwitheu pwý ýwch. kenhadeu Arthur ýssýd ýma yn erchi Olwenn; **vb wyr** nawd dýw ragoch, ýr ý být na wnewch hýnný “*and who are you?*” “*Messengers of Arthur that are here seeking Olwen.*” “*Alack! men, God preserve you. For the world do not do that*” WB. 473.

244. Of an interjectional character are the following:—**llyma lo here!** (like Fr. **voici**), e.g. **llyma** weithon ual ýd hellawd Arthur ý carw *Lo now! this is how Arthur hunted the stag* WB. 402; **llyma** ý uorwýn ý kefeist ti dy warthrud oe achaws *See here is the maiden on whose account thou didst get thy shame* WB. 407. Also **llyman** RB. 87, WB. 185, p. 92^b; **llyna lo there!** (like Fr. **voilà**), e.g. **llyna** ýssýd iawnaf am hýnný *Lo! that is the fairest course with reference to that* WB. 406; ie vorwýn, heb y Kei, **llyna** vedru ýn drwc “*Indeed, woman,*” said Kei, “*that is ill behaviour*” WB. 123; **nachaf lo!** *behold!* e.g. **nachaf** uarchawc yn dyuot yr porth *behold a horseman coming to the gate* RB. 233; **wely dy** (lit. *dost thou see?*) **lo!** *behold!* e.g. **wely dý racco** (= **weluch chwi racw** WB. p. 94^a) ý gaer *Lo! yonder is the city* WB. 185.

A Middle-Welsh
Reader

I. LEAR AND HIS DAUGHTERS.^a

FROM THE RED BOOK OF HERGEST.

1. Ac yna ḡedy mar̄ Bleiddut y drychafwyt¹ Lyr y vab ynteu yn vrenhin. A thrugein² mlyned y bu yn llwywā y vrenhinyaeth³ yn wrāl, ac a adeil̄ys dinas ar auon Soram, ac ae gel̄is Kaer Lyr; ac yn Saesnec y gel̄ir Leisestyr. Ac ny bu idā un mab namyn teir merchet. Sef oed 5 en̄eu y verchet: ⁴ Goronilla, Ragā, ⁵ Cordeilla. A diruār y karei eu tat ̄ynt, a m̄yaf eissoes y karei y verch jeuaf idā Cordeilla.

2. A phan yttoed yn llithrā parth ae henein,¹ medylyā a wnaeth pa ̄ed y gadawei² y gyuoeth ḡedy ef y³ verchet. 10 Sef a ̄naeth profi p̄ey v̄yaf oe verchet ae karei, ̄rth rodi idi y ran oreu or kyuoeth gan wr. A gal̄ a ̄n[a]eth⁴ attā y verch hynaf idā Goronilla, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi efo.⁵ A thygu a ̄naeth hitheu y⁶ nef a⁷ daear⁸ bot yn v̄y y karei hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a 15 ̄naeth ynteu idi⁹ hynny, a dȳedut,¹⁰ kan oed kymeint¹¹ y karei hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean¹² y gyuoeth genti hi y ̄r¹³ a dēissei yn ynys Prydein.

3. Ac yn ol honno gal̄ attā Ragau¹ y verch eil hynaf idā, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo. A thygu a 20 ̄naeth hitheu y gyuoethu y nef ar daear² na allei hi³ dȳedut ar y thauātleueryd pa veint y karei hi euo.⁴ A chredu a ̄naeth ynteu hynny, ac adā idi hitheu y rodi⁵ yr ḡr a dēissei, a thraean⁶ y gyuoeth⁷ genti.

^a Letters enclosed in square brackets [] are wanting in the MS.

VARIANTS FROM BRITISH MUSEUM, ADDITIONAL 19,707.

Ch. 1.—1 drycheuit 2 thrugeint 3 yn y llwywā hi 4 eu henweu 5 ragau

Ch. 2.—1 a heneint 2 yd adāsei 3 ȳ 4 wnaeth 5 ef 6 yr 7 ar 8 dayaer 9 idi hi 10 dywedut ̄rthi 11 gymeint 12 drayan 13 yr ḡr 6 thrayan 7 kyfoeth

Ch. 3.—1 ragau 2 dayar 3 om. 4 y karhei 5 y rodei hi (hi over line)

4. Ac yna y gelgis¹ y verch jeuaf ida⁶ atta⁶, a gouyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo.² A dy⁶edut a 6naeth hitheu y rygaru³ ef eiryoet⁴ megys y dlyei uerch garu y that, ac nat ytoed et⁶a⁵ yn peida⁶ ar karyant h⁶onn⁶a ac erchi 5 ida⁶ g⁶aranda⁶ yn graff pa veint oed hynny. A sef⁶ oed hynny, y⁷ veint y bei y gyuoeth ae jechyt ae de⁶red. A blyghau a llidia⁶⁸ a oruc ynteu, a dy⁶edut 6rthi, kan oed kymeint y tremygassei euo⁹ a hynny, val na charei¹⁰ hi euo megys y karei y chwioryd ereill,¹¹ y diuarnei ynteu hi hyt 10 nab chaffei neb ry⁶ ran or ynys y gyt ac 6ynteu. Ny dy⁶at¹² ynteu nas rodei hi¹³ y wr ny hanffei^c or ynys, o dam⁶einei yr kyfry⁶ 6r h⁶onn⁶ y herchi heb argyfreu genti. Hyn heuyl a gadarnhaei hyt na lauuryei y geissa⁶ g⁶r idi megys yr rei ereill.¹⁴ Kanys m⁶u y 15 karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet,¹⁵ a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu¹⁶ yn v⁶y nor rei ereill.¹⁷

5. A heb ohir o gytygyghor y wyrda y rodes y d⁶y verchet hynaf ida⁶ y dywyssogyon¹ yr Alban a Cherny⁶, a hanner y gyuoeth² gantunt hyt tra [vei]³ vy⁶ ef, a 20 g⁶edy bei var⁶, y kyouth gantunt⁴ yn deu haner. Ac yna g⁶edy clybot o Aganipus vrenhin Freinc clot a phryt a theg⁶ch Cordeilla, anuon kenadeu a 6naeth oe herchi yn wreic ida⁶, a dy⁶edut 6rth y that y genad⁶ri.^a Ac ynteu a dy⁶a⁶t⁵ y rodei y verch ida⁶ ef heb argyfreu 25 genti,⁶ kan daroed ida⁶ rodi y gyuoeth ae eur ae aryant y⁷ d⁶y verchet ereill.⁸ A phan gigleu Aganipus tecket y vor⁶yn,⁹ kyfla⁶n vu oe charyat. A dy[⁶]edut¹⁰ a wnaeth bot ida⁶ ef diga⁶n o eur ac aryant, ac nat oed reit ida⁶ ef 6rth dim namyn g⁶reic deledi⁶¹¹ dlyeda⁶c y kaffei blant

Ch. 4.—1 y gelwis ynteu 2 y karei ef 3 ac y dywawt hitheu y karei 4 eiroet 5 om. ^akaryat h⁶onn⁶ 6 ac ysef 7 yny 8 a llidia⁶ om. 9 hi euo 10 ual y karei 11 megys y chwioryd y lleill ^bdyuarnei ynteu hi na 12 dywa⁶t 13 na rodei ef hi ^chanfei 14 megys y lleill 15 hihi nor lleill 16 tremygu ef 17 nor lleill

Ch. 5.—1 tywyssogyon 2 y kyfoeth ida⁶ 3 tra uei 4 yn g⁶byl udunt 6ynteu ^agenad⁶ri 5 ac y dywa⁶t ynteu 6 om. 7 gan y 8 y lleill 9 ae theledi wet add. 10 dywedut 11 teledi⁶

ohanei¹² yn etiued ar y kyueth. Ac yn diannot¹³ y kadarnhaŷyt y briodas y rygtunt.¹⁴

6. Ac ym pen yspeit yg kylch diâed oes Lyr y goresgynnâys y dofyon y ran or kyueth¹ a ganhalassei² ef yn ŵraŷl drŷy hir o³ amser; ac y rannassant y rygtunt 5 yn deu hanner. Ac o gymodloned y kymerth Maglaŵn tyŵyssâc yr Alban Lyr attâ a deugein marchâc y gyt ac ef, rac bot yn geâilid gantaŵ bot heb varchogyon yn⁴ y osgord. A gâedy bot Lyr yn y wed honno gyt a Maglaŵn, blyghau a oruc Cordeilla⁵ rac meint oed⁶ o 10 varchogyon gyt ae that,⁷ ac rac eu gâasanaethâyr ȳnteu yn teruysgu y llyys. A dyâedut a ȣnaeth ŵrth y gâr bot yn⁸ digaŵn deg marchâc ar hugeint gyt ae that, a gellâg y rei ereill ymdeith. A gâedy dyâedut hynny ŵrth Lyr, lliâiaŵ a oruc, ac ymadaŵ a Maglaŵn, a mynet 15 hyt at arll Kernyâ y daâ y lllall; ae erbynyeit o hânnâ yn anrydedus.

7. Ac ny bu benn y vlydyn yny daruu teruysc y rwg eu gâasanaethwyr. Ac ŵrth hynny y sorres Ragua y verch ŵrthaŵ, ac erchi idaâ ellâg y varchogyon y ŵrthaŵ 20 eithyr pump marchâc ae gâasanaethei. A thristaŵ a ȣnaeth Lyr yna yn vaŵr, a chychâyn odyna elchâyl hyt at y verch yr hynaf idaâ, o dybygu trugarhau ohonaei ŵrthaŵ oe gynnal ae varchogyon y gyt ac ef. Sef a ȣnaeth hitheu drŷy y lliit tygu y gyuoetheu nef a dayar 25 na chaffei ohir, ony ellygei y holl varchogyon y ŵrthaŵ eithyr vn y gyt ac ef ae gâasanaethei; a dy[6]edut nat oed reit y wr kyuuet ac euo vn lluossogrŷyd y gyt ac ef, na theulu namyn vn gâr ae goassanaethei. A gâedy na chaffei dim or a geissei gan y verchet, ellâg y varchogyon 30 a ȣnaeth eithir vn y gyt ac ef.

Ch. 5.—12 ohonei 12 dianot 13 y rydunt

Ch. 6.—1 ȳ dofyon arnaŵ y gyfoeth 2 gynhalassei 3 om. 4 ŵrth
5 Goronilla *recte* 6 a oed 7 gyt ac ef 8 *from here to odyno* (ch. 10,
l. 7) om.

8. A ḡedy bot velly rynaōd, dōyn ar gof a oruc y gyuoeth ae deilygdaōt ae anrydet ae vedyant, a thristau yn vaōr, a medylyā ū gofōy y verch a athoed y Freinc idaō. Ac ovynhau hynny heuyl a ūnaeth rac mor digaryat y 5 gellygassei ef hi y 6rthaō; ac eissoes ny allōys diodef y dianrydedu mal y daroed. A chychōyn tu a Ffreinc a ūnaeth.

9. A phan ytoed yn mynet yr llog ac na ūleli neb y gyt ac ef namyn ar y drydyd, gan ūylaō y dybaōt yr 10 ymadraōd hōnn : “Ae chōichōi tyghetuenneu ! pa le y kerdōch chōi dros aōch gnotaedic hynt ? Pa achaōs y kyffroassaōch chōi vivi eiryoet y ar vyg ḡastat detwyd̄yt ? Kanys mōy boen yō koffau kyueth ḡedy coler, no chytdiodef achenoctit heb ordyfneit kyueth kyn no 15 hynny. Mōy boen yō genyf i yr aōr hon goffav uyg kyueth am anryded yn yr amser hōnnō, yn yr hōn yd oed y saōl gan mil o varchogyon ym damgylchynu yn kerdel y gyt a mi, pan vydōn yn ymlad ar kestyll ac ar dinassoed ac yn anreithaō kyvoeth vyg gelynyon, no 20 diodef y poen ar achenoctit a ūnaeth y ḡyr hynn y mi, y rei a uydyst yna dan vyn traen.^a Och vi, a dōyweu nef a dayar ! pa bryt y daō yr amser y gallōyf y talu elchōyl yn y ḡrthōyneb yr ḡyr hynn ? Och Cordeilla vyg karedic verch ! mor wir yō dy ymadraōd teu di, 25 pan dyōedeist panyō val y bei vyg gallu am medyant am kyueth am jeuegtit, panyō velly y karut ti vyui ! Ac 6rth hynny, tra vu vyg kyueth i yn gallu rodi rodyon, paōb am karei ; ac nyt mi a gerynt namyn vy rodyon am deuodeu am donyeu. Ac 6rth hynny, pan gilyōys y 30 rodyon, y foes y karyat. Ac 6rth hynny pa ffuruf y gallaf rac keōilydadolōyn nerth na chanhorthōy y genyt ti, 6rth rysorri yg kam ohonaf i 6rthyt ti am dy doethineb

^a leg. traet.

di, ath rodi yn dremygedic gan debygu bot yn waeth dy diwed noth whioryd ereill, a thitheu yn well ac yn doethach noc 6ynt6y? Kanys g6edy a rodeis i o da a chyuoeth udunt h6y, y g6naethant h6y vyui yn alltut ac yn echena6c om g6lat am kyueth.” 5

10. Ac y dan g6yna6 y aghyfnerth ofut yn y wed honno ef a doeth hyt ym Paris, y dinas yd oed y verch ynda6. Ac anuon amylder o annercheu at y verch a 6naeth y dy6edut y ry6 agkyfreith a gyuaruu ac ef. A g6edy dy6edut or gennat nat oed namy[n] ef ae [y]swein, sef a 10 wnaeth hit[h]eu anuon amylder o eur ac aryant, ac erchi mynet ae that odyno hyt y my6n¹ dinas arall, a chymryt arna6 y vot yn glaf, a g6neuthur enneint idaw, ac ardynheru y gorff a symuda6² dillat, a chymryt atta6 deugein marcha6c ac eu k6eira6³ yn hard ac yn syber6⁴ o veirch⁵ a 15 dillat ac arueu; a g6edy darffei hynny, anuon oe ulaen at⁶ Aganipus vrenhin ac at⁶ y uerch y dy6edut y vot yn dyuot. A g6edy daruot g6neuthur kymeint ac a archyssei,⁷ anuon a 6naeth IIythyreu⁸ at y brenhin⁹ ac at y verch ynteu y dy6edut⁹ y uot¹⁰ yn dyuot¹¹ ar y deugeinuet o varchogyon¹² 20 g6edy y¹³ rydehol oe dofyon o ynys Prydein, yn dyuot y geissa6 porth gantunt 6ynteu¹³ y oresgyn y gyfoeth dracheuen.¹⁴ A phan gilleu y brenhin hynny, kych6yn a 6naeth ef ae wreic ae deulu¹⁵ yn y erbyn¹⁶ yn anrydedus, mal yd oed deil6g¹⁷ erbyneit¹⁸ g6r a uei yn gyhyt ac euo¹⁹ 25 yn vrenhin ar ynys Prydein. A hyt tra uu yn Freinc, y rodes y brenhin lywodraeth²⁰ y gyuoeth²¹ ida6, mal²² y bei ha6s ida6 caffel porth a nerth y oresgyn y gyuoeth drachefyn.²³

11. Ac yna yd anuonet g6ys dros 6yneb teyrnas Freinc

Ch. 10.—1 hyt yn 2 y add. 3 kyweira6 4 yn hard syber6 5 veirych 6 ar 7 kymeint a hynny 8 IIyr “brenhin 9 ynteu y dywedut om. 10 ef add. 11 yn dyuot om. 12 deugeinuet marcha6c 13 om. 14 kyueth drachefyn 15 teulu 16 yn erbyn IIyr 17 teil6g 18 erbyneit 19 ef 20 lywodraeth 21 kyueth 22 val 23 ida6 ef add.

y gynulla⁶ holl de⁷red y uynet² gyt a Lyr y oresgyn y gyuoeth³ drachefyn ida⁶. A g⁶edy bot pob peth yn bara⁶t, kych⁶yn a oruc Lyr a Chordeilla y verch ar llu h⁶nn⁶ gantunt, a cherdet yny doethant y ynys Prydein, 5 ac yn diannot ymlad ae dofyon a chael⁴ y fudugolyaeth. A g⁶edy g⁶edu pob peth or ynys ida⁶ ef⁵ i⁶ bu var⁶ Lyr yn y dryded vlydyn; ac y bu [var⁶]⁷ Aganipus vrenhin Freinc. Ac yna y kymerth Cordeilla Ily⁶odraeth y deyrnas⁸ yn y ll⁶a⁶ ehun. Ac y clad⁶yt Lyr y my⁶n 10 dayardy^a a 6naeth ehun y dan auon Sorram. Ar demyl^b honno ry 6nathoed⁹ yn anryded yr du⁶ a el⁶it yna¹⁰ Bifrontisiani. A phan delei wylua y demyl¹¹ honno, y deuei holl grefyd⁶yr y dinas ar wlat oe anrydedu. Ac y dechreuit^c pob g⁶eith or a dechreuit hyt ym pen y 15 vlydyn. A g⁶edy g⁶ledychu pump¹² mlyned o Gordeilla yn dagnouedus,¹³ y kyuodes y deu nyeint yn y herbyn, Morgan¹⁴ vab Magla⁶n ty⁶yssa⁶c yr Alban, a Chuneda¹⁵ vab Henwyn ty⁶yssa⁶c Kernyw, a llu arua⁶c gantunt. A daly Cordeilla a 6naethant ae charcharu.¹⁶ Ac yn y 20 carchar h⁶nn⁶¹⁷ o dolur kolli y kyuoeth¹⁸ y g⁶naeth ehun y lleith.

Ch. 11.—1 y add. 2 6rth eu hell⁶g y 3 kyoeth 4 chaffel 5 om. 6 y 7 var⁶ 8 teyrnas ^adayarty ^btemyl 9 a wnathoed ehun 10 ena 11 demhyl ^cdechrewit 12 pvm (but a stroke has been added below as if to change v to y) 13 dagneuedus 14 Margan 15 Chuueda 16 A— charcharu: ae daly ae charcharu 17 hvnv 18 chyfoeth

II. THE STORY OF ARTHUR.

FROM THE RED BOOK OF HERGEST.

1. A ḡedy mar̄ Uthur Pendragon yd ymgynullassant
 holl wyrda ynys Prydein, jeirll a bar̄neit¹ a marchogyon
 vrdāl ac escyb ac abadeu ac athrāon hyt yg Kaer
 Vudei. Ac o gytsynyedigaeth pāb yd archyssant y
 Dyfric archescob Kaer Lion ar Wysc vrdā Arthur y vab 5
 ynteu² yn vrenhin. Ac eu hagen ae kymhelie i hynny.
 Kanys pan gigleu y Saeson mar̄wolyaeth³ Vthur Pen-
 dragon,⁴ yd ellygyssynt ynteu genadeu hyt yn Germania
 y geissāl porth. Ac neur dathoed⁵ llughes vār attunt,
 a Cholgrim yn tȳgyssāc⁶ arnadunt. Ac neur daroed 10
 udunt goreskyn⁷ o Humyr hyt y mor a Chatyneis⁸ yn y
 gogled. Sef oed hynny y dryded rann y ynys Prydein.
 A ḡedy ḡbelet o Dyfric archescob drueni y bobyl ae
 hymdiuedi, ef a gymerth escyb y gyt ac ef, ac a dodes
 coron y teyrnas am ben Arthur. A phymthegml̄yd oed 15
 Arthur yna, ac ny chlȳsит ar neb arall eiryoet⁹ y deuodeu
 o dēred a haelder a oed arnāl ef. Idāl ef hefyt yd
 enillyssei y dayoni anyanāl a oed arnāl y veint rat
 honno, hyt pan oed garedic ef gan bāb or a glȳhei¹⁰
 dȳbetut amdanāl.¹¹ Ac ̄rth hynny ḡedy y arderchockau 20
 ef or vrenhināl enryded h̄enn̄, gan gad̄l ohonāl y
 gnotaedic¹² defāl a¹³ ymrodes y haelder. Ac odyna
 kymeint o amylder marchogyon a lithrei attāl, a megys
 y dyffyggyei idāl da y rodi¹⁴ udunt yn vynych. Aceissoes

VARIANTS FROM BRITISH MUSEUM, ADDITIONAL 19,707.

(Ch. 1). 1 barvnyeit, 2 arthur ap vthyr, 3 marwolaeth, 4 bendragon,
 5 dothoed, 6 dywyasave, 7 gverescyn, 8 mor kateneis, 9 eiroet, 10 glȳhei,
 11 ymdanav anwaethach or ae ḡbelei, 12 nottaedic, 13 ef a, 14 rodel,

py di⁶ bynhac y bo haelder anyana¹ y gyt a phrofedic¹⁵ volyant, kyt bo eisseu arna⁶ ar daly¹⁶, yr hynny ny at Du⁶ wastat aghenoctit y argy⁶edu ida⁶.

2. Ac 6rth hynny Arthur, kanys molyant a getym-
5 deithockaei¹ haelder a dayoni, llunyaethu ryfel a oruc ar y Saeson, hyt pan vei oc eu golut h⁶y² y kyfoethogei ynteu y teulu ae varchogyon. Kanys ia⁶nder a dyskei hynny ida⁶; kanys ef a dyliei o dreftata⁶ dyl yet holl lywodraeth ynys Prydein. A chynnlla⁶ a oruc ef yr holl ieuenctit
10 a oed darystygedic ida⁶ ef, a chyrchu parth a Chaer Efra⁶c.³ A g⁶edy g⁶ybot o Golgrim hynny, kynlla⁶ a oruc ynteu y Saeson ar Yscotteit ar Ffichtoit, ac y gyt ac⁴ aneiryf luossogr⁶yd nifer ganta⁶ dyuot yn erbyn Arthur hyt yg glan Dulas. A g⁶edy ymgylfaruot yna
15 o bop⁵ parth y dyg⁶ydassant llaber or deu lu. Ac or diwed Arthur a gafas y vudugolyaeth. A ffo a oruc Colgrim⁶ y dinas Kaer Efra⁶c. Arthur ae lu a gychwyn⁶ys⁷ ac a werchetw⁸ arna⁶.

3. A g⁶edy clybot o Bald⁶f¹ y vra⁶t ynteu² hynny,³ ef
20 a gyrcha⁶d tu ar lle yd oed y vra⁶t yg g⁶archae,⁴ a ch⁶e mil o wyr ganta⁶ y geissa⁶ y rydhau odyno. Kanys yr amser yd ymladyssei⁵ Arthur ae vra⁶t ef, yd oed Bald⁶f⁶
yna ar lan y mor yn aros⁷ dyuot Chledric⁸ o Germania, a oed yn dyuot a phorth ganta⁶ udunt. Ac 6rth hynny
25 g⁶edy y dyuot ar⁹ dec milltir y 6rth y gaer, darparu a oruc d⁶yn kyrch nos am ben Arthur ae lu. Ac eissoes nyt ymgela⁶d¹⁰ hynny rac Arthur. Yna¹¹ yd erchis ynteu y Gad⁶r¹² ty⁶yssa⁶c¹³ Kerny⁶ kymryt whe chant marcha⁶c a their mil o bedyt¹⁴ y gyt ac ef a mynet yn

(Ch.) 1. 15 phrouygedic, 16 talym

(Ch. 2). 1 gytyndeithocaei, 2 gy, 3 efra⁶c, 4 om., 5 pop, 6 golgrim,
7 gylchyn⁶ys y dinas, 8 ae g⁶archetw⁸

(Ch. 3). 1 baldvlf, 2 om., 3 y warehae, 4 yg gvarchae om., 5 ymladyssei,
6 valdvlf, 7 arhos, 8 cheldric, 9 hyt ar, 10 ymgelvys, 11 om., 12 kadvr,
13 iarll, 14 pedyd

eu herbyn, ac eu ragot y nos honno y fford y doynt. A ḡedy kaffel o Gad̄r ḡybot y fford y doynt y gelynynon, eu kyrchu a oruc Kad̄r yn deissyfyt. A ḡedy briāb eu bydinoed ac eu hyssigāb a llad llāber onadunt, kymell y Saeson a oruc ar ffo.

5

4. Ac 6rth hynny diruār dristyt a gofal a gymerth Bald̄f¹ yndāb,² 6rth na all̄ys ell̄g³ y vrāt or ḡarchae yd oed yndāb. A medylyab a oruc py wed y gallei gaffel⁴ kyffur⁵ y⁶ ymdidan ae vrāt; kanys ef a dybygei y kaffei bop⁷ un onadunt⁸ ell̄ deu rydit a ḡaret yn hollāl, pei⁹ io keffynt ymdidan y gyt. A ḡedy na chaffei fford arall yn y byt, eillāb y wallt¹⁰ ae varyf a oruc, a chymryt telyn yn y lāb, ac yn rith erestyn a ḡaryyd dyuot ym plith y llu ar lluesteu. Ar clymeu¹¹ a ganei ef a dangossynt y vot yn telynyār.¹² Ac or diwed ḡedy na thybygei neb 15 y uot ef yn tywyssab̄c falst mal yd oed, nessau a oruc parth a muroed y gaer dan ganu y telyn. A ḡedy y adnabot or ḡyr o vȳn, y dynu¹³ a orugant 6rth raffeu y mȳn. A ḡedy ḡelet ohonāb y vrāt, ymgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt¹⁴ dr̄y laber o yspeit kyn 20 no hynny. Ac val yd oedynt uelly yn medylyab ac yn keissāb ystryb̄ py wed y gellynt ymrydhau odyno, ac yn annobeithab̄ oe rydit, nachaf eu kenadeu yn dyuot o Germania, a whe chan ll̄og yn llān o varchogyon aruab̄c gantunt, a Cheldric yn dywyssab̄c arnadunt, ac yn 25 disgynu yn yr Alban.

5. A ḡedy clybot hynny o Arthur, ymadāb a oruc ynteu ar dinas rac petruster ymlad ar veint nifer honno,¹ a mynet odyno hyt yn Lundein. Ac yno gal̄b attab̄ a oruc holl wyrda y deyrnas yscolheigon a ll̄eygyon, ac 30

(Ch. 4). 1 baldylf, 2 ac ynda, 3 gell̄g, 4 kaffel, 5 kyfr̄ch 6 om.,
7 kanys ef a tybygei pop, 8 ohonunt, 9 bei, 10 ben? 11 ar erychyadeu add.,
12 telynyār 13 tynnu, 14 nar ymwelynt

(Ch. 5). 1 hvnnv

ymgyghor ac 6ynt beth a wnelyst² am hynny. Sef a gaessant o gyghor y k6nsli h6nn6; anuon kenadeu a orugant hyt ar Ho6el³ vab Emyr Lyda6, brenhin Brytaen Vechan, y uenegi ida6 yr ormes a dathoed gan y Paganyeit 5 ar⁴ ynys Prydein. Kanys nei uab y⁵ ch6aer oed Howel³ y Arthur. A g6edy clybot o Howel³ y ryfel ar afluxd6ch a oed ar y ewythyr, erchi parattoi llyges a oruc,⁶ a chynnulla6 pymtheg mil o uarchogyon aruab6c. Ac ar y g6ynt kyntaf a gafas yn y ol, y deuth y borth Ham6nt 10 yr tir y⁷ ynys Prydein. Ac Arthur ae haruolles ynteu or enryded y g6edei aruoll g6r kyfurd a h6nn6; ac yn vynych ymgaru⁸ bop eilwers.

6. Ac odyna g6edy llithra6 ychydic o dieuoed,¹ 6ynt a gyrrhassant parth a Chaer L6ytcoet, yr hon [a elwir]² 15 Lincol yr a6r honn, ac yssyd ossodedic yn y wlat a elwir Lindysei ar benn mynyd r6g d6y auon. Ac 6rth y gaer honno yd oed y Paganyeit yn eisted. A g6edy eu dyuot yno y gyt ac eu holl niferoed, ymlad a orugant ar Saeson. Ac aglywedic aerua a 6naethant o honunt.³ 20 Kanys chwe mil onadunt a dyg6ydassant yn yr un dyd h6nn6. Rei oc eu llad, ereill oc eu bodi⁴ a gollasant eu heneideu. Ac 6rth hynny rei⁵ ereill yn gyfla6n o ofyn ada6 y dinas a orugant, a chymryteu ffo⁶ yn lle diogel6ch udunt. Ac ny orffo6ys6ys Arthur oc eu hymlit hyt⁷ yn 25 ll6yn Kelydon. Ac yno ymgynull o bop lle a orugant oc eu fo,⁸ a medylya6⁹ g6rth6ynebu y Arthur. Ac odyna g6edy dechreu ymlad, aerua a 6naethant or Brytanyeit gan eu hamdiffyn ehunein yn wra6l; kanys o wasca6t y g6yd yn eu kanhorth6y yd oedynt yn aruer o daflu 30 ergytyeu,¹⁰ ac y gochelynt 6ynteu¹¹ ergytyeu y Brytanyeit.

(Ch. 5). 2 wnelhynt, 3 hvel, 4 y, 5 om., 6 a orue om., 7 om., 8 yd amblygu y ymgarn

(Ch. 6). 1 dydyeu, 2 a elwir, 3 ohonu, 4 yn yr afonoed add., 5 y rei, 6 fo yn y lle, 7 hyt pan deuthant hyt, 8 oc eu fo a orugant, 9 odyno add., 10 kanys o wasgavt y gyd yn eu kanhorth6y yd aruerynt, 11 om.

A phan welas Arthur hynny, yd erchis ynteu trychu y coet or parth h̄ennō yr ॥6yn, a chymryt y kyffyon hynny ar trāsprenneu¹² ac eu gossot yn eu kylch, ac eu ḡarchae yno megys na cheffynt vynet odyno, yny ymrodynt idaō, neu yny vydyst veirō o newyn. A 5 ḡedy daruot ḡneuthur y kae, y dodes Arthur y varchogyon yn vydinoed yg kylch y ॥6yn. Ac yno y buant uelly tri dieu a their nos. A phan welas y Saeson nat oed dim b̄yt gantunt, rac eu marō oll o newyn 6ynt a odologyssant¹³ y Arthur y¹⁴ gellōg yn ryd 10 y eu ॥ogeū y uynet y eu ḡlat; ac adaō idaō ynteu eu heur ac eu haryant ac eu holl s̄llt, a theyrnget idaō bop¹⁵ bl̄ydyn o Germania; a chadarnhau hynny gan rodi ḡystlon. Ac Arthur a gauas yn y gyghor kymryt hynny y gantunt, ac eu gellōg¹⁶ y eu ॥ogeū. 15

7. Ac ual¹ yd oedynt² yn r̄ygaō moroed yn mynet tu ae ḡlat, y bu ediar gantunt ḡneuthur³ yr amot h̄ennō ac Arthur; a throssi eu h̄yleu drachefyn parth ac yny Prydein, a dyuot y draeth Totneis⁴ yr tir, a dechreu anreithaō y ḡladoed hyt yn Hafren, a ॥ad y tir- 20 diwollodron a orugant. Ac odyna y kymerassant eu hynt hyt yg Kaer Vadon, ac eisted 6rth y gaer, ac ymlada hi. A ḡedy menegi hynny⁵ y Arthur, ryfedu a oruc meint eu t̄yll ac eu hyskymundaōt,⁶ ac yn diannot crogi eu ḡystlon. Ac ymadaō a oruc ar Yscoteit ac ar 25 Fficheit yd oed yn y⁷ kywarsagu. A bryssyaō a oruc y distryō y Saeson. Goualus oed am adaō Howel ap⁸ Emry Lydaō yn glaf yg Kaer Alclut o 6rthrōm heint. Ac or diōed ḡedy dyuot hyt y lle y ḡelei y Saeson, y dywaōt ef ual hyn: “Kany⁹ bo teilōg gan yr 30 ysgymunedigyon Saeson¹⁰ cadō ffyd 6rthyf i,¹¹ miui

(Ch. 6). 12 travs, 13 adologyssant, 14 eu, 15 heuŷt pop, 16 gollvg

(Ch. 7). 1 mal, 2 oedyn, 3 wneuthur, 4 traeth tutneis, 5 hyn, 6 hyseum- yndaōt, 7 yny eu, 8 hvel mab, 9 kyny, 10 t̄yllwyr anudonav̄l add., 11 vrthym ni?

a gadwaf ffyd 6rth Du6; ac y gyt a hynny oe nerth¹² ynteu a dialaf hedi6 waet vyg ki6ta6twyr arnadunt.¹³ G6isg6ch a6ch arueu, wyr, g6isg6ch, ac yn 6ra6l kyrch6n y bratwyr hynn. Heb petruster¹⁴ gan ganhorth6y Crist 5 ni a orfyd6n.'

8. A g6edy dywedut o Arthur hynny, Dyfric archescob Kaer Lion ar Wysc a saf6d ar ben bryn goruchel, a dywedut ual hynn a oruc : " Ha wyrda," heb ef, " y rei yssyd ardercha6c o gristonoga6l ffyd ohona6ch, 10 kyuod6ch; koffe6ch waet a6ch ki6tawt6yr, yr h6nn yssyd ellygedic dr6y urat y Paganyeit racco; kanys tragy6yda6l waratwyd y6 y6ch, onyt ymrod6ch y amdiffyn a6ch g6lat ach rydit. Ac 6rth hynny ymled6ch dros a6ch g6lat, ac or byd reit ywch, diodef6ch ageu drosti. 15 Kanys yr agheu honno a vyd budugolyaeth a buched yr eneit. P6y bynhac hedi6 a el y agheu, ef ehunan a ymryd yn wiraberth y Du6, y g6r a vu teil6g ganta6 rodi y eneit dros y vrodyr. Ac 6rth hynny p6y bynhac ohana6ch a lader yn yr ymlad h6nn, bit yr agheu honno 20 yn benyt ida6 ac yn vadeueint oe bechodeu, y dan amot nas gochelo, or dam6eina y dyuot."

9. A g6edy kymryt bendyth y g6r h6nn6, bryssya6 a oruc pa6b y wisga6 eu harueu ymdanunt, ac ufudhau y gymenediweu yr archescob. Ac yna Arthur a wisca6d 25 ymdana6 lluruc a oed teil6g y vrenhin. Penffestin eureit yskythredic ac ar6yd dreic a adass6yt oe benn. Taryan a gymerth ar y ysg6yd, yr honn a el6it G6enn, yn yr hon yd oed del6 yr argl6ydes Veir yn yskythredic; kanys ym pop yg a reit y gal6ei ef arnei ac y coffei. Ac a r6ym6yt 30 a Chaletu6lch y gledyf goreu, yr h6nn a wnathoedit yn ynyss Avallach. Gleif a deck[a]a6d y deheu ef, yr h6nn a el6it Ron; vchel oed h6nn6 a Pydan ac adas y aerua.

Ac odyna ḡedy llunyaethu y bydinoed o bop parth, y Saeson yn her̄yd eu deuāt kyrchu yn lē a ̄naethant, ac ar hyt y dyd yn ̄rāl ḡrth̄ynebu yr Brytanyeit. Ac or diwed ḡedy trossi yr heul ar y dyḡydedigaeth, achub mynyd mār, a oed yn agos udunt, 5 a ̄naeth y Saeson, a chynal h̄onn̄ yn lle castell udunt; a chan ymdiret yn amylder eu nifer tybygu bot yn digān vdunt o gedernit y mynyd. A ḡedy d̄y whole or heul y dyd arall rac ̄yneb, Arthur ae lu a eskynnād pen y mynyd. Ac eissoes llâber o wyr a golles ef; kanys hās 10 oed yr Saeson o penn y mynyd argywedu yr Brytanyeit [noc yr Brytanyeit] yg ḡrth̄yneb y mynyd argywedu yr Saeson. Ac or diwed gan v̄y whole grym a llafur, ḡedy caffel or Brytanyeit penn y mynyd, yn y lle ̄ynt a dangossassant eu deheuoed yr Saeson. Ac yn erbyn 15 hynny y Saeson yn ̄rāl a ossodassant eu bronoed yn eu ḡrth̄yneb ̄ynte, ac oc eu holl angerd ymgynhal yn eu herbŷn. A ḡedy treulāl llâber or dyd uelly, llidiāl a oruc Arthur rac h̄yret y ḡelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idāl. Ac ar hynny noethi Caletūlch a oruc, 20 a gal̄ en̄ yr argl̄ydes Ueir; ac o vuan ruthur kyrchu y lle tēaf y ḡelei vydinoed y Saeson. A ph̄y bynhac a gyfarffei ac ef, gan al̄ en̄ Dūa o vn dyrnāt y lladei. Ac ny orffōyssād ar vn ruthur honno, hyt pan ladād a Chaletf̄lch ehun trugein wyr a phet̄var can ̄r. A 25 ḡedy ḡelet or Brytanyeit hynny, tēhau eu toruoed a wnaethant ̄ynte ae ymlit ynte, ac o bop parth udunt ḡneuthur aerua. Ac yn y lle y dyḡydydassant Golgrim a Bald̄lf y vrāt a llâber o vilyoed y gyt ac ̄ynt. A phan welas Cheldric perigyl y gedymdeithon, yn y lle 30 heb annot ymchoelut a oruc y gyt ar rei ereill ar ff.

10. A ḡedy caffel o Arthur y uudugolyaeth honno,

^a en̄ dū: MS. dū dū.

ef a erchis y Gadôr iarll Kernyw erlit y Saeson, hyt tra vryssyei ynteu yr Alban. Kanys menegi ar daroed idaôr ry dyuot yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit y ymlad a Chaer Alclut, y llê yd adawsei ef Howel y nei yn glaf. Ac 5 6rth hynny y bryssyei ynteu yno rac caffel y gaer arnaôr. Ac odyna Kadôr tywyssaôc Kernyw a deg mil y gyt ac ef a ymlynâôd y Saeson. Ac nyt yn eu hol yd aeth, namyn achubeit eu llogeu yn gyntaf a oruc, rac caffel onadunt diogelôch nac amdiffyn or llogeu. A gôedy 10 caffel eu llogeu ohonaôr, dodi a oruc y marchogyon aruâôc goreu a oed ar y helôr yndunt, rac caffel or Saeson ford udunt, os yno y kyrchynt. A gôedy daruot cadarnhau y llogeu arnunt uelly, ar vrys ymchoelut a oruc ar y elynyon ac eu llad heb drugared, gan eilenôr 15 gorchymynneu Arthur amdanunt. Rei o deudyblic boen a gyôarsegit, a rei onadunt o oergrynedic callonneu a ffloyn yr coedyd ac yr llwyneu, ereill yr mynyded ar gogofeu y geissaôr yspeit y achbanegu eu hoedel. Ac ordiwed gôedy nat oed udunt neb ryôr diogelôch, yr hyn 20 a dihegis onadunt yn vriôedic, gynt a ymgynullassant^a hyt yn ynys Danet. A hyt yno tywyssaôc Kernyw ae hymlynâôd gan eu llad. Ac ny orffoôyssâôd hyt pan las Cheldric; ac eu kymell gynteu oll y lab gan rodi gôystlon.

25 11. Ac yna gôedy kadarnhau tagnefed ar Saeson, yn y llê mynet a oruc yn ol Arthur hyt yg Kaer Alclut, yr hon ry daroed y Arthur y rydhau y gan yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit. Ac odyna y kyrchaôd Arthur ae lu hyt y Mureif, y wlat a elôr o enôr arall Reget. Ac yno y gôarchaeâôd 30 ef yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit, y rei kyn no hynny a ymladyssynt yn erbyn Arthur. A gôedy eu dyuot ar ffo hyt y wlat honno, gynt a aethant hyt yn Lyn

^a MS. ymgynullassant.

Lumonwy, a chymryt yr ynysed a oedynt yn y llyn yn gedernit udunt. Kanys tri ugein ynys a oedynt yn y llyn, a thri ugein karrec, a nyth eryr ym pop karrec. A rei hynny pop Kalan Mei a doynt y gyt. Ac ar y lleis a genynt yna dynyon y wlat honno a adnebydei y dambeineu 5 a delei yn y vlydyn rac 6yneb. Ac y gyt a hynny tri ugein auon a redei yr llyn. Ac ny redei or llyn namyn yn avon yr mor. Ac yr ynyssed hynny y foyssynt y gelynyon y geissa6 amdiffyn o gedernit y llyn. Ac ny dygrynoes udunt namyn ychydic. Kanys kynnulla6 10 llugeu a wnaeth Arthur, a chylchynu yr avonoed ar llyn, hyt na chaffei neb vynet odyno. A phymtheg ni[w]arna6t y bu yn eu g6archae uelly, hyt pan vuant veir6 hyt ar vilyoed.

12. Ac mal yd oed Arthur yn eu g6archae uelly, 15 nachaf vrenhin I6erdon yn dyuot a llyghes ganta6 ac amylder o bobloed achyfyeithydyon yn borth yr Yscotteit ar Freinc. Ac 6rth hynny ymada6 a oruc Arthur ar llyn, ac ymchoelut y arueu yn y G6ydyl, ar rei hynny gan eu llad heb drugared a gymhell6ys ar ffo 20 y eu g6lat. A g6edy y uudugolyaeth honno ymchoylut draegefyn elch6yl y vynnu dileu kenedyl yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit hyt ar dim. A g6edy nat arbedei neb megys y keffit, ymgynnnulla6 y gyt a 6naethant escyb y druan wlat honno y gyt ae hyscolheigon or a oed darystygedic 25 udunt, y gyt ac escyrn y seint ac eu creireu. Ac yn troet noethon y deuthant hyt rac bron Arthur, ac erchi y drugared dros atlibin y bobyl honno, ac ar eu glinyeu y wedia6 hyt pan drugarhaei 6rthunt. Kanys diga6n o berigyl a dr6c ry 6nadoed udunt; kanyt oed reit ida6 30 dilit hyt ar dim yr hyn a dihagyssei onadunt. A g6edy erchi trugared onadunt ar y wed honno, wylia6 o warder a oruc Arthur, a rodi yr g6yrsa seint hynny eu harch.

13. A ḡedy daruot^a hynny, syllu a oruc Hôvel uab Emyr Lyda⁶ ac enryfedu ansa⁶d y llyn, y sa⁶l avonoed ar sa⁶l ynyssed ar sa⁶l gerric ar sa⁶l nythot eryrot a oed yn y llyn. Ac ual yd oed yn ryfedu hynny, Arthur a dy⁶a⁶t 5 6rtha⁶ bot llyn arall yny 6lat honno oed ryfedach no honno. Ac nyt oed bell odyno, ac ugeint troetued yn y hyt, a vgeint yn y llet, a hynny yn bedrogyl; a phedeir kenedyl o bysca⁶t amry⁶ yndi; ac ny cheffit byth un or rei hynny yn ran y gilyd. “Ac y mae llyn 10 arall,” heb ef, “yg Kymry ar lan Hafren, a dynyon y wlat honno ae geil⁶ Lyn Lia⁶n. Ar llyn honno, pan vo y mor yn lla⁶n, y kymer y d⁶f⁶r ynda⁶ ac y ll⁶nc megys morger⁶yn, hyt na chudyo y glanneu. Ac y gyt ac yd 15 ymchoelo y mor draegefyn y dreia⁶, y g⁶rthyt y llyn y d⁶f⁶r a gymerei yndi, ac y b⁶rv⁶ ohonei megys mynyd, hyt pan el dros y glanneu. Ac o damweinei yna vot neb yn sefyll ae wyneb att y llyn, o chyuarfhei dim o asgellwrych h⁶nn⁶ ae dillat,^b ana⁶d vydei ida⁶ ymdianc, hyt nas sucknei y llyn ef ynda⁶. Ac o bydei ynteu ae 20 gefyn atta⁶, yr nesset vei idi yn sefyll, nyt argy⁶edei ida⁶ dim.”

14. A ḡedy hedychu ar Yscotteit y brenhin a aeth hyt yg Kaer Efra⁶c, y anrydedu ḡylua y Nadolic a oed yn agos. A phan welas ef yr egl⁶ysseu ḡedy eu distry⁶ 25 hyt y lla⁶r, dolurya⁶ yn ua⁶r a oruc. Kanys ḡedy dehol Sans⁶n^c archescob ar ḡyrda ma⁶r enrydedus ereill y gyt ac ef, llosci yr egl⁶ysseu ar temleu a 6nathoed y Saeson, a distry⁶ ḡassanaeth Du⁶ ym pop lle. Kanys pan deuthant yr anreithwyr hynny, y foes Sams⁶n archescob a seith escyb y gyt ac ef hyt yn Lyda⁶. Ac 30 yno yn enrydedus yd erbynny⁶yt hyt y dyd di6ethaf oe

^a MS. darua⁶t.

^b MS. dillan.

^c leg. Sams⁶n.

vuched. Ac yno ḡedy gal̄b y gyt or yscolheigon ac or bobyl o gyt gyghor pāb yg kyt ef a ossodes Priaf y gaplan ehunan yn archescob yg Kaer Efrāc. Ar egl̄ysseu dīreidedic hyt y Pār ef ae hatnewyd̄ys, ac ae hadurnād^a o grevydusson genveinoed o wyr a 5 ḡraged. Ar ḡyrd a bonhedigyon dlyedāc a ry deholassei y Saeson ac a ducsynt tref eu tat, ef a rodes y bāp eu dlyyet ac eu hanryded.

15. Ac ym plith y rei hynny yd oedynt tri broder, a hanhoedynt vrenhināl dlyyet, nyt amgen, Leu uab 10 Kynuarch ac Vryen uab Kynuarch ac Arān uab Kynuarch. A chyn dyuot gormes y Saeson, y rei hynny a dylynt tȳyssogaeth y ḡledi hynny. Ac yr ḡyr hynny, megys y bāp or dlyedogyon ereill, ef a vynnād talu eu dlyyet. Ac 6rth hynny ef a rodes y 15 Arān vab Kynuarch Yscotlont. Ac y Vryen y rodes Reget dan y tervyneu. Ac y Leu uab Kynuarch (y ḡr yd oed y chwaer gantāl yr yn oes Emrys Wledic, ac yd oed idāl deu vab ohonei, Gwalchmei a Medrāt), y h̄enn̄ y rodes tyw[y]ssogaeth Lodoneis a ḡledi ereill a 20 berthynai attei. Ac or dīed ḡedy d̄yn yr ynys ar y theruyneu yn hollāl ar y^b hen teilygdāt ae hedychu, ef a gymerth ḡreic. Sef oed y hen̄ Ḡen̄h̄yfar, yr honn a oed o uonhedickaf genedyl ḡyr Rufein, ac a uagyssit yn Ilys Kad̄r iarll Kernȳ. Pryt honno ae 25 theḡch a orchyfygei ynys Prydein.

16. A phan deuth y ḡan̄yn araf rac 6yneb, ef a barattoes Ilyges ac a [a]eth hyt yn Īerdon. Kanys honno a vynei y goreskyn idāl ehun. Ac ual y deuth yr tir, nachaf Gillam̄ri vrenhin Īerdon ac amylder [o] 30 bobyl gantāl yn dyuot yn erbyn Arthur wrth ymlad ac ef.

^a MS. hardurnād.

^b ar y : ae MS.

A ḡedy dechreu ymlad, yn y lle y bobyl noeth diarueu a ymchoelyssant drachefyn ar ffo yr lle y keffynt wascāt ac amdiffyn. Ac ny bu vn gohir yn dala Gillam̄ri ae gymell ̄rth ewyllys Arthur. Ac ̄rth hynny holl 5 twyssogyon Īerdon rac ofyn a doethant, ac o agreift a ymrodassant oc eu bod yn wyr y Arthur.

17. A ḡedy daruot idā oresgyn holl Īerdon ae hedychu, Arthur a aeth hyt yn Islont yn y lyges. A ḡedy ymlad ar bobyl honno, ef ae goresgynn̄ys. Ac odyna dros yr 10 ynyssed ereill yd aeth y glot ef, ac na allei vn teyrnas ḡrth̄ynebu idā. Doldan brenhin Godlont a Ḡinwas vrenhin Orch oc eu bod a deuthant y ̄rhau idā gan dalu teyrnget idā bop bl̄ydyn. Ac odyna ḡedy llithrā y gayaf h̄enn̄ heibā, Arthur a ymchoelād 15 drachefyn hyt yn ynys Prydein, y atnēydu ansād y deyrnas ac y gadarnhau tagnefed yndi. Ac yno y bu deudeg mlyned ar vntu.

18. Ac yna [y] ḡahād attā marchogyon dēr clotuār o arall wladoed a phell teyrnassoed ac amyhlau 20 y deulu, megys yd oed kyghoruyn gan teyrnassoed pell y wrthā meint clot y lys, a ryodres^a y teulu ae molyant. A cheissā a wnaei bāp kyffelybu a discyblu y wrth lys Arthur, ac y ̄rth y varchogyon ae deulu. Kanyt oed dim gan vn dlyedāc yn y teyrnassoed pell y ̄rthunt, 25 ony ellynt ymgeffelybu a marchogyon Arthur oc eu ḡiscoed ac oc eu harueu ac oc eu marchogaeth. A ḡedy ehedec y glot ae volyant ae haelder dros eithafoed y byt, ofyn a gymerassant brenhined tramor teyrnassoed racdā, rac y dyuot y oresgyn eu kyfoetheu ac eu 30 ḡladoed. Ac ̄rth hynny rac gofeilon a phrydereu, sef a wnaei pāb ohonunt atnewydu y keyryd ar dinassoed ar tyreu ar kestȳl, ac adeilat ereill o nēyd yn lleoed cryno.

^a MS. rootdres.

Sef achaōs oed hynny, o delei Arthur am eu penn, megys y keffynt y lleoed kadarn hynny yn amdiffyn, or bei reit.

19. A gōedy gōybot o Arthur bot y ofyn vell y ar baōp, ymardyrchael a oruc ynteu a medylyāō goresgyn yr holl Europa. Sef oed hynny, trayan y byt. Ac odyna 5 parattoi lluges a oruc. Ac yn gyntaf kyrchu Lychlyn a oruc, hyt pan vei Leu uab Kynuarch y daō gan y chwaer a ōnelei yn vrenhin yno. Kanys nei [v]ab whaer oed Leu uab Kynuarch y vrenhin Lychlyn a uuassei uarō yna. Ac ef a gymynassei y urenhinyaeth y Leu y nei; 10 ac ny buassei teilōg gan y Lychlynwyr hynny, namyn gōneuthur Ricōlf yn vrenhin arnadunt a chadarnhau eu kestyll ac eu dinassoed, gan dybygu gallu gōrthōynebu y Arthur. Ac yn yr amser hōnnō yd oed Walchmei uab Leu yn deudegmlōyd, gōedy y rodi oe ewythyr ef yg 15 gwassanaeth Suplius bab Rufein. Ac y gan Suplius y kymerth ef arueu yn gyntaf. A gōedy dyfot Arthur, megys y dybōespōyt uchot, y traeth Lychlyn, Ricōlff a holl uarchogyon y wlat y gyt ac ef a deuth yn erbyn Arthur, a dechreu ymlad ac ef. A gōedy gellōg llaber 20 o greu a gwaet o bop part[h], or diwed y Brytanyeit a oruuant gan lad Ricōlf a llaber oe wyr y gyt ac ef. A gōedy caffel or Brytanyeit y uudugolyaeth, kyrchu y dinassoed a orugant ac eu llosci, a gōascaru eu pobloed. Ac ny orfoyssassant hyt pan daruu udunt goreskyn holl 25 Lychlyn a Denmarc. A gōedy daruot hynny, ef a urdaōd Leu uab Kynuarch yn vrenhin yn Lychlyn.

20. Ac odyna yd hōylaōd ynteu ae lyges hyt yn Freinc. A gōedy kyweiraō y toruoed, dechreu anreithaō y wlat o bop part a orugant. Ac yn yr amser hōnnō 30 yd oed Frollo yn tywyssāōc yn Freinc y dan Les amheraōdōr Rufein yn [y] llwyfaō. A gōedy clybot o Frollo dyuotedigaeth Arthur, ef a gynullaōd holl uarchogyon Freinc, ac a deuth y ymlad ac Arthur; ac

ny allgys gwrthgynebu ida⁶. Kanys gyt ac Arthur yd oed holl ieuencit yr ynyssed a oresgynassei. Ac wrth hynny kymeint o lu a dywedit y uot ganta⁶ ac yd oed ana⁶ y vn tywyssac neu y neb y erbynya⁶ na 5 goruot arna⁶. Ac y gyt ac ef hefyt yd oed y ran oreu o Freinc, yr honn a ry 'nathoed y haelder yn rwymedic oe garyat ynteu. A gwyd y gwelet o Frollo y dygwyda⁶ ef yn y ran waethaf or ymlad, yn y lle ada⁶ y maes a oruc y gyt ac ychydic o nifer, a ffo hyt ym Paris; ac 10 yno kynulla⁶ y wasgaredic bobyl atta⁶ a chadarnhau y gaer, a mynu elch⁶yl ymlad yn erbyn Arthur o ganhorth⁶[y] y gymodogyon. Yn dirybud y deuth Arthur ae lu y warchae ynteu yn y dinas. A gwyd llithra⁶ mis heiba⁶, dolurya⁶ a oruc Frollo o welet y 15 bobyl yn aballu rac newyn. A gofyn a oruc y Arthur a vynnei eu dyuot ell teu y ymlad; ar h⁶n a orfei onadunt, kymerei gyfoeth y llall heb lad neb or deu lu. Sef acha⁶s y kynnigyei ef hynny. Gwr maer hyd⁶f oed Frollo, ac anueitral y leeder ae gedernyt. Ac o acha⁶s 20 ymdiret yn y nerthoed yd archei ef y Arthur dyuot yn neilltuedic y ymlad ac ef, o tybygu kaffel ford y iechyt o hynny. A llaben uu Arthur wrth y genad⁶ri honno. Ac yn y lle anuon at Frollo y dywedut y vot yn dyuot, ac yn baract y wneuthur yr amot h⁶nn⁶ ac ef ae gad⁶.

25 21. A gwyd kadarnhau yr amot h⁶nn⁶ o bop parth, gynt a deuthant ell teu hyt y myn⁶ ynys odieithyr y dinas; ar pobloed o bop parth yn aros y syllu py damwein a darffei y rydunt. Ac yno y deuthant yn hard wedus gyweir ar deu uarch enryfed y meint ae buanet, 30 hyt nat oed para⁶t y neb adnabot y b⁶y y delei y uudugolyaeth onadunt. A gwyd sefyll onadunt a drychafel y harwydon o bop parth, dangos^a yr

^a MS. A dangos.

ysparduneu yr meirych a orugant, a gossot o bop vn ar y gilyd y dyrnodeu m̄yhaf a elliſt. Ac eissoes kywreinach yd arwed̄ys Arthur y leif gan ochel dyrnaſt Frollo. Arthur ae ḡant ym pen y vron, ac yn her̄yd y nerth ef ae byryaſt hyt y daear. Ac yn y ll̄e noethi y 5 gledyf a oruc, a mynu llad y ben. A Frollo a gyfodes yn gyflym, ac a gleif gossot ar varch Arthur yn y d̄yvron dyrnaſt agheuaſl, hyt pan dyḡydydassant Arthur ae varch yr ll̄aſr. A phan welsant y brenhin yn syrthaw, abreid vu eu hattal heb torri eu hamot, 10 ac o un vryt kyrchu y Freinc. Ac mal yd oedynt yn torri eu kygreir, nachaf Arthur yn kyuodi yn gyflym wychyr, ac yn drychafel y taryan ac yn kyrchu Frollo. A sefyll yn gyfagos a wnaethant, a nēidyaſl dyrnodeu, a llafuryaſl pob un ageu^a y gilyd. Ac or diſed Frollo 15 a gauas kyfle; a tharaſl Arthur yn y tal a 6naeth. A phei na ry bylei y cledyf ar vodr̄yeu y benfestin, ef a vuassei agheuaſl or dyrnaſt h̄ennn^b. A ḡedy ḡelet o Arthur y waet yn cochi y taryan ae arueu, ennynu o flamychedic lit ac o 6ychyr irlloned a oruc. A 20 drycha[fel] Caletf̄lch ac oe holl nerthoed gossot a oruc, ar helym ar penfestin a phen Frollo a holltes yn deu hanner hyt y d̄y y sc̄ydyd. Ac or dyrnaſt h̄ennn^b dyḡydaſl a wnaeth Frollo, ac ae sodleu maedu y daear,^c a gell̄g y eneit gan yr 6ybyr. A ḡedy honni hynny 25 dros y lluoed, bryssyaſl a oruc y kiſtaſtwyr, ac agori porth y dinas ae rodi y Arthur.

22. A ḡedy caffel y uudugolyaeth honno o Arthur, ranu y lu a oruc yn deu hanner. Y neill ran oe lu a rodes y Hoſel uab Emvr Lydaſl, 6rth vynet y darest̄g 30 Ḡbitart ty6yssaſl Peitaſl. Ac ynteu ehun a[r] ran arall gantaſl y oresgyn y ḡlatoed ereill yn eu kylch. Ac yn y

^a MS. ogeu

^b MS. honn^b.

^c MS. daeayar.

He y deuth Howel vab Emyr Lyda⁶ yr wlat. Ef a gyrch⁶ys y keyryd ar dinassoed; a G⁶ittart g⁶edy llaber o ymladeu yn ofalus a gymhell⁶ys y 6rhau y Arthur; ac odyna G⁶asg⁶in o flam a hayarn a anreith⁶ys; ae 5 ty⁶ssogyon a darestyg⁶ys y Arthur.

23. A g⁶edy llithra⁶ na⁶ mlyned heiba⁶, a daruot y Arthur oresgyn holl wladoed Freinc 6rth y vedyant ehun, ef a deuth elch⁶yl y Baris. Ac yno y dellis lys. Ac yno g⁶edy gal⁶ pa⁶b or yscolheigon ar lleygyon, 10 kadarnhau a 6naeth ansa⁶d y teyrnas, a gossot kyfreitheu, a chadarnhau hed⁶ch dros yr holl teyrnas. Ac yna y rodes ef y Vedwyr y bentrullyat Normandi a Fflandrys. Ac y Gei y bens⁶yd⁶r y rodes ef yr Angi⁶ a Pheitta⁶, a llaber o wladoed ereill yr dlyyedogyon ereill 15 a oedynt yn y wassanaethu. Ac odyna g⁶edy hedychu a thagnefedu pob lle or dinassoed ar pobloed uelly, pan yttoed y g⁶an⁶yn yn dyuot, Arthur a ymhoeles y ynys Prydein.

24. Ac ual yd oed g⁶ylua y Sulg⁶yn yn dyuot, g⁶edy 20 y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny o bop lle, y gyt a dirua⁶ le6enyd ef a vedyly⁶ys dala llys yn ynys Prydein, a g⁶isga⁶ y goron am y ben, a g⁶aha⁶d atta⁶ y brenhined arty⁶ssogyon a oedynt wyr ida⁶ o bop lle a orescynnyssei, 6rth enrydedu g⁶ylua y Sulg⁶yn yn vrenhina⁶l 25 enrydedus, ac y atne⁶ydu kadarnaf tagnefed y rydunt. A g⁶edy menegi ohona⁶ y ved⁶l y gyghorwyr ae an⁶lylyt, ef a gauas yn y gyghor dala y lys yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc. Kanys or dinassoed kyvoethockaf oed ac adassaf yr ueint wylua honno. Sef acha⁶s oed. Or neill 30 parth yr dinas y redei yr auon uonhedic honno Wysc. Ac ar hyt honno y doynt y brenhined, a delhynt dros y moroed, yn y llogeu hyt y dinas. Ac or parth arall g⁶eirglodyeu a foresti yn y theckau. Ac y gyt a hynny adeiladeu a llysoed brenhina⁶l a oedynt yndi oe my⁶n,

a thei eureit, megys nat oed yn y teyrnassoed tref a gynhebyckyt y Rufein o ryodres namyn hi. Ac y gyt a hynny ardercha^c oed o d⁶y egl⁶ys arbenhic; vn o honunt yn ardyrchafedic yn enryded y Vyl verthyr, a ch⁶feint o werydon yn talu molyant y Du⁶ yndi yn 5 wastat dyd a nos yn enrydedus urdasseid; arall a oed yn enryded y Aaron kedymdeith y merthyr h⁶nn⁶, a ch⁶fent yn honno a ganonwyr reola⁶dyr. Ac y gyt a hynny y dryded archescoba^c a phenaf yn ynys Prydein oed. Ac y gyt a hynny ardercha^c oed o deu cant yscol 10 o athra⁶on a doethon, a ed[ne]bydynt kerdetyat y syr ac amryfaelon gelfydodeu ereill. Kanys yn yr amser h⁶nn⁶ y keffit yndi y seith gelfydylt; a[r] rei hynny dr⁶y gerdetyat y syr a venegynt y Arthur IIa⁶er or damweineu a delhynt rac IIa⁶. Or ach⁶ysson [hynny] oll y mynn⁶ys 15 Arthur yno dala IIys. Ac odyna gell⁶g kenadeu dr⁶y amryfaelon teyrnassoed a g⁶aha⁶d pa⁶b a orucp⁶yt o deyrnassoed Ffreinc ac o amryfaelon ynyssed yr eiga⁶n, o[r] a dylyynt dyuot yr IIys.

25. Ac 6rth y wys honno y deuthant yno : Ara6n uab 20
Kynuarch brenhin Yscotlont, Vryen y vra6t brenhin
Reget, Kat6alla6n Pa6[h]ir brenhin G6yned, Kad6r
Nemenic tywyssac Kerny6. Tri archescob ynys
Prydein : archescob Lundein, ac archescob Kaer Efra6c,
a Dyfric archescop Kaer Lion ar Wysc; a phenaf 25
onadunt oed dan bab Rufein, ac y gyt a hynny eglur
oed oe wassanaeth ae uuched; kanys pob kyfry6 glefyd
or a uei ar dyn, ef ae g6aretei dr6y y wedi. Ac y gyt
a hynny 6ynt a deuthant y ty6yssogyon or dinassoed
bonhedic, nyt amgen, Morud iarll Kaer Loy6, Meuruc 30
o Gaer Wyragon, Anara6t o Am6ythic, Kynuarch iarll
Kaer Geint, Arthal o Warwic, Owein o Gaer Leon,
Ionathal o Gaer Idor, Cursalem o Gaer Lyr, G6alla6c
ap Leena6c o Salsbri, Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac odieithyr

hynny lläger o wyrda, nyt oed lei eu boned nac eu
 teilygdaôt nor rei hynny, nyt amgen, Dunaôt Vôr uab
 Pabo post Prydein, Keneu uab Coel, Peredur uab
 Elidyr, Grufud uab Vogoet, Rein uab Elaôt, Edelin
 5 vab Keledaôc, Kyngar uab Bangaôc, Kynnar Gorbanyon,
 Miscoet Cloffaôc, Run uab Nôython, Kynuelyn [uab]
 Trunyaôc, Kadell uab Vryen, Kyndelic uab Nôython.
 Ac y gyt a hynny lläger o wyrda a oed ryhir eu henôi.
 Ac y gyt a hynny or ynyssed yn eu kylch : Gillamôri
 10 brenhin Iwerdon, Melwas brenhin Islont, Doldan brenhin
 Gotlont Gôynw brenhin Orc, Leu uab Kynuarch
 brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc. Ac o
 Ffreinc y deuthant : Hodlyn tywyssaôc Ruthyn,
 Leodgar iarll Bôlbyn, Bedôyr pentrullyat duc Normandi,
 15 Borel o Cenomaôs, Kei pensyddôr duc yr Angiôs, Gôittart
 o Beittaôs, ar deudec gogyfarch o Freinc, a Gerein
 Garannôys oc eu blaen yn dywyssaôc arnadunt, Howel
 uab Emry Lydaôs brenhin Brytaen Vechan, a lläger o
 6ynda a oed darestygedic idaôs y gyt ar ueint darmerth a
 20 chyniret mulyoed a meirych, megys yd oed dyrys eu
 datkanu a ryhir eu hyscriuenu. Ac odieithyr hynny
 ny thrigywys un tywyssaôc y tu hôn yr Yspauen ny delei
 6rth y wys honno. Py ryfed oed hynny ? Haelder
 Arthur ae glot ae volyant yn ehedec dros y byt a
 25 dynassei baôp yn rô[y]medic oe garyat.

26. Ac or diwed gôedy ymgynnullaôs paôb yr gaer ar
 6ylua yn dyuot, yr archescyb a elwit yr llys 6rth wiscaôs
 y goron am ben y brenhin. Ac odyna Dyfric archescob
 a gant yr offeren. Kanys yn y archescobty yd oedit
 30 yn dala llys. Ac or diwed gôedy gôisgaôs y vrenhinaôl
 wisc am y brenhin a theckau y ben o goron y teyrnas ae
 deheu or deyrnwialen, ef a ducpôyt yr eglôys benaf, ac
 or tu deheu ac or tu asseu idaôs y deu archescob yny
 gynhal. Ac y gyt a hynny petôar brenhin, nyt amgen,

brenhin yr Alban, a brenhin Dyuet, a brenhin Gwyned, a brenhin Kernyw, yn herwyd eu breint ac eu dylyet, yn arwein petgar cledyf eureit noethon yn y vlaen. Ac y gyt a hynny llawer o gwyfenoed amryfaelon vrdassoed yn eu processio o pop parth yn ol ac ym blaen yn kanu 5 amryfaelon gywydolaethu ac organ. Ac or parth arall yd oed y vrenhines yn y brenhinwisc, ac escyb o bop parth¹ yn y dŵyn hitheu y eglwys y mynachesseu,² a phedeir graged y petwar brenhin, a dywedassam ni uchot, yn arwein pedeir clomen³ purwen⁴ yn y blaen yn 10 herwyd eu breint gynteu, ar graged yn enrydedus gan diruâr lebenyd yn kerdet yn y hol.⁵ Ac or diwed gwydy daruot y processio⁶ ym pob vn or dŵy eglwys, 15 kyndecket a chyndigrifet y kenit y kywydolaethu⁷ ar organ ac na gydynt y marchogyon py le gyntaf y kyrchynt,⁸ namyn yn torfoed pob eilwers y kerdynt y honn yr aŵr hon ac yr llall gwydy hynny. A phei treulit y dyd yn gŵb yn dŵywaŵl wassanaeth, ny magei dim blinder y neb. Ac or diwed gwydy daruot yr offereneu ym pob vn or dŵy eglwys, y brenhin ar 20 vrenhines a diodassant eu brenhinwisgoed y amdanunt.⁹

27. Ac odyna y brenhin a aeth yr neuad ar gŵyr oll y gyt ac ef. Ar vrenhines ar graged oll y gyt a hi¹ y neuad y vrenhines, gan gadw hen gynefaet Tro, pan enrydedynt y gwyllau eu maŵr, y gŵyr y gyt ar gŵyr yn 25 bwyta, ar graged y gyt ar graged yn wahanedic. A gwydy kyflebau² paŵb y³ eisted yn herwyd y deissyfei y deilygtaet, Kei bennsydwr yn wiskedic o ermynwisc, a mil⁴ y gyt ac ef o vn ryw adurn a hynny⁵ o veibon dylyedogyon, a gychwynassant y wassanaethu or gegin 30 anregyon. Ac or parth arall Bedwyr a mil o veibon

(Ch. 26). 1 idi add., 2 machesseu, 3 coloinen, 4 gyvnyon, 5 yn ol, 6 prossessivn, 7 kywydolyaethu, 8 a gerdynt, 9 y amdanadunt

⁷Ch. 27). 1 hitheu, 2 kyfyavnheu (?) 3 yn, 4 mil o wyr, 5 ac ynteu

gŵynda y gyt ac ynteu yn wisgedic o amryuaelon wiscoed yn gŵassanaethu gŵirodeu or vedgell. Ac or parth arall yn llys y vrenhines aneiryf o amylder gŵassanaethwyr yn wisgedic o amryfaelon wisgoed yn herwyd eu defaest 5 yn talu eu gŵassanaeth yn diwall. Ar petheu hynny ae ryotres pei ascrifenn, gormod o hyt a blinder a 6na6n yr ystorya. Kanys ar y veint teilygdaest honno yd oed⁶ ynys Prydein megys y racvlaenei yr holl ynyssed o amylder eur ac aryant ac alafoed dayra6l.⁷ A phy 10 varcha6c bynhac a vynnei⁸ vot yn glotua6r yn llys Arthur, o vn ry6 wisc yd aruerynt,⁹ ac o vn ry6 arueu, ac o un ry6 dy6ygyat¹⁰ marchogaeth. Y gorderchwraged o vn li6 wisgoed ac o un dy6ygyat¹⁰ yd aruerynt. Ac ny bydei teil6g gan un wreic garu¹¹ vn g6r, ony bei y uot 15 yn brofedic teirg6eith y mil6ryaeth. Ac uelly di6eirach y g6neynt¹² y g6raged a g6ell, ar g6yr yn glotuorussach oc eu karyat.

28. Ac or di6ed g6edy daruot b6yta a chy[ch]wynnu y ar y byrdeu, allan odieithyr y dinas yd aethant y 20 ch6are¹ amryfaylon chwaryeu.² Ac yn y lle marchogyon yn dangos ar6ydon, megys kyt bydynt³ yn ymlad yn ia6n ar y maes. Ar g6raged y ar y muroed ar bylcheu yn edrych ar chware.⁴ Ereill yn b6r6 mein, ereill yn saethu, ereill yn rydec,⁵ ereill yn g6are g6ydb6[y]ll, ereill 25 yn g6are taplas. Ac uelly⁶ dr6y bop⁷ kyfry6 amryuaelon dychymygeu⁸ g6aryeu⁹ treula6 yr hyn a oed yn ol or dyd gan dirua6r le6enyd, heb lit a heb gyffro¹⁰ a heb gynhen. A ph6y bynhac a vei vuduga6l yn y g6are, Arthur dr6y amlaf rodyon ae henrydedei.¹¹ A g6edy treula6 y tri 30 dieu kyntaf uelly,¹² y petwyryd dyd gal6 pa6p a wnaeth-

(Ch. 27.) 6 yr dothoed, 7 aualoed daeravl, 8 vynhei, 9 aruerhynt, 10 diwygyat, 11 karu, 12 ymwnneynt

(Ch. 28). 1 wareu, 2 waryeu, 3 beynt, 4 ar y gvareu, 5 redec, 6 y velly, 7 pop, 8 dychymygyon, 9 a gvareu, 10 a heb gyffro *om.*, 11 henrydedhei, 12 y velly

pwyd or a oedynt yg gwasanaeth, a thalu¹³ y baŵp y wassanaeth ae lafur herwyd ual¹⁴ y dylyynt. Ac yna y rodent¹⁵ y dinassoed, ar kestyll, ar tir, ar dayar, ar escobaetheu,¹⁶ ar archescobaetheu,¹⁷ ar manachlogued, ar amryuaelon urdasseu, megys y gweidei y baŵp or ae 5 dylyei.¹⁸

29. Ac yna y gŵrthodes Dyfric archescob y archescobaŵt ae teilygdaŵt. Kanys gŵell oed gantaŵ bot yn didrifŵr a buchedu yn y didryf no bot yn archescob. Ac yn y le ynteu y gossodet Dewi¹ eŷythyr y[r]² brenhin yn 10 archescob yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc.³ Bched hōnnō oed agreiff⁴ dayoni⁵ y baŵp or a gymerassei y dysc ynteu. Ac yn⁶ lle Samsōn⁷ archescob Lydaŵ drôy anoc Howel⁸ uab Emry Lydaŵ y gossodet Teilaŵ escob⁹ Lan Daf, yr hōn a glotuorei y uched, ae deuodeu da a dangossynt 15 y uot yn ŵrda. Ac odyna escobaŵt Gaer¹⁰ Vudei y Veugant, ac escobaŵt Gaer¹⁰ Wynt y Dywan,¹¹ ac escobaŵt Lincol y Aldelmi.

30. Ac val yd oedynt velly yn llunyaethu pob peth, nachaf deudegwyr aeduet eu hoet, enrydedus y gŵed, 20 a cheig [o] olyfwyd¹ yn llâŵ bop vn onadunt yn arwyd eu bot yn genadeu, ac yn kerdet yn araf, ac yn kyfarch gŵell y Arthur, ac yn y annerch y gan Les amheraŵdyr Rufein, ac yn rodi llythyr yn y laŵ, ar ymadraŵd hōnn² yndaŵ. 25

31. "Les amheraŵdyr Rufein yn anuon y Arthur yr hynn a haedwys. Gan enryfedu¹ yn uaŵr enryfed y genyf i dy greulonder di athrudannaeth.² Enryfedu³

(Ch. 28). 13 thallu, 14 *om.*, 15 rodet *recte*, 16 escobyaetheu, 17 ar archescobaetheu *om.*, 18 y paŵb ac y dylyei

(Ch. 29). 1 *in marg.*, 2 yr, 3 arwyse *om.*, 4 agriff, 5 a dayoni, 6 yny, 7 sampsōn, 8 hywel, 9 yn escob yn, 10 kaer, 11, dŵywan?

(Ch. 30). 1 o oliwyd, 2 ymadrodyon hynny

(Ch. 31). 1 anryfedu, 2 athrudanyaeth, 3 hefyt *add.*

ydōyf gan goffau y sarhaedeu⁴ a wnaethost di⁵ y Rufein. Ac anheilōg yō genyf nat atwaenost⁶ dy vynet oth dieithyr⁷ dy hun, ac na wydut ac nat yttōyt⁸ yn medylyāō py veint trymder yō gōneuthur kodyant y sened Rufein, 5 yr honn a ōdost di⁹ bot yr holl vyt yn talu gōassanaeth idi. Kanys y deyrnget a orchymynōyt y dalu idi, yr hōn¹⁰ a gafas Ulkassar a llāer o amherodron ereill gōedy ef a chyn no minheu¹¹ drōy lāer o amseroed—a hōnnō gan dremygu¹² gorchymyneu kymeint ac vn 10 sened Rufein—a gamryvygeist di¹³ y attal. Ac y gyt a hynny ti a dugost Bōrgōyn ac ynyssed yr eigaōn yn hollaōl, brenhined y rei hynny, hyt tra yttoed Rufeinaōl uedyant yn eu medu, a dallasant teyrnget yr amherodron a vuant kyn no minheu. A chanys or veint sarhaedeu¹⁴ 15 hynny y barnōys sened Rufein y minheu iaōn y genhyt ti, ōrth hynny minheu a ossodaf teruyn ytti yr Aōst kyntaf yssyd yn dyuot, dyuot ohonat titheu hyt yn Rufein y wneuthur iaōn or saōl sarhaedeu¹⁴ hynny, ac y diodef y vraōt a uarnho sened Rufein arnat. Ac ony 20 deuy uelly,¹⁵ miui a gyrchaf dy teruynēu.¹⁶ A megys y ranho y clefydeu,¹⁷ mi ae ranaf¹⁸ ac a lafuryaf y dōyn drachefyn ōrth sened Rufein.”

32. A gōedy datkanu y llythyr hōnnō rac bron Arthur ar brenhined ar tywyssogion a oedynt y gyt ac ef, ef 25 ac ōynt a aethant y gyt hyt yn tōr y keōri y gymryt kyghor py beth a ōnelhynt yn erbyn y kymynediōeu¹ hynny. Ac ual yd oedynt yn esgynnu² gradeu y tōr, kadōr iarll Kernyō megys gōr llāen y uedōl³ a dywaōt yr ymadraōd hōnn : “ Kyn no hynn ofyn a ry fu arnaf i 30 rac goruot o lesged y Brytanyeit o hir hedōch, a cholli

(Ch. 31). 4 sarahedeu, 5 wnaethost, 6 atwaenosti, 7 odieithyr, 8 ydōyt, 9 ōdosti, 10 hon, 11 thithew, 12 tremygu, 13 gamryfygeisti, 14 sarahedeu, 15 dohy y velly, 16 terfynheu, 17 cledyfeu, 18 kymhellaf

(Ch. 32). 1 kymenediveu, 2 yskynnu, 3 y vedōl om.

clot eu milōryaeth, or honn y buant hōy eglurach no neb o genedloed y byt yn hollaōl. Sef achaōs yō. Yn y llē y peitter ac⁴ arueru o arueu, ac aruer or ōydbōyll ar daplas a serch gōraged, nyt oes petrus yna llygru o lesged py beth bynhac a ry fei⁵ o nerth yno a chedernit 5 ac enryded a chlot. Kynys⁶ pump mlyned hayach ar⁷ ethynt yr pan yttym ni yn arueru or ryō seguryt hōnnō ar digrifōch, a heb arueru o diōyll ymlad. Ac ōrth hynny Duō yr mynu⁸ an rydhau ni or llesged honno a gyffroes gōyr Rufein yn an herbyn, hyt pan alwem 10 ni an clot ac an milōryaeth ar y hen gynefaōt.”

33. A gōedy dyōedut o Gadōr yr ymadrodyon hynny a llāber o rei ereill, or diwed ōynt a deuthant yr eisteduaeu. A gōedy eisted o baōp yn y le, Arthur a dyōaōt ual hynn ōrthunt: “Vyg kedymdeithon ar rōyd 15 ac ar dyrys, molyant yr rei hyt hynny¹ ac yn rodi eu² kyghoreu ac eu³ milōryaeth, ac yr⁴ aōr honn o vn vryt rodōch aōch kyghor, ac yn doeth racvedylyōch py beth a uo iaōn y atteb yn erbyn yr attebyon hynn Kanys py beth bynhac⁵ a racvedylyer⁶ yn da yn y blaen y gan 20 doethon, pan del ar ōeithret, haōs vyd y diodef. Ac ōrth hynny haōs y gallōn ninheu diodef ryfel gōyr Rufein, os o gyffredin gyfundeb a chytgyghor yn doeth y racuedylyōn py wed y gallom ni gōahanu ac eu ryfel ōynt. Ar ryfel hōnnō, herōyd y tebygaf i, nyt 25 maōr reit yn y ofynhau. Kanys andylyedus y maent hōy⁷ yn erchi teyrnget o ynys Prydein. Kanys ef a dyōeit dylu y talu idaō ef ōrth y talu⁸ y Ulkassar⁹ ac y ereill gōedy hōnnō, a hynny o achaōs teruysc ac anuundeb¹⁰ y rōg an hendaleu¹¹ ninheu, a dugassant¹² 30

(Ch. 32). 4 o, 5 ryffei, 6 kanys, 7 a, 8 mynnu

(Ch. 33). 1 yr rei a profeis hyt hyn, 2 om., 3 y, 4 ar, 5 bynac, 6 racweler, 7 ōy, 8 dalu, 9 ulkessar, 10 annundab, 11 hendaleu, 12 duesant

wyr Rufein yr ynys honn, ac o dreis¹² y gōnaethant yn tretha¹³. Ac 6rth hynny py beth bynhac a gaffer drōy na thōy¹¹ na chedernit,¹⁴ nyt o dylyet y kynhellir hōnnō. Pōy bynhac a dycko treis, peth andylyedus a geis y 5 gynhal. A chanys andylyedus y maent 6y yn keissa⁶ teyrnget y genhym ni, yn gynhebic y hynny ninheu a deissyfōn teyrnget y gantunt hōy¹⁵ o Rufein, ar kadarnaf ohonom ni kymeret y gan y llall.¹⁶ Kanys or goresgynōys¹⁷ Ulkassar¹⁸ ac amherodron ereill gōedy 10 ef ynys Prydein, ac o acha⁶s hynny yr aōr honn holi teyrnget ohanei,¹⁹ yn gynhebic y hynny minheu a varnaf dylyu o²⁰ Rufein talu teyrnget y minheu. Kanys vy rieni ynheu gynt a oresgynnassant²¹ Rufein ac ae kynhalassant, nyt amgen, Beli uab Dyfynwal gan 15 ganhorthōy Bran y vraōt duc Bōrgōyn, gōedy crogi petwar gōystyl ar hugeint²² o dylyedogyon²³ Ruuein rac bron y gaer, ac ae dalyassant drōy laōer o amseroed. A gōedy hynny Custenin mab Elen a Maxen mab Lywelyn—pob vn or rei hynny yn gar agos y mi o 20 gerenhyd,²⁴ ac yn vrenhined ardercha⁶c o goron ynys Prydein—yr vn gōedy y gilyd a gaōsant amherodraeth Rufein. Ac 6rth hynny pony bernōch chōi bot yn iaōn y minheu deissyfeit teyrnget o Rufein? O Ffreinc ac or ynyssed ereill ny 6rthebōn ni udunt 6y, kany doethant 25 y hamdiffyn, pan y goresgynassam,²⁵ nac oe gōarafun. Ac 6rth hynny ny 6rthebōn ni udunt hōy²⁶ or rei hynny.”

34. A gōedy teruyu o Arthur yr ymadraōd, Howel¹ uab Emyr Lyda⁶ a 6rtheba⁶d ym blaen² paōb y ymadraōd Arthur ual hyn: “Pei³ traethei bop un⁴ ohonom ni⁵ a 30 medylyā pob peth yn y uedōl, ny thebygaf i⁶ gallu

(Ch. 33). 12 treis, 13 treula⁶, 14 gaffer a thvyll a chedernit, 15 vy, 16 teyrnget *add.*, 17 o gverysgynnys, 18 vikessar, 19 oheni, 20 wyr *add.*, 21 weryskynassant, 22 hugein, 23 dylyedogyon, 24 gerenyd, 25 gverys-cynassam 26 *om.*

(Ch. 34). 1 hywel, 2 ymlaen, 3 bei, 4 bavb, 5 oll *add.*, 6 thybygaf

o neb ohonam ni rodi kyghor ḡerthuārogach⁷ nac atteb
 grynoach na doethach nor h̄n a rodes doethineb⁸ yr
 argl̄ydyd Arthur ehun. Ac 6rth hynny yr hyn a
 racuedylyād⁹ med6l doeth anyana6l ḡastat,¹⁰ ninheu
 yn holla6l moli h̄nn6 a dyly6n ae ganma6l yn wastat. 5
 Kanys yn her6yd y dylyet a dy6edy di, or¹¹ mynny di
 kyrchu Rufein, ny phetrussaf¹² i yd aruer6n ni or
 uudugolyaeth, hyt tra vom ni yn am̄diffyn an rydit,
 hyt tra geissom ni an ia6n y gan an gelynyon, y peth
 y maent h̄6y¹³ yn gam yn y geissa6 y gennym ninheu. 10
 Kanys p̄y bynhac a geisso d6yn y ureint ae dylyet gan
 gam y gan arall, tei6g y6 ida6 ynteu kolli y vreint ae
 dylyet. Ac 6rth hynny kanys ḡyr Rufein yssyd yn
 keissa6 d6yn yr einym ni, heb amheu ninheu a dyg6n
 y racdunt¹⁴ yr eidunt, o ryd Du6 gyfle y ymgyruot ac 15
 6ynt. A llyna ymgyfaruot damunedic yr holl vrytanyeit.
 Lyma daroganneu¹⁵ Sibli yn wir,¹⁶ a¹⁷ dy6a6t dyuot o
 genedyl y Brytanyeit tri brenhin a oresgynynt¹⁸
 Rufeina6l amherodraeth. Ar deu a ryfu, ac yr¹⁹ a6r
 hon yd ym yth gaffael titheu yn drydyd,²⁰ yr h̄n y 20
 tyf6ys²¹ blaen6ed Rufeina6l enryded.²² Or deu neur
 dery6 eilen6i yn aml6c, megys y dy6edeist ti,²³ yr eglur
 ty6yssogyon²⁴ Beli a Chustenin;²⁵ pob un onadunt a
 uuant amherodron yn Rufein. Ac 6rth hynny bryssya
 titheu²⁶ y gymryt y pe[t]h²⁷ y mae Du6 yn y rodi itt. 25
 Bryssya y oreskyn²⁸ y peth oe uod yssyd²⁹ yn mynu³⁰
 y oresgyn.²⁸ Bryssya y an hardrychafel³¹ ni oll, hyt
 pan yth ardrychauer titheu. Ac³² ny ochel6n ninheu
 kymryt ḡelieu ac agheu, or byd reit.³³ A hyt pan

(Ch. 34). 7 ḡerthuorogach, 8 nor h̄n a racuedylyād racweledic
 doethineb, 9 raewelas, 10 gvastadavr, 11 o, 12 phedrussaf, 13 vy,
 14 dygvn racdunt vy, 15 darogan, 16 yn dyfot yn wir, 17 hi a, 18 weres-
 cynynt, 19 ar, 20 ydym yn kafel y trydyd, 21 yr hvn yd yttys yn adav,
 22 anryded, 23 dywedeisti, 24 yn eglur y tywyssogyon, 25 chustenin,
 26 dithieu, 27 peth, 28 werescyn, 29 om., 30 oe vod add., 31 ardrychafel,
 32 om., 33 in add.

geffych ti hynny, minheu ath gedymdeithockaf ti³⁴ a deg mil o varchogyon aruač y gyt a mi y achānegu dy lu.”

35. A ḡedy teruynu o Howel¹ y barabyl, Arañn uab 5 Kynuarch brenhin Prydein a dywačt ual hynn: “Yr pan dechreuačd vy argl̄ydyd i dywedut y ymadračd, ny allaf i² traethu am tauačt y veint lewenyd yssyd ym medolli. Kanys nyt dim gennyfi a rywnaetham³ o ymladeu ar yr holl urenhined a oresgynnassam⁴ ni hyt hynn, os 10 ḡyr Rufein a ḡyr Germania dihagant⁵ yn diarueu⁶ y genhym ni, a heb dial arnadunt yr aeruaeū a 6naethant 6ynteū oc an rieni ni gynt. A chanys⁷ yr a6r honn y mae darpar ymgyfaruot ac 6ynt, ॥a6en y6 genyf; a damunač yd 6yf y dyd yd ymgyfarffom ni ac 6ynt. 15 Kanys sychet eu ḡaet 6ynt yssyd arnaf i yn gymeint a phei ḡel6n fynhačn oer⁸ ger vy mron y yfet diačt ohonaei, pan vei arnaf diruačr sychet.⁹ Oia Du6! ḡyn y uyt a arhoei y dyd h6nn6! Melys a welieu genyf i¹⁰ y rei a gymer6n i neu y rei a rod6n inheu, tra 20 nebiti6n an deheuoed y gyt an gelynyon. Ar agheu honno yssyd uelys, yr honn a diodef6n yn dial¹¹ uy rieni am kenedyl, ac yn amdiffyn vy rydit, ac yn ardrychauel¹² an brenhin. Ac 6rth hynny kyrch6n yr hanher ḡyr¹³ hynny; na saf6n yn eu kyrchu, hyt pan 25 orfom ni arnadunt 6y gan d6yn eu henryded,¹⁴ yd aruerom¹⁵ ni¹⁶ o la6en uudugolyaeth. Ac y achāneckau dy lu ditheu minheu a rodaf d6y vil o varchogyon aruač heb eu pedyt.”¹⁷

36. A ḡedy daruot y ba6p dywedut y peth a vynhynt 30 yg kylch hynny, adač a oruc pa6b nerth, megys y bei y

(Ch. 34). 34 gytymdeithockavn ditheu

(Ch. 35). 1 hvel, 2 allaffi, 3 genhym ar wnaetham, 4 werysgynnassam, 5 diaghant, 6 diaerua, 7 achavs, 8 lovv eglur, 9 ohonaei—sychet *om.*, 10 genhyfi, 11 ḡaet *add.*, 12 ardrychafel, 13 yr avr hon yr haner ḡyvyr, 14 hanryded, 15 aruerhom, 16 ni oll, 17 pedyd

allu ae defnyd yn y wassanaeth. Ac yna y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun¹ trugein mil o varchogyon aruačc, heb deg² mil a adačssei urenhin Lydač. Ac odyna brenhined yr ynyssed ereill (kany buassei aruer o varchogyon³) pačb onadunt a edečis pedydgant y sačl 5 a ellýnt eu kaffel. Sef a gahat or chwech ynys, nyt amgen, Iwerdon ac Islont a Gotlont ac o⁴ Orc a Lychlyn a Denmarc, chče⁵ ugein mil o pedyt;⁶ ac y gan tyčyssogyon Freinc, nyt amgen, Ruthyn a Phortu a Normandi a Cenoman ar Angič a Pheitač, petwar ugein 10 mil o uarchogyon. Ac y gan y deudec gogyfarch⁷ y deuthant⁸ y gyt a Gereint deucant⁹ marchačc a mil o varchogyon aruačc. A sef oed eiryf hynny oll y gyt, deu cant marchačc a their mil a phetčar vgein mil a chanmil, heb eu pedyt,⁶ yr hyn nyt oed hačd eu gossot 15 yn rif.

37. A gčedy gčelet o Arthur pačb yn baračt yn y reit ae wassanaeth, erchi a oruc y bačp bryssyač y wlat ac ymbaratoi, ac yn erbyn Kalan Ačst bot eu kynadyl oll y gyt ym porth Barberfloi ar tir Lydač, 6rth gyrchu 20 Bčrgčyn odyno yn erbyn gčyr Freinc. Ac y gyt a hynny menegi a oruc Arthur 6rth genadeu gčyr Rufein na thalei ef tyrnget udunt hčy¹ o ynys Prydein. Ac nyt yr gčneuthur iačn vdunt or a holyst yd oed ef yn kyrchu Rufein, namyn yr kymell teyrnget idač ef o 25 Rufein, megys y barnassei ehun y dylyu. Ac ar hynny yd aethant y brenhined ar gčyrda pačb y ymbaratoi heb vn annot, erbyn yr amser teruynedic a ossodyssit udunt.

38. A gčedy adnabot o Les amheračdyr yr atteb a gačssei y gan Arthur, drčy gyghor sened Rufein ef a 30

(Ch. 36). 1 *om.*, 2 y deg, 3 varchogaeth, 4 *om. recte*, 5 whe, 6 pedyd
7 gogyfurd, 8 doethant, 9 deudeckant

(Ch. 37). 1 vy

ellyḡys kenadeu y wyssyā brenhined y d̄frein,¹ ac erchi² dyuot ac eu lluoed gantunt y gyt ac ef 6rth oresgyn³ ynys Prydein. Ac yn gyflym yd ymgynull-assant yno Epistrophus⁴ vrenhin Groec,⁵ Mustensar 5 brenhin⁶ yr Affric, Aliphantina urenhin yr Yspaen, Hirtacus vrenhin Parth, Boctus brenhin Iudiff, Sertor⁷ brenhin⁶ Libia, Serx vrenhin Nuri, Pandrasius brenhin⁶ yr Eifft, Missipia⁸ brenhin⁶ Babilon, Teucer duc Frigia, Euander duc⁶ Siria, Echion o Boeti, Ypolit o Creta,⁹ y 10 gyt ar tywyssogyon a oedynt darestygedigyon udunt ar ḡyrda. Ac y gyt a hynny o vrdas y senedwyr Les, Kadell, Meuruc, Lepidus, Gaius, Metellus,¹⁰ Octa, Quintus, Miluius, Taculus, Metellus, Quintinus, Gerucius.¹¹ A sef¹² oed eiryf hynny oll y gyt, 15 can̄r a thrugein mil a phet̄ar can mil.

39. A ḡedy ymgwyerā onadunt o bop peth or a vei reit udunt, Kalan Āst h̄ynt¹ a gymerassant eu hynt parth ac ynys Prydein. A phan ̄ybu Arthur hynny, ynteu a orchymyn̄ys llwyddraeth ynys Prydein y 20 Vedrāt y nei uab y ch̄aer, ac y Wenh̄yvar vrenhines. Ac ynteu ae lu a gych̄yn̄ys parth a phorthua² Hamt̄n. A phan gafas y ḡynt gyntaf³ yn y ol, ef a aeth yn y logeu ar y mor.⁴ Ac val yd oed uelly o aneiryf amylder llugeu yn y gylch, ar ḡynt yn r̄ydyd yn y ol, gan 25 lēenyd yn r̄ygā y⁵ mor, mal am ār haner nos, ḡrthr̄m hun a disgyn̄ys⁶ ar Arthur. Sef y ḡelei dr̄y y hun, arth yn ehedec yn yr āyur; murmur h̄nn̄n̄ ae od̄rd a lanwei y traetheu o ofyn ac aruthred. Ac y 6rth y gorllewin y ḡelei aruthyr⁷ dreic yn ehedec, ac o

(Ch. 38). 1 dvyrein *recte*, 2 ac y erchi vdunt, 3 wereskyn, 4 epitrophus 5 goroe, 6 vrenhin, 7 settor, 8 mesipia, 9 greta, 10 metelus, 11 *For Quintus Jerucius A has Quintus milnius katulus metelus Quintus cerutius* (?), 12 Ac ysef

(Ch. 39). 1 vynt, 2 phorth, 3 kyntaf, 4 ar y mor *om.*, 5 *om.*, 6 dygydvydys, 7 arthur

eglurder y llygeit yn goleuhau yr holl wlat. A phob yn or rei hynny a welei yn ymgyrchu, ac yn ymlad yn irat ac yn greulaen. Ac or diwed y gwele i y racdwydedic dreic yn kyrchu yr arth, ac ae thanaol anadyl yn y losgi, ac yn y vêr yn nosgedic yn y dayar. A 5 gweledy duhunaol o Arthur, ef a datkanaol y weledigaeth⁸ yr gwyrd a o[e]dynt⁹ yn y gylch. Ac ynt gan y dehogyl a dybedassant mae¹⁰ Arthur a arwydockaei y dreic, ar arth a arwydockaei y kaer a ymladei ac ef, ar ymlad a welei y rydunt a arwydockaei yr ymlad a vydei¹¹ 10 y rydael ef ar kaer, ar uudugolyaeth a damweinhei¹² y Arthur or kaer. Ac amgen no hynny y tebygei¹³ Arthur ehun uot y dehogyl. Kanys ef a dybygei y mae oe achaol ef ar amherawd¹⁴ y gwelel ef y vreidwyt. A gweledy rydec y nos, or diwed pan yttoed gwaer dyd yn 15 cochi tranoeth,¹⁵ ynt a disgynnassant ym porthua¹⁶ Barberflwy yn Lydaw. Ac yn y lle tynu¹⁷ pebilleu a wnaethant, ac yno aros brenhined yr ynyssed¹⁸ ar gweledoed ac eu llu atunt.

40. A gweledy ymgynullaol paeb y gyt or yd oedynt yn 20 aros, Arthur a gychwynys odyno hyt yn Aogustudom, y lle y tybygei bot yr amherawd yr ae lu yn dyuot. A gweledy y dyuot hyt ar lann yr Avon Wenn ym Bêrgwyn, ef a venegit idael bot yr amherawd yr gweledy pebillaol nyt oed bell odyno, a chymeint o luod gantaol ac y dywedit 25 nat oed neb a allei gwrthwynebu idael. Ac yr hynny eissoes ny chynhyruaol Arthur dim, namyn gossot y bebilleu ae luesteu ar lann yr auon, megys y galie yn rwyd ac yn ehang llunyaethu y lu, or bei reit idael, yn y lle hennol. Ac odyna yd anuones Arthur Boso o Ryt 30 Ychen a Gôal[ch]mei uab Gwyar a Gereint Garanys hyt

(Ch. 39). 8 vreidwyt, 9 oed, 10 y mae, 11 vei, 12 damweinei, 13 tybygei, 14 amherawd, 15 dranoeth, 16 ymhorthua, 17 tannu 18 ynyssed

ar amheraðdyr Rufein, y erchi idað mynet o teruyneu Freinc, neu tranoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur, y wybot pŷ oreu onadunt a dlyei Ffreinc. Ac annoc a 6naeth jeuenctit llys Arthur y Walchmei ḡneuthor ḡrthgassed 5 yn llys yr amheraðdyr, megys y gellynt gaffel gosgymonn y ymgyuaruot a ḡyr Rufein.

41. Ac odyna y trywyr hynny a gerdassant at yr amheraðdyr, ac a archassant idað mynet ymeith o Ffreinc, neu ynteu trannoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur. Ac ual 10 yd oed yr amheraðdyr yn dywedut nat mynet ohonei a dlyei, namyn dyuot oe hamdiffyn ac y lluðyað, nachaf Quintinus nei yr amheraðdyr yn dywedut bot yn h̄y gorhoffed a bocsach y Brytanyeit noc eu gallu ac eu gleðder, a bot yn h̄y eu tauodeu noc eu clefydeu. 15 Ac 6rth hynny llityað a oruc Ḡalchmei, a thynnu cledyf a llad y benn ger bronn y ewythyr. Ac yn y lle ar hynt kaffel eu meirych ac ymtynnu or llys ef ae gedym[d]eithon, ar Rufeinwyr ar veirych ac ar traet yn eu hymlit y geissað dial y ḡr arnadunt oc eu holl ynni. 20 Ac ual yd oed vn or Rufeinwyr yn ymordiwas a Gereint Garanðys, ef a troes arnað, ac a gleif ae ḡvant tr̄y y holl arueu a thr̄ydað ehun, yny vyd yr ɬaðr y ar y varch yn varð. Ac yna blyghau a oruc Bosoo Ryt Ychen, a throi y varch a oruc, ar kyntaf a gyvaruu ac ef, ef a ossodes 25 arnað yn y vogel, ac a rodes dyrnað agheuaðl idað, a chymell arnað ymadað ae varch ac ymadassu ar dayar. Ac ar hynny nachaf Marell Mut senedðr oe holl ynni yn keissað dial Q̄ointilian ac yn ymordiwas a Ḡalchmei yn y ol ac yn mynnu y dala, pan ymchoelaðd Ḡalchmei 30 arnað yn gyflym, ac a chledyf llad y benn yn gyfuch ae d̄y ysc̄ydd; ac y gyt a hynny gorchymun idað, pan elhei y usfern, menegi y Ḡointinal, yr h̄enn a ladassei ef yn y pebyll, bot yn amyl gan y Brytanyeit y ryð or hoffter h̄ennð. Ac odyna ymðascu ae gedymdeithon

a oruc Gŵalchmei ac eu hannoc, a llad o bop un 6r; ar Rufeinwyr ar gŵebyr ac ar clefydeu yn eu fustaŵ, ac ny elliŷt nac eu dala nac eu bŵr. Ac ual yd oedynt geir llâb coet a oed yn agos udunt, ar Rufeinwyr yn eu herlit yn lut, nachaf chwe mil or Brytanyeit yn dyuot or coet 5 yn borth yr tywyssogion a oedynt ar ffo, ac ar hynt yn dangos yr ysparduneu yr meirych, ac yn llanŵ yr aŵyr o lefein a dodi eu taryaneu ar eu bronnoed ac yn deissifyt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr ac yn y lle eu kymell ar ffo, ac o vñ vryt eu herlit, a bŵr rei onadunt yr llâb, a dala ereill, 10 a llad ereill.

42. A gŵedy menegi hynny y Petrius senedŵr, ef a gymerth degmil y gyt ac ef, a bryssyaŵ yn ganhorthŷ y gedymdeithon,¹ ac yn y lle kymell y Brytanyeit ar fo yr coet y dathoedynt ohonaŵ. Ac eissoes nyt heb 15 wneuthur diruaŵr gollet yr Rufeinwyr. Kanys y Brytanyeit, kyt foyn, pan geffynt adâyeu kyfig a lleoed dyrys, aerua uaŵr a 6neynt or Rufeinwyr. Ac ual yd yttoedynt hŷ yn ymladar y wed honno, nachaf Hydeir uab Mut a phump mil y gyt ac ef yn dyuot yn ganhorthŷ 20 yr Brytanyeit. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut a wnaethant; ar rei a oedynt yn dangos eu kefneu ar ffo yr aŵr honno, yn y lle yd oedynt yn dangos eu bronnoed ac yn rodi gŵrolyon dyrnodeu bop eilwers yr Rufeinwyr, ar Brytanyeit oc eu holl dihewyt yn damunaŵ milŵryaeth. 25 Ac ny didorynt py dambein y dygŷdynt yndaŵ, hyt tra gynhelynt eu clot ym milŵryaeth, megys y dechreuyssynt. Ar Rufeinŷr kymhennach y 6neynt 6y; kanys Petrius megys tyŷssâb da ae dysgei 6ynt yn doeth gŵers y gyrchu gŵers arall y ffo, megys y gŵelei yn dygrynoi 30 udunt. Ac uelly y 6neynt golledeu maŵr yr Brytanyeit.

43. A phan welas Boso o Ryt Ychen hynny, galâb a oruc attâb laŵer or Brytanyeit glebaf a 6ydat ar neilltu,

1. MS. gedyndeithon

a dybedut 6rthunt ual hyn : " Dioer," heb ef, " kanyſ
heb wybot y an brenhin y dechreuassam ni yr ymlad
h6nn, reit oed yn ninheu ymoglyt rac an dyg6yda6 yn
y¹ ran waethaf or ymlad. Ac os uelly y dyg6yden,
5 kollet ma6r oc an marchogyon a go16n, ac y gyt a hynny
an brenhin a dyg6n ar gyffro ac irloned 6rthym. Ac
6rth hynny gel6ch a6ch gle6der atta6ch, a chanlyn6ch
vinheu dr6y vydinoed y Rufeinwyr. Ac o kanhorth6ya
an tyghetuenneu ni, ae l1ad Petrius ae dala ni a orvyd6n."

10 44. Ac ar hynny dangos yr ysparduneu yr meirych a
orugant, a thr6y vydinoed y marchogyon o ebr6yd
ruthur mynet drostunt hyt y l1e yd oed Petrius yn dysgu
y gedymdeithon. Ac yn gyflym Boso a gyrcha6d
Petrius a meglyt ynda6 her6yd y vyn6gyl a, megys y
15 racdy6edassei, dyg6yda6 y gyt ac ef yr lla6r. Ac 6rth
hynny ymgynnulla6 a 6neynt y Rufeinwyr y geissa6 y
ell6g y gan y elynyon. Ac or parth arall yd ympentyrrynt
y Brytanyeit yn borth y Voso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yna y
cly6it y l1uein ar gorderi; yna yd oed yr aerua diru6r
20 o bop parth, hyt tra ytoedynt y Rufeinwyr yn keissa6
rydhau eu ty6yssa6c, ar Brytanyeit yn y attal. Ac yna
y gellit g6ybot p6y oreu a digonei a g6ay6, p6y oreu a
saetheu, p6y oreu a chledyf. Ac or diwed y Brytanyeit
gan te6hau eu bydinoed a dugant eu ruthur ar
25 karcharoryon gantunt dr6y vydinoed y Rufein6yr, hyt
pan vydylt ym perued kedernit eu hymlad ehunein a
Phetrius gantunt. Ac yn y l1e ymchoelutar yr Rufeinwyr
ymdiueit oc eu tywyssa6c ac or ran v6yaf yn 6anach ac
yn 6asgaredigach dangos eu kefneu a orugant 6rth ffo.
30 Ac 6rth hynny est6g gantunt a 6naeth y Brytanyeit, ac
eu l1ad ac eu hyspeila6, ac erlit y rei a ffoyt, a dala
lla6er or rei a damunynt y eu dangos yr brenhin. Ac or

diwed ḡedy ḡneuthur ll̄āer o berigleu a dr̄c onadunt, y Brytanyeit ̄ynt[eu] a ymchoelassant y eu pebilleu ar karcharoryon ac ar yspeileu gantunt. A chan lēenyd ̄ynt a dangossant Petrius ar karcharoryon ereill y gyt ac ef y Arthur. Ac ynteu a diolches udunt gan diruār 5 lēenyd eu llafur ac eu ḡassanaeth yn y āssen ef, gan adās ach̄aneckau eu henryded ac eu kyueth am eu mil̄ryaeth ac eu molyant. Ac yna yd erchis Arthur mynet ar carcharoryon hyt ym Paris y eu kad̄, tra gymerit kyghor amdanunt. Ac yd erchis Arthur y 10 Gad̄r iarll Kernyw a Bedwyr a Rickart a Bosel ac eu teuluoed y gyt ac ̄ynteu eu hebr̄g, hyt pan elhynt yn diogel, rac ofyn t̄wyll y Rufeinwyr.

45. Ar Rufeinwyr y nos hono, ḡedy caffel onadunt ḡybot y darpar h̄enn̄, a etholassant pymtheg mil o wyr 15 aruāc ac ae gellygassant hyt nos y ragot y fford y tebygynt eu mynet trannoeth, y geissās rydhau eu karcharoryon. Ac yn tȳyssogyon ar yr rei hynny y gossodet Ultei a Chadell a Chwintus sened̄r ac Evander vrenhin Siria a Sertor vrenhin Libia. Ar rei hynny 20 oll a gymerasant eu hynt, hyt pan gāssant y lle a vei adas gantunt y lechu, ac yno aros y dyd arnadunt.

46. Ar bore drannoeth kymryt eu fford a wnaeth y Brytanyeit ac eu karcharoryon parth a Pharis. Ac val yd oedynt yn dyuot yn agos yr lle yd oed y pyt y gan 25 eu gelynyon arnadunt, ac ̄ynteu heb wybot dim or vrat nae thybyās, yn dirybud eu kyrchu a oruc y Rufeinwyr, a dechreu eu ḡaskaru a mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes, kyt kyrchit y Brytanyeit yn dirybud, ny chahat yn diaruot, namyn yn ̄rāl ḡrth̄ynebu y eu gelynyon. 30 A rei a dodassant y gad̄ y karcharoryon, ac ereill yn vydinoed y ymlad. Ar vydin a ossodassant y gad̄ y carcharoryon a orchymynnassant y Rickert a Bedwyr. A thywyssogaeth y rei ereill a orchymynn̄yt y Gad̄r

iarll Kernyā, a Borel yn gyptywyssāc idaā. Ar Rufeinwyr kyrchu a wneyst heb geissaā na llunyeithaā eu gāyr nae bydinaā, namyn oc eu holl lafur keissaā gāneuthur aerua or Brytanyeit, hyt tra yuttoedynt ȿynteū 5 yn bydinaā eu gāyr ac yn eu hamdiffyn ehunein. Ac ȿrth hynny gan eu gāanhau yn ormod ȿynt yn dybryt a gollassynt eu karcharoryon, pei na danuonei eu tyghetuen vdunt damunedic ganhorthāy ar vrys. Kanys Gāittart iarll Peittaā, gāedy gāybot y tāyll hānnā, a deuth a their 10 mil gantaā. Ac or diwed gan nerth Duā ar kanhorthāy hānnā y Brytanyeit a oruuant, ac a talyssant eu haerua yr tāyllwyr. Ac eissoes yn y gyfranc kyntaf y collassant lawer. Kanys yna y collassant yr arderchaāc tywyssāc Borel o Cenoman; yn kyuaruot ac Euander vrenhin Siria 15 yn vrathedic gan y waeā y dygāydydāys. Yna y kollassant hefyd petār gāyr bonhedigyon, nyt amgen, Hirlas o Pirōn a Meuruc o Gaer Geint ac Alidāc o Dindagāl a Hir uab Hydeir. Nyt oed haād kaffel gāyr leāach nor rei hynny. Ac yr hynny ny chollassant y Brytanyeit 20 eu glewder,¹ namyn oc eu llauur kadā eu karcharoryon. Ac or diwed ny allyssant y Rufeinwyr diodef eu ruthur, namyn yn gyflym adaā y maes a ffo part ac eu pebylleu, ar Brytanyeit yn eu herlit ac yn gāneuthur aerua onadunt. Ac ny pheidassant yn eu dala ac yn eu llad, 25 hyt pan ladassant Vltei a Chadell senedȿr ac Evander vrenhin Siria. A gāedy caffel or Brytanyeit y vudu-golyaeth honno, ȿynt a anuonassant y karcharoryon hyt ym Paris. Ar rei a dalyassant o newyd, ȿynt ae hym[ch]oelassant ar Arthur eu brenhin oe dangos, gan 30 adaā gobeith holl uudugolyaeth idaā; kanys nifer mor vychan a hānnā a geāssynt uudugolyaeth ar y saāl elynyon hynny.

1. MS. gleuder

47. A ḡedy ḡelet o Les amherātyr Rufein meint y gollet ar dechreu y ryfel, tr̄m a thrist uu gantā. A medylyā̄ a oruc peidā ae darpar am ymlad ac Arthur a mynet y dinas Āuarn y aros porth o newyd attā y gan Leo amherādyr. A gwedy caffel o honā hynny 5 yn y gyghor, y nos honno ef a aeth hyt yn Legris. A ḡedy menegi hynny y Arthur, ynteu a raculaen̄ys y fford ef. Ar nos honno, gan adā y dinas ar y ll̄ā asseu idā, ef a aeth hyt y mȳn dyffryn y fford y kerdei Les amherādyr ae lu. Ac yno y myn̄ys ef bydinā y 10 wyr. Ac ef a erchis y Vorud iarll Kaer Loȳ kymryt attā ll̄eg o wyr a mynet ar neilltu yg ḡersyll, a phan welei uot yn reit ̄rthunt, dyfot yn ganhorth̄y. Ac odyna y nifer oll y am hynny a ran̄ys yn nā bydin, ac ym pob bydin or nā chwe ḡyr a chwe ugeint a chwe 15 chant a chwe mil, ar rei hynny yn gyweir o bop arueu, ar rann o bop bydin yn uarchogyon ar rann arall yn bedyt, a thywyssogyon y dyscu pob bydin yn y blaen. Ac yr vydin gyntaf y rodet Arān uab Kynuarch a Chad̄r iarll Kernȳ, vn yn yr anher deheu ar llall yn yr anher 20 asseu. Ac yr vydin arall y rodet Gereint Garan̄ys a Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yr dryded y rodet Echel vrenhin Denmarc a Leu uab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yr bedward y rodet Howel uab Emyr Lydā a Ḡalchmei uab Ḡyar, deu nei y Arthur. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny 25 y gossodet pedeir bydin ereill drae kefyn gynteu. Ac yr gyntaf or rei hynny y rodet Kei bens̄ydwr a Bedwyr bentrullyat. Ac yr nessaf idi y rodet Hodlyn iarll Ruthyn a Ḡittart iarll Peittā; ac yr tryded Owein o Gaer Leon a Ionathal o Gaer Weir; ac yr petward 30 Vryen Vadon a Chursalem o Gaer Geint. Ac Arthur ehun a etholes¹ ll̄eg idā o varchogyon aruāc o

1. MS. ae otholes

chwe gŵyr a chwe ugeint a chwe chant a chŵe mil. A rac
bron Arthur sefyll y dreic eureit, yr honn a oed yn lle argyd
idaš, megys y gellynt y gŵyr blin ar rei brathedic, pan
gymhellei eu hagen¹ udunt, ffo dan yr argyd honno
5 megys y gastell diogel.

48. A gŵedy llunyaethu pašb yn y ansašd, Arthur a
dywašt val hynn 6rth y varchogyon: “ Vyg kytuar-
chogyon kytdiodeuedic ymi,² chŵi a 6naethašch ynys
Prydein yn arglŷydes ar dec teyrnas ar hugeint; y ašch
10 dešred chŵi ac y ašch molyant y kytdiolchaf ynheu
hynny, y molyant nyt yttyš yn pallu nac yn dyffygyaš,
namyn yn kynydu. Kyt ry foch chŵi ys pump mlyned
yn arueru o seguryt heb arueru o arueu a mil6ryaeth, yr
hynny eissoes ny chollyssašch ašch anyanašl dayoni,
15 namyn yn wastat parhau yn ach bonhedic dayoni.
Kanys y Rufeinwyr a gymellassašch ar ffo, y rei a oed
oc eu syber6yt yn keissaš dŵyn ašch rydit y genn6ch,
ac yn v6y eu nifer nor einyd ni. Ac ny allasant sefyll
yn ašch erbyn, namyn yn dybryt ffo gan achub y dinas
20 h6nn. Ac yr ašr honn y doant o h6nn6 dr6y y dyffryn
h6nn y gyrchu A6uarn. Ac y am hynn yma y gell6ch
ch6ithei eu kaffel 6ynt yn dirybud ac eu llad megys
deueit. Kanys gŵyr y d6yrein a debygant³ bot llesked
ynašch chŵi, pan geissynt g6neuthor ašch g6lat yn
25 trethašl udunt a chwithei yn geith udunt. Pony
wybuant 6y py ryš ymladeu a dyborthassašch chŵi y wyr
Lychlyn a Denmarc ac y twyssogyon Freinc, y rei
a oreskynassašch chŵi, ac a rydhayssašch y 6rth eu
harglŷdiaeth warat6yodus 6y? Ac 6rth hynny, kan
30 gorfuam ni yn yr ymladeu kadarnaf hynny, heb amheu
ni a orfyd6n yn yr ymladeu ysc6n hynny, os o vn
dihewyt ac o vn vryt y llafury6n y gy6arsagu yr hanner

1. MS. hageu

2. MS. yni

3. leg. debygynt

gŵyr hynn. Py veint o enryded a medyant a chyfoeth a geiff paŵb ohonawch chŵi, os megys kytvarchogyon ffydlaw̄n yd ufudheŵch chŵi ym gorchymynn ynheu? Kanys gŵedy gorffom ni arnadunt, ni a gyrchŵn Rufein, a ni a gaffŵn y medu hi. Ac velly keffŵch yr eur ar aranyant 5 ar llyssodoed ar tired ar kestyll ar dinassoed; ac eu holl gyuoeth a geffŵch.” Ac val yd oed yn dybedut hynny ŵrhunt, paŵb o vn eir a gadarnassant bot yn gynt y diodefynt ageu noc yd ymedeŵynt ac ef, tra vei ef vyŵ or blaen. 10

49. A gŵedy gŵybot or amheraŵd yr vrat yd oedit yn y darparu idaŵ, nyt ffo a oruc ef megys y darparyssei, namyn galŵ y leŵder attaŵ a chyrchu y dyffryn hŵnnŵ ar eu tor. A galŵ y tyŵyssogyon attaŵ a dywedut ŵrhunt val hyn: “Tadeu enrydedus o arglŵydiaeth, or rei y 15 dylyir kynal teyrnassoed y dŵyrein¹ ar gorlleŵin yn darestygedic vdunt, koffeŵch ych hendadeu, y rei yr gorescyn eu gelynyon ny ochelynt ellâg eu priaŵ waet ehunein, namyn adaŵ agreiff molyant yr rei a delei gŵedy ŵynt. Ac velly yn vynych y goruydynt. A chan 20 oruot y gochelynt agheu, kanys ny daŵ y neb namyn yr neb y gŵelho Duŵ, ar ansaŵd y mynho Duŵ, ar amser y mynho. Ac ŵrh hynny yd achâneckeyst hây gyfoeth Rufein ac eu molyant hây ac eu clot ac eu hadfŵynder ac eu haelder. Ac o hynny y dyrchefynt ŵynt ac eu 25 harglŵydiaeth ac eu hetiuedyon ar yr holl vyt. Ac ŵrh hynny gan damunaŵ kyffroi ynaŵch chwitheu y kyfryŵ hŵnnŵ yd anogaf i hyt pan aŵoch chŵi attaŵch aŵch anyanaŵl dayoni, a hyt pan safoch yndi gan gyrrchu aŵch gelynyon yssyd yn aŵch aros yn y dyffryn hŵnn 30 gan deissyfyt y gennŵch aŵch dylhet. Ac na thebygŵch y mae rac eu hofyn ŵy y kyrcheis i y dinas hŵnn, namyn

1. MS. dŵyfrein

o tebygu an herlit ni ohonunt h̄y, ac yn deissyfyt kaffel ohonam aerua diruaŵr eu meint ohonunt. A chanys yn amgen y ḡnaethant h̄y noc y tebygass̄n i, ḡnaen ninheu yn amgen noc y tebygant ȳnteu. Deisyf̄n 5 ȳnt, ac yn leŵ kyrch̄n ȳnt. A chyt gorffont, diodef̄n ni yn da y rythur gyntaf y gantunt; a velly heb amheu ni a oruyd̄n. Kanys y neb a safo yn da yn y rythur gyntaf, mynch y ſ y vynet gan uudugolyaeth yn ll̄afer o ymladeu."

10 50. A ḡedy daruot idaŵ teruynu yr ymadraŵd h̄nn̄n a ll̄afer o rei ereill, paŵb o vn dihewyt a rodassant eu d̄yalaŵ gan tygu nat ymedewynt ac ef; ac ar vrys ḡwisgaŵ amdanunt eu harueu ac adaŵ Legrys a chyrchu y dyffryn, y ll̄e yd oed Arthur ḡedy llunyaethu y 15 vydinoed. Ac yna gossot a ȳnaethant h̄ynteu dr̄y deudec bydin o varchogyon a phedyt yn her̄yd Rufeinaŵl deuaŵt o chwe ḡyr a thrugeint a chwe chant a ch̄e mil ym pop bydin; ac ym pop vn ohonunt llyôd̄yr, hyt pan vei o dysc h̄nn̄n y kyrchynt ac y 20 kilynt, pan vei dylyedus udunt, ac y ḡrth̄ynebynt y eu gelynyon. Ac y vn or bydinoed y rodes¹ Les. Kadell senedŵr o Rufein ac Aliphantina brenhin yr Yspaen, ac yr eil Hirtacus brenhin Parth a Meuruc senedŵr, ac yr tryded Bocus brenhin Nidif a Ganis 25 senedŵr, yr bedwared Q̄intus a Myrr senedŵr. Ar pedeir hynny a rodet yn y blaen. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny y dodet pedeir ereill. Ac y vn or rei hynny y rodet Serx brenhin Ituri, ac yr eil Polites duc Ffrigia, yr tryded Pandrasius brenhin yr Eift, yr pedwared duc 30 Bitinia. Ac yn ol y rei hynny pedeir bydin ereill. Ac y vn ohonunt y rodet Q̄intus Carucius, ac yr eil iarll Lelli Hosti, yr tryded Sulpius, yr pedwared Marius

1. MS. yr adodes

senedōr. Ac ynteu yr amheraōtyr hōnt ac yma, yn annoc y wyr ac yn eu dysgu py wed yd ymledynt. Ac ym perued y llu yd erchis ef sefyll yn gadarn eryr eureit, yr hōnn a oed yn lle arōyd idaō, ac erchi y baōp or a 6ehenit y 6rth y vydin, gyrchu yno.

5

51. Ac or diōed gōedy sefyll paōb yn erbyn y gilyd onadunt y Brytanyeit or ne[i]ll parth ar Rufeinwyr or parth arall, pan glyōssant sein yr arōydon, y vydin, yd oed brenhin yr Yspaen ae gedymdeith yny llwywaō, ymgyuarfot a orugant a bydin Araōn uab Kynuarch a Chadōr 10 iarll Kernyō, a hynny yn wychyr ac yn leō. Ac eissoes ny allyssant nae thorri nae gōasgaru. Ac ual yd oedynt uelly yn ymlad yn dywal ac yn wychyr, nachaf Gereint Garanōys a Boso o Ryt Ychen ac eu bydin yn eu kyrchu yn deissyfyt o rydec eu meirych, ac yn tyllu eu gelynyon 15 ac yn mynet drostunt, hyt pan gyfarfuant a bydin brenhin Parth, yr honn a yttoed yn kyrchu yn erbyn bydin Echel brenhin Denmarc a Leu vab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yna heb vn gohir o bop parth ymgymysgu a 6naethant y bydinoed, a mynet paōb dros 20 y gilyd onadunt; ac aerua diruaōr y meint o bop parth, ar lluein ar gorderi yn llanō yr aōyr o son; ar rei brathedic yn maedu y dayar ac ae penneu ac eu sodleu, a thrōy eu gōaet yn terfynu eu buched. Ac eissoes y kollet kyntaf a deuth yr Brytanyeit. Kanys Bedwyr a 25 las, a Chei a vrathōyt yn agheuaōl. Kanys pan ymgyfarvu Vedwyr a brenhin Nidif, y brathōyt a gleif yny dygōydōys. A hyt tra yttoed Gei yn keissaō dial Bedwyr, ym perued kat brenhin Nidif y brathōyt ynteu. Ac eissoes o defawt¹ marchaōc da, ar ystondard a oed 30 yn y laō gan lad a gōasgaru y elynyon, agori fford idaō a oruc; ac ae vydin gantaō yn gyfan ef a doeth hyt ym

1. MS. dyfot

plith y wyr ehunan, pei nar gyfarffei ac ef vydin brenhin Libia. Honno a ̄asgar̄ys y vydin ef yn hollāl, ac ynteu a ffoes a chorff Bed̄yr gantāl hyt y dan y dragon eureit. Ac yna py veint o ḡynuan a oed gan wyr Normandi, 5 pan welsant gorff eu tȳyssāc yn vrīedic or sāl welioed hynny? Py veint ḡynuan a ̄neynt wyr yr Angīl ̄rth welet ḡelieu Kei eu tȳyssāc, pei kaffei neb enkyt y ḡynāl y gilyd gan y amdiffyn ehunan yg kyfr̄g y bydinoed ḡaetlyt?

10 52. Ac ̄rth hynny Hirlas nei Bedwyr yn gyffroedic o agheu Bedwyr a gymerth a gyt ac ef trychant marchāc, a megys baed koet tr̄y blith ̄lāver o ḡen kyrchu dr̄y blith y elynāl vydinoed yr lle y ḡelei ar̄yd brenhin Nidif, heb didarbot py beth a dam̄einei idāl gan gaffel 15 dial y ēythyr ohonāl. Ac or dīed ef a gafas dyuot hyt y lle yd oed vrenhin Nidif, ac ae kymerth o blith y vydin, ac ae duc gantāl hyt y lle yd oed gorff Bedwyr, ac yno y dryllyal yn drylleu man. Ac odyna gorall̄ ar y gedymdeithon, a chan eu hannoc kyrchu eu 20 ge ynyon yn vynych, megys gan atnewydu eu nerth, hyt pan yttoedynt eu gelynyon yn ofnāc ac eu callonoed yn crynu. Ac y gyt a hynny kȳreinach y kyrchynt y Brytanyeit oe dysc ynteu, a chreulonach y ḡoneyt aerua. Ac ̄rth hynny grym ac angerd oe annoc ef a 25 gymerassant y Brytanyeit, a d̄yn ruthur y eu gelynyon; ac o bop parth udunt diruār aerua a orucp̄yt. Y Rufeinwyr yna y gyt ac aneiryf o vilyoed y syrthassant. Yna y ̄las Aliphant vrenhi[n] yr Yspaen, a Misipia vrenhin Babilon, a Ch̄intus Miluius, a Marius Lepidus 30 sened̄r. Ac o parth y Brytanyeit y syrthys Hodlyn iarll Ruthun, a Leodogar iarll Bol̄yn, a thri thȳyssāc ereill o ynys Prydein, nyt amgen, Cursalem o Gaer Geint, a Ḡallāc vab Lywynāc o Salsbri, a Vryen o Gaer Vadon. Ac ̄rth hynny ḡaahanu a ̄naethant y bydinoed

yd oedynt yn y llwyd, ac enkil drachefyn hyt ar y vydin yd oed Howel uab Emryr Lydaw a Gualchmei uab Gwyar yn y llwyd. A phan welas y gŵyr hynny eu kedymdeithon yn ffo, enynu o lit megys fflam yn enynu godeith, gan alw y rei a oedynt ar ffo a chyrchu eu 5 gelynnyon. A chymhell ar ffo y rei a oedynt yn eu herlit ȳnteu kyn no hynny gan eu bŵr ac eu llad, a gŵneuthur aerua heb orfoys onadunt, hyt pan deuthant hyt ar vydin yr amheraŵdys.

53. A phan welas yr amheraŵdys yr aerua oe wyr, 10 bryssyâd a oruc yn borth udunt. Ac yna y gŵnaethpôyt y Brytanyeit yn veir; kanys Kynuarch tywyssâc Trigeri a dôy vil y gyt ac ef a las yna. Ac yna y llas or parth arall trywyr, nyt amgen, Rigyfarch a Bolconi a Lâs o Votlan. A phei bydynt tywyssogyon teyrnassoed, 15 yr oessoed a delhynt gof hyt vraet ac a enrydedynt eu molyant ac eu clot. Ac eissoes pôy bynhac a gyfarffei a Hoel neu a Gualchmei oc eu gelynnyon, ny diagei ae eneit ganta. A gŵedy eu dyuot, megys y dywespôyt uchot, hyt ym plith bydin yr amheraŵdys, 20 yn damgylchedic oc eu gelynnyon y syrthassant y trywyr hynny. Ac ȳrth hynny Howel a Gualchmei, y rei ny magyssit yn yr oessoed kyn noc ȳnt neb well noc ȳnt, pan welsant yr aerua oc eu kedymdeithon, yn ȳchyr y kyrchassant hent ac yman, yn o bop parth yn gyffredin 25 yn dygalhau ac yn blinaid bydin yr amheraŵdys, ac megys lluchet yn llad a gyfarffei ac ȳnt, ac yn annoc eu kedymdeithon; a Gualchmei yn damunaid oe holl dihewyt ymgaffel a Les amheraŵdys y gymhell arnau 30 peth a digonei ym milwryaeth. Ac nyt oed haed barnu pôy oreu, ae Hoel ae Gualchmei.

54. Ac odyna Gualchmei a gafas y damunedic hynt. Ac yn ȳchyr kyrchu yr amheraŵdys a oruc, a gossot arnau. Ac eissoes Les, megys yd oed yn dechreu

blodeua& dewred y ieuencit ac yn va&r y ynni, nyt oed well dim ganta& ynteu noc ymgaffel ar ry& uarcha&c clotua&r h&nn&, yr h&nn a gymellei y wybot beth vei y angerd ae de&red. Ac &rth hynny dirua&r le&benynd a 5 gymerth ynda& &rth ymgaffel ohona& a g&r kynglotuor-russet a G&alchmei. Ac ymerbynyeit yn galet a &naeth pob vn ae gilid, megys na &elat r&g deu vil&r ymlad a gyffelyp y h&nn&. A phan yttoedynt &y yn ne&idya& kaledyon dyrnodeu, a phob vn yn IIafurya& agheu y 10 gilyd, nachaf y Rufeinwyr ynn ympentyrya& yn eu kylch, hyt pan vu reit y Walchmei a Howel ac eu bydinoed enkilya& hyt ar vydin Arthur, gan eu IIad or Rufeinwyr yn drut.

55. A phan welas Arthur yr aerua yd oedit yn y 15 wneuthur oe wyr ef, tynu Caletu&lch y gledyf goreu a &naeth, ac yn vchel dy&edut val hynn: “ Py acha&s y ged&ch ch&i y g&reicolyon wyr hynn y gen&ch? Nac aet vn yn vy& onadunt, nac aet. Koffe&ch a&ch deheuoed, y rei yn gyfr&ys yn y sa&l ymladeu kyn no 20 hynn a darestygassant dec teyrnas ar hugeint &rth vym medyant. Koffe&ch a&ch hendadeu, y rei, pan oedynt gadarnach g&yr Rufein no hedi&, ae g&naethant yn dretha&l udunt. Koffe&ch a&ch rydit, yr honn y mae yr hanher g&yr hynn yn keissa& y d&yn y gen&ch. Ac &rth 25 hynny nac aet vn yn vy& onadunt, nac aet.” A chan dywedut yr ymadrodyon hynny, kyrchu y elynyon ac eu b&r& dan y draet ac eu IIad. A ph&y bynnac a gyfarffei ac ef, o vn dyrna&t y IIadei ac ef ae varch. Ac &rth hynny pa&b a foyn racda&, megys y foyn anieileit rac 30 IIe& creula&n, pan vei ne&byn ma&r arna& ac ynteu yn keissa& b&yt. A ph&y bynhac o dam&ein a gyfarffei ac ef, nys differei y arueu ef rac Caletu&lch, hyt pan vei reit ida& talu y eneit y gyt ae baet. Deu urenhin oc eu drycdam&ein a gyfaruuant ac ef, Sertor brenhin Libia

a Pholites brenhin Bitinia. Ar deu hynny gŵedy llad eu penneu a anuones Arthur y Rufein.

56. A gŵedy gŵelet or Brytanyeit eu brenhin yn ymlad uelly,¹ gleŵder ac ehofynder a gymerassant, a chan tebhau eu bydinoed o vn vryt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr gan darparu 5 mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes gŵrthŵyncbu yn wychyr a oruc y Rufeinwyr udunt, ac o dysc Les amheraŵdyr llafuryaŵ y talu aerua yr Brytanyeit. A chymeint uu yr ymlad yna o bop part a chyt pei² yr aŵr honno y dechreuynt yr ymlad. Or neill part yd oed yr arderchaŵc vrenhin 10 Arthur yn llad y elynyon, ac yn annoc y wyr y sefyll yn ŵraŵl. Ac or part arall yd oed Les amheraŵdyr yn annoc y Rufeinwyr ac yn eu dysgu ac yn eu moli. Ac ny orfoŵyssel ynteu yn llad ac yn bŵr y elynyon ac yn kylchynu y vydinoed ehun. A phy elyn bynac a 15 gyfarffei ac ef, a gŵayŵ neu a chledyf y lladei. Ac uelly o bop part y bydei Arthur yn gŵneuthur aerua. Kanys gŵeitheu y bydynt trechaf³ y Brytanyeit, gŵeitheu ereill y bydynt⁴ trechaf³ y Rufeinwyr. A phan yttoedynt hŵy⁵ yn yr ymfust hŵnnŵ, heb wybot py diŵ y damgêinei 20 y vudugolyaeth, nachaf Morud iarll Caer Loyŵ yn dyuot ar llieg a dyŵedassam ni y hadaŵ uchot yg gŵersyll, ac yn deissyfyt⁶ yn kyrchu eu gelynyon yn dirybud or tu yn eu⁷ hol ac yn mynet drostunt, gan eu gŵasgaru a 25 gŵneuthur aerua diruaŵr y meint. Ac yna y syrthassant⁸ llâber o vilyoed or Rufeinwyr. Ac yna y dygŵydyss Les amheraŵdyr yn vrathedic gan leif neb vn, ac y bu varŵ. Ac yna, kyt bei drôy diruaŵr lafur, y Brytanyeit a gaŵsant y maes.⁹

57. Ac yna y gŵasgarassant¹ y Rufeinwyr² yr diffeithôch 30 ac yr coedyd, ac ofyn yn eu kymell. Ereill yr dinassoed

(Ch. 56). 1 y velly? the initial letters are illegible, 2 chyn bei, 3 drechaf, 4 bydei, 5 y, 6 deissyfiedie, 7 y, 8 syrthysant, 9 ar gorniut add. (Ch. 57). 1 gwasgaryssant, 2 rei add.

ar kestyll ac yr lleoed kadarn y ffyoyn; ar Brytanyeit oc eu hol yn³ eu hymlit, ac o druanaf aerua⁴ yn eu llad ac yn eu dala ac yn eu hyspeila⁶. Ac uelly megys y rodynt y ran v⁶ya⁵ onadunt eu d⁶yla⁶ yn wreiga⁶l y eu 5 r⁶yma⁶ ac y eu karcharu, y geissa⁶ ystynu ychydic y⁶ eu hoedel. A hynny⁷ o ja⁶n vra⁶t⁸ Du⁶. Kanys eu hendadeu gynteu kyn no hynny yn andylyedus a 6nathoedynt⁹ y Brytanyeit yn dretha⁶l udunt; ar Brytanyeit yna yn nackau udunt y dreth yd oedynt yn 10 andylyedus yn y cheissa⁶ gantunt.¹⁰

58. A g⁶edy caffel o Arthur y vudugolyaeth, ef a erchis g⁶ahanu ar neilltu¹ kalaned y wyrda ef y 6rth y elynia⁶l galaned ac eu ky⁶eirya⁶ o vrenhina⁶l defa⁶t, ac eu d⁶yn yr² manachlogoed a vei yn eu g⁶lat yn ansodedic, 15 ac yno eu cladu yn enrydedus. Ac yna y ducp⁶yt corff Bedwyr hyt y dinas ehun yn Normandi gan dirua⁶r g⁶ynuan y³ gan y Normanyeit. Ac yno y my⁶n myn⁶ent ar deheu y dinas y clad⁶yt yn enrydedus gyr⁴ ll⁶l y mur. Kei a ducp⁶yt yn urathedic hyt yg Kam, y kastell⁵ a 20 6nathoed⁶ ehun. Ac yno ny bu bell g⁶edy hynny yny vu⁷ uar⁶ Kei⁸ or brath h⁶nn⁶. Ac yn y forest a oed yn agos yno y my⁶n manachla⁶c ermitwyr or enryded a dylyei iarll yr Angi⁶ y clad⁶yt. Hodlyn ty⁶yssaa⁶c a ducp⁶yt hyt y⁹ dinas ehun, yr h⁶n a el⁶ir y Tyruan, ac 25 yno y clad⁶yt. Y g⁶ynda ereill a erchis Arthur eu d⁶yn yr manachlogoed nessaf udunt ar hyt y g⁶latoed.¹⁰ Ac yna¹¹ yd erchis ef y 6yr y wlat honno cladu y elynyon,¹² ac anuon corff Les amhera⁶dyr hyt yn sened Rufein. Ac erchi menegi udunt na dylyynt h⁶y¹³¹⁴ teyrnget o ynys 30 Prydein amgen no h⁶nn⁶. Ac yno y bu Arthur y gayaf

(Ch. 57). 3 oc eu holl ynni yn, 4 agheu, 5 vvyaff, 6 om., 7 ac uelly, 8 varn, 9 wnaethoedynt, 10 yn y cheissav yn andylyedus y ganthunt

(Ch. 58). 1 gvahanu a neilltua, 2 yr, 3 om., 4 ger, 5 hyt—kastell: hyt y castell, 6 wnaethoed, 7 yny vu: y bu, 8 om., 9 yn y, 10 gyladoed, 11 odyna, 12 gelynyon, 13 vy, 14 tremygu y brytanyeit nac erchi add.

hōnnō yn goresgyn y dinassoed y Mōrgōin.¹⁵ A phan yttoed yr haf yn dechreu dyuot, ac Arthur yn ysgynu mynyd Mynheeu¹⁶ 6rth vynet parth a Rufein, nachaf genadeu o ynys Prydein yn menegi y Arthur ry daruot¹⁷ y Vedraōt y nei, uab y chōaer, goresgyn¹⁸ ynys Prydein a 5 gōisgaō¹⁹ coron y teyrnas am y pen²⁰ ehun²¹ drōy greulonder a brat, a thynu²² Gōenhōyfar vrenhines oe rieingadeir a ry gysgu²³ genti, gan lygru kyfreith dōywaōl y neithoreu.²⁴

59. A gōedy menegi hynny y Arthur, yn y llē peidyaōl 10 a oruc ae darpar am vynet y Rufein, ac ymchoelut parth ac ynys Prydein, a brenhined yr ynyssed y gyt ac ef. A gellōg Howel uab² Emry Lydaō a llu gantaō y tagnefedu ac y hedychu y gōladoed.³ Kanys yr yscymunedickaf⁴ vradōr gan Vedraōt a anuonassei 15 Cheldric⁵ tyōyssāōc y Saeson hyt yn Germania y gynullaō y llu mōyaf a gallēi yn borth idaō. A rodi udunt a oruc o Humyr hyt yn Yscotlont, ac yn achōanec kymeint ac a uuassei y⁶ Hors a Heingyst⁷ kyn no hynny yg Kent.⁸ Ac 6rth hynny y deuth Cheldric ac 6yth cant⁹ llog yn llān 20 o wyr aruaōc gantaō¹⁰ o baganyeit,¹¹ a gōrhau y Vedraōt ac ufudhau megys y vrenhin. Ac neur daroed idaō gedymdeithockau ataō yr Yscottyeit ar Fficheit, a phaōb or a 6ypei ef idaō gassau y ewythyr,¹² hyt pan yttoedynt oll petwar¹³ ugein mil rōg Cristonogyon a phaganyeit. 25

60. Ac a hynny o nifer gantaō y deuth Medraōt¹ hyt yn aber Temys, y llē yd oedynt llogeu Arthur yn disgynnu. A gōedy dechreu ymlad, ef a² wnaeth aerua diruaōr

(Ch. 58). 15 gyrescyn dinassoed bōrgōyn, 16 mynheu, 17 darvot? 18 gvereseyn, 19 arwisiaō? 20 ben, 21 om., 22 thynhu, 23 chysgu, ry om. 24 neithoryeu

(Ch. 59). 1 peidaō, 2 ac ellvg hvel m., 3 gyledi, 4 yscymunediceaf. 5 chledric, 6 om., 7 hengist, 8 ygkeint, 9 can, 10 om., 11 paganyeit, 12 *The word before hyt is (a)rthur; between pav(b) and this there is a hole in the MS.,* 13 *The initial letters seem to be deu, what follows is illegible*

(Ch. 60). 1 om.

onadunt yn dyuot yr tir. Kanys yna y dygwydassant Ara⁶n uab Kynuarch, brenhin Yscotlont, a G⁷alchme[i]⁸ uab⁴ G⁵yar. Ac yn ol Ara⁶n y deuth Owein vab⁴ Vryen yn vrenhin yn Reget, y g⁶r g⁶edy hynny a vu clotua⁶ 5 yn Pa⁶er o gynhenneu. Ac or diwed, kyt⁵ bei dr⁶y dirua⁶r lafur a thr⁶y eu Pa⁶ad,⁶ Arthur ae lu a gafas y tir. A chan talu yr aerua⁶ ynt a gymellassant Vedra⁶t ae lu ar ffo. A chyn bei mwy eiryf Nu Medra⁶t no Nu Arthur, eissoes kyreinach a doethach yd ymledynt o beunydy⁶a¹ 10 ymladeu.⁸ Ac 6rth hynny y bu dir yr anudona⁶a¹ gan Vedra⁶t gymryt y ffo. Ar nos honno, g⁶edy ymgynullab⁶ y wascaredic¹⁰ lu y gyt, yd aeth hyt yg Kaer Wynt. A g⁶edy clybot o Wenh⁶yuar¹¹ hynny, diobeitha⁶ a oruc, a mynet o Gaer Efra⁶c hyt yg Kaer¹² Lion ar Wysc. 15 Ac¹³ y my⁶n manachla⁶c g⁶raged a¹⁴ oed yno g⁶isga⁶ yr abit ymdanei ac ada⁶ cad⁶ y di⁶erdeb yn eu plith o hynny allan. Ar abit honno a vu ymdanei hyt agheu.

61. Ac odyna Arthur a gymerth llit ma⁶r ynda⁶ am golli¹ ohona⁶ y sa⁶l vilioed hynny, a pheri cladu y wyr. 20 Ar trydyd dyd kyrchu Caer Wynt a oruc ac yn diannot y chylchynu. Ac yr hynny ny pheid⁶ys Medra⁶t ar hynn a dechreuassei, namyn, gan annoc y wyr, eu gossot yn vydinoed a mynet allan or dinas y ymlad ac Arthur y ewythyr. A g⁶edy dechreu ymlad, aerua va⁶r o pob 25 part a wnaethant. Ac eissoes m⁶yaf vu yr aerua o wyr Medra⁶t; ac yn dybryt kymell arna⁶ ada⁶ y maes. Ac ny hanb⁶yll⁶ys² Medra⁶t yna gohir 6rth gladu y ladedigyon, namyn ffo a oruc part a Cherny⁶.

62. Ac 6rth hynny Arthur, yn bryderus ac yn lliadi⁶c

(Ch. 60). 2 aeth ac a add., 3 g⁶alchmei, 4 mab, 5 only ky is legible, 6 a thr⁶y eu Pa⁶ad om., 7 medra⁶t, 8 o beunydy⁶a¹ ymladeu: wyr arthur, kanys kyfr⁶ys oedynt o peunydy⁶a¹ ymlad, 9 kelwyd⁶a⁶ add., 10 g⁶asgaredigyon, 11 vrenhines add., 12 ygkaer, 13 yno add., 14 om.

(Ch. 61). 1 rygolli, 2 handen⁶ys

a acha⁶s dianc y t⁶yllyr¹ y ganta⁶, yn y lle² ae hymlyn⁶s hyt y wlat honno hyt ar lan Kamlan, y lle yd oed Vedra⁶t yn y aros.³ Ac 6rth hynny megys yd oed Vedra⁶t gle⁶aaf a g⁶ychraf yn cyrchu, yn y lle gossot y varchogyon yn vydinoed a oruc. Kanys g⁶ell oed 5 ganta⁶ y lad neu ynteu a orffei, no ffo yn h⁶y no hynny. Kanys yd oed ettwa ganta⁶ o eiryf trugein mil. Ac o hynny y g⁶naeth ef whech⁴ bydin, a whech⁵ g⁶yr a thrugeint a chwe⁶ chant a chwe⁶ mil ym pob bydin o wyr arua⁶c. Ac or rei nyt aed⁷ yn y chwech⁴ bydin ef a 10 wnaeth bydin ida⁶ ehun, a rodi llwydron y bop vn or rei ereill oll.⁸ A dyscu pa⁶b onadunt ac eu hannoc y ymlad a oruc, gan ada⁶ udunt enryded a chyfoeth, os ef a orffei. Ac or parth arall Arthur a ossodes y wyr⁹ ynteu dr⁶y na⁶ bydin; a gorchymyn y ba⁶p onadunt¹⁰ 15 ac annoc llad y lladron t⁶yllywyr yskymyn,¹¹ a dathoedynt o wladoed ereill o dysc y brat⁶r¹² y geissa⁶ y digyfoethi ynteu. “Ar bobyl a 6el6ch¹³ racko,” heb Arthur, “a¹⁴ gynull⁶yt o wlatoed¹⁵ amryfaelon, ac aghyfyeith ynt a llesc ag aghyfr⁶ys ar ymlad. Ac ny allant g⁶rth⁶ynebu 20 y⁶ch, kanys kyfr⁶ys y⁶ch ch⁶i.”¹⁶ Ac velly pa⁶b onadunt yn annoc y wyr or parth arall.¹⁷ Ac yn deissyfyt ymgyfaruot a 6naeth y bydinoed yghyt,¹⁸ a dechreu ymlad a newidya⁶ dyrnodeu yn vynych. A chymeint vu yr aerua yna o bop parth ac megys yd oed g⁶ynfan¹⁹ y rei 25 meir⁶ yn kyffroi y rei by⁶ ar lit ac ymlad, ac megys yd oed blin a llafuryus²⁰ y yscruenau nae datkanu. Kanys o bop parth y brethynt ac y brethit 6ynteu; 6ynt a ledynt ac 6ynteu a ledit.

63. Ac or diwed g⁶edy treula⁶ ll⁶ær or dyd yn y mod

(Ch. 62). 1 y mynychet h⁶nn⁶ add., 2 ef add., 3 arhos, 4 whech, 5 6he, 6 whe, 7 aeth, 8 rodi llwydron y pop bydin oll, 9 lu, 10 ohonunt, 11 ysgymun, 12 brad⁶r, 13 welh⁶chi, 14 ar, 15 wladoed, 16 y⁶chi, 17 or parth arall: o pop parth, 18 ygyt, 19 k⁶ynuan, 20 llafurus

hōnnō, Arthur ae vydin a gyrchōys y vydin y gōydat¹ bot y tōyllōr gan Vedraōt yndi,² ac agori ffyrд udunt ar clefydeu,³ ac yn diannot mynet drostunt, a gōneuthur⁴ aerua diruaōr⁵ onadunt. Kanys yn y lē y dygōydōys 5 yr yscymunedickaf⁶ vradōr hōnnō gan Vedraōt, a lāber o vilioed y gyt ac ef. Ac eissoes yr hynny ny ffoyssant⁷ y rei ereill, namyn ymgynnullaō y gyt⁸ or maes oll, ac yn herōyd eu gleōder keissaō ymgynhal a gōrthōynebu y Arthur. Ac 6rth hynny gōychraf a girattaf⁹ a 10 chreulonaf aerua a vu y rydunt yna o bop parth, ac eu bydinoed yn syrthaō. Ac yna o bop¹⁰ parth y¹⁰ Vedraōt y syrthassant¹¹ Cheldric¹² ac Elafyōs,¹³ Egberinc¹⁰ brenhin or Saeson; or Gōydydyl Gilapadric,¹⁴ Gillamōri, Gillasel, Gillamor.¹⁵ Yr Yscottyeit ar Ffichtoit ac 6ynt ac eu 15 harglōydi oll hayach a las. Ac o bleit¹⁶ Arthur y lāas Osbrinc brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc,¹⁷ Kadōr Lemenic¹⁸ iarll Kernyō, Kasvallaōn, a lāber o vililioed¹⁹ y gyt ac 6ynte,²⁰ rōg y Brytanyeit a chenedloed ereill a ducsynt y gyt ac 6ynt. Ac ynte yr arderchaōc 20 vrenhin Arthur a vrathōyt yn agheuaōl, ac a ducrōyt odyna hyt yn ynys Avallach y iachau y welieu. Coron y²¹ teyrnas o ynys Prydein a gymynnōys ynte y Gustenin²² vab Kadōr iarll Kernyō y gar. Dōy vlyned a deugeint²³ a phump kant gōedy dyfot Crist yg knaōt 25 dyn oed hynny yna.

(Ch. 63). 1 gōydyat, 2 yndiane, 3 cledyfeu, 4 tristaf, 5 *om.*, 6 ysgymunediceaf, 7 foassant, 8 yghyt, 9 girattaff, 10 *om.*, 11 syrthyssant, 12 chledric, 13 elefyōys, 14 gillapadric, 15 gillamor gillasel gillamōri, 16 pleit, 17 denmarch, 18 llymenic, 19 vilioed, 20 6ynt, 21 *om.*, 22 gustenin, 23 deu vgeint

III. THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH.

I. Kerdet a orugant 6y y dýd h6nn6 educher. H6ny1 výd kaer uaen2 gýmr6t a welasit,3 u6yhaf ar keyrýd y být4. Nachaf g6r5 du m6y6 no thrý6yr7 y být h6nn a welant8 yn dýuot or gaer. Amkeudant9 6rtha6: "Pan doý ti,¹⁰ 6r?" "Or gaer a wel6ch ch6i yna."¹¹ "Pieu y gaer?"¹² "Meredic a wýr 5 y6chi.¹³ Nýt oes yn y být ný 6ýppo pieu y gaer honn. Wrnach Ga6r pieu."¹⁴ "Pý uoes yssy6d y osp a phellenhic y diskýnnu yn y gaer honn?" "Ha vnben, Du6 ach notho!¹⁵ Ný dody6¹⁶ neb guestei eiroet oheni¹⁷ ae uý6¹⁸ gantha6.¹⁹ Ný edir neb idi namyn a dýcc6y²⁰ y gerd."²¹ 10

2. Kýrchu y porth a orugant. Amka6d¹ G6rhýr Gualsta6t Ieithoet: "A oes portha6r?"² "Oes. A titheu³ ný bo teu dý penn,⁴ pýr⁵ y kýuerchý dý?" "Agor y porth!" "Nac agoraf." "P6ystýr⁶ nas agor6 ti?" "Kýllell a edý6 ym m6yt⁷ a llýnn y mual,⁸ ac amsathýr yn neuad Vrnach.⁹ 15 Namýn y gerd6r a dýcc6y¹⁰ y gerd nýt agorir."¹¹ Amka6d Kei:¹² "Y portha6r, y mae kerd genhýf i." "Pa gerd yssy6d genhýt ti?" "Yslipan6r cledýueu goreu yn y být 6ýf ui." "Mi a af y dýwedut hýnný y Vrnach¹³ Ga6r, ac a dýgaf atteb yt." 20

VARIANTS H=RED BOOK OF HERGEST, P=PENIARTH MS. IV.

(Ch. 1). 1 yny H, 2 ua6r H, 3 welynt H, 4 v6yhaf or byt H, 5 6r H, 6 oed add. H, 7 yn add. H, 8 a welant om. H, 9 ac y dywedassant 6ynteu H, 10 deuy di H, 11 racco H, 12 heb 6ynt add. H, 13 y6ch ch6i H, 14 bieu H, 15 nodho H, 16 deuth H, 17 eiryoet ohonei H, 18 vywyt H, 19 ganta6 H, 20 dycko H, 21 ganta6 add. H.

(Ch. 2). 1 heb y H, 2 bortha6r H, 3 thithen H, 4 dy dana6t yth benn H, 5 py rac H, 6 Py ystyr H, 7 b6yt H, 8 ym bual H, 9 6rnach ga6r H, 10 dycko H, 11 yma heno bellach add. H, 12 Heb y kei yna H, 13 6rnach H

3. Dýuot a oruc ý porthaôr ý mýôn. Dýwaôt¹ Wrnach Gaôr:² "Whedleu³ porth genhýt?"⁴ "Yssýdýnt genhýf. Kýweithýd ýssýd ýn drôs ý porth, ac⁵ a uýnnýnt dýuot ý mýôn." "A ouýnneist ti⁶ a oed gerd ganthunt?"⁷ "Gouýnneis.⁸ 5 Ac vn onadunt a dýwaôt galle⁹ ýslipanu cledýueu."¹⁰ "Oed¹¹ reit ý mi¹² ôrth hônnô. Ys guers ýd ôýf ýn keissaô a olchei výg cledýf; nýs rýgeueis.¹³ Gat hônnô ý mýôn, cans oed¹⁴ gerd ganthaô."

4. Dýuot¹ ý porthaôr ac agori ý porth. A dýuot Kei ý mýôn ehun. A chýuarch guell a oruc ef ý Wrnach Gaôr. Kadeir a dodet ý danaô.² Dýwaôt³ Wrnach⁴: "Ha ôr, ae gvir a dýwedir arnat galle⁵ ýslipanu cledýueu?" "Mi ae digonaf."⁶ Dýdôýn⁷ ý cledýf attaô⁸ a orucpôýt.⁹ Kýmrýt agalen gleis a oruc Kei ý dan ý geffeil. "Pôý well genhýt 15 arnaô,¹⁰ ae guýnseit ae grûmseit?" "Yr hônn a uo da genhýt ti, malpei teu uei, gôna arnaô." Glanhau a oruc hanher ý lleill gýllell idaô, ae rodi ýn ý lab a oruc. "A reinc dý uod di hýnný?" "Oed well genhýf noc ýssýd ým gôlat, bei oll ýt uei¹¹ val hýnn. Dýhed a beth bot gôr kýstal 20 a thi heb gedýmdeith." "Oia ôrda, mae¹² imi gedýmdeith kýny dýgo[n]ho¹³ ý gerd honn." "Pwý ýô hônnô?" "Aet ý porthaôr allan, a mi a dýwedaf ar arôýdon idaô.¹⁴ Penn ý waýô a daô ý ar ý baladýr. Ac ýssef a dýgýrch ý guaet ý ar y guýnt ac a diskýn ar ý baladýr."¹⁵ Agori ý porth a 25 wnaethpôýt, a dýuot Bedwýr ý mýôn. Dýwaôt¹⁶ Kei: "Budugaôl ýô Bedwýr, kýn ný digonho¹⁷ ý gerd hon."

(Ch. 3). 1 ac y dywaôt H, 2 ôrthaô H, 3 chwedleu H, 4 y gennyt H, in P, y has been added over the line, 5 om. H, 6 ouynneist di H, 7 gantunt hôý H, 8 heb ef add. H, 9 gôybot H, 10 ohonaô yn da add. H, 11 as oed H, 12 ynni H, 13 ac nys keueis H, 14 kan oes H

(Ch. 4). 1 a oruc H, 2 geyr bron gôrnach add. H, 3 ac y dywaôt H, 4 ôrthaô add. H, 5 arnat ti y gôdost H, 6 Mi a ônn hynn yn da heb y kei H, 7 Dôýn H, 8 ôrnach H, 9 wnaethpôýt attaô H, 10 a gonyr or deu pôý oed oreu gantaô H, 11 pei bei oll ual H, 12 y mae ymi H, 13 dycko H, 14 idaô y arwydon H, 15 eilweith add. H, 16 ac y dywaôt H, 17 wypo H

5. A¹ dadleu mār a uu ar y ḡȳr h̄ynn̄y allan. D̄yuot² Kei a Bedw̄r y m̄ȳn. A guas ieuanc a doeth ḡyt³ ac ̄ȳnt y m̄ȳn, vn mab Custennhin heussār. Sef a ̄naeth ef ae ged̄ymdeithon a gl̄n⁴ ̄rthā mal nat oed v̄ȳ no dim ganthunt⁵ m̄ȳnet⁶ dros ȳ teir catlys a wnaethant⁷ h̄yt pan 5 d̄yuuant⁸ y m̄ȳn ȳ gaer. Amkeudant⁹ ȳ ged̄ymdeithon ̄rth vab Custenhin: "Goreu d̄yn ȳo."¹⁰ O¹¹ h̄ynn̄y allan ȳ gelwit Goreu mab Custenhin. Guascaru a orugant ̄ȳ ȳ eu llettyeu, mal ȳ keffynt llad eu llettyw̄r heb ̄ȳbot ȳr cār.

6. Ȳ cledyf a daruu ȳ ̄rteith. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llā 10 Wrnach Kār,¹ ȳ malphei ȳ edrych a ranghei ȳ uod idā ȳ weith.² D̄ywāt³ ȳ kār: "Da ȳo ȳ gueith, a ranc bod ȳo genh̄yf." Amkād⁴ Kei: "D̄y wein⁵ a lygr̄ys d̄y gledyf. D̄yro di imi ȳ diot ȳ kellellprenneu⁶ oheni,⁷ a chaffyf inheu ḡneuthur rei newyd⁸ idā." A ch̄ymryt ȳ wein ohonā, ar 15 cledyf⁹ yn ȳ llā arall. D̄yuot¹⁰ ohonā vch pen ȳ kār, malphei¹¹ ȳ cledyf a dottei yn ȳ wein. Ȳ ossot a oruc ȳm phen¹² ȳ kār, a llad ȳ penn ȳ ergyt ȳ arnā. Diffeithā ȳ gaer, a d̄ȳn a v̄ynnassant o tl̄ysseu.¹³ Ȳg k̄yuen¹⁴ yr vn d̄yd ȳm phen¹⁵ ȳ v̄l̄ȳd̄ȳn ȳ deuthant¹⁶ ȳ lys Arthur, a 20 chledyf Wrnach Gār gantunt.

7. Dywedut a ̄naethant y Arthur y ual y daruu udunt. Arthur a dywāt: "Pa beth yssyd iānaf y geissā gyntaf or annoetheu hynn̄?" "Iānaf ȳo," heb ̄ynte, "keissā Mabon uab Modron. Ac nyt kaffel arnā nes kaffel Eidoel 25 uab Aer y gar yn gyntaf." Kyuodi a oruc Arthur a milwyr ynys Prydein gantā y geissā Eidoel. A dyuot a orugant hyt yn rac Kaer Glini, yn y ll̄e yd oed Eidoel yg

(Ch. 5). 1 *om.* H, 2 gan y ḡȳr a oed allan am dyuot Bedwyr a Chei H, 3 A dyuot ḡas ieuanc oed H, 4 yg glyn H, 5 mal—ganthunt *om.* H, 6 dyuot H, 7 a wnaethant *om.* H, 8 yttoed H, 9 Y dywedassant H, 10 ti a orugost hynn̄ goreu dyn ̄yt H, 11 Ac o H

(Ch. 6). 1 gār H, 2 ḡeith H, 3 ac y dywāt H, 4 Y dywāt H, 5 wein di H, 6 kyllellbrenneu H, 7 ohonei H, 8 ac y wneuthur ereill o newyd H, 9 chedyf P, 10 a dyuot H, 11 mal pei H, 12 ynte ym pennH, 13 or da ar tl̄ysseu H, 14 penn H, 15 P *ends*

karchar. Seuyll a oruc Glini ar vann y gaer; ac y dywa^{nt}: "Arthur, py holy di y mi, pryt nam gedy yn y tarren honn, nyt da im yndi, ac nyt digrif, nyt g^{wn}enith, nyt keirch im, kyn ny cheissych ditheu wneuthur cam im?"

5 Arthur a dywa^{nt}: "Nyt yr dr^uc itti y deuthum i yma, namyn y geissa^u y karchara^ur yssyd gennyt." "Mi a rodaf y carchara^ur itti, ac ny darparysswn y rodi y neb. Ac y gyt a hynny vy nerth am porth a geffy di." Y g^{wn}yr a dywa^{nt} wrth Arthur: "Argl^uyd, dos di adref. Ny elly 10 di uynet ath lu y geissa^u peth mor uan ar rei hynn."

Arthur a dywa^{nt}: "G^{wn}rhyr G^{wn}alsta^{nt} Ieithoed, itti y mae ia^un mynet yr neges honn. Yr holl ieithoed yssyd gennyt, a chyfyeith y^t ar rei or adar ar annieileit. Eidoel, itti y mae ia^un mynet y geissa^u dy geuynder^u y^t gyt am g^{wn}yr i. Kei 15 a Bedwyr, gobeith y^t gennfyd y neges yd eloch ymdanei y chaffel. Euch im yr neges honn."

8. Kerdet a orugant racdunt hyt att v^uyalch Gilg^{wn}ri. Gouyn a oruc G^{wn}rhyr idi: "Yr Du^u, a ^udost ti dim y wrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducp^uyt yn teirnossic ody r^ung y vam 20 ar paret?" Y u^uyalch a dywa^{nt}: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eingon gof a oed yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc oed^un. Ny wnaethp^uyt g^{wn}eth arnei, namyn tra uu vyg geluin arnei bob ucher. Hedi^u nyt oes kymmeint kneuen ohonei heb dreula^u. Dial Du^u arnaf, o chigleu i dim y wrth 25 y g^{wn}r a ovynn^uch ch^ui. Peth yssyd ia^un hagen a dyl yet y mi y wneuthur y gennadeu Arthur, mi ae g^{wn}af. Kenedlaeth vileit yssyd gynt rith^uys Du^u no mi; mi a af yn gyuarwyd ragoch yno."

9. Dyuot a orugant hyt yn lle yd oed kar^u Redynure, 30 "Kar^u Redynure, yma y doetham ni attat kennadeu Arthur, kany ^udam anieil hyn no thi. Dywet, a wdost di dim y wrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducp^uyt yn deirnossic y wrth y uam?" Y kar^u a dywa^{nt}: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, nyt

oed namyn vn reit o bop tu ym penn. Ac nyt oed yma goet namyn un o gollen derwen. Ac y tyfwys honno yn dar can keing. Ac y dygwydys y dar gwydy hynny. A hediō nyt oes namyn 6ystyn coch ohonei. Yr hynny hyt hediō yd 6yf i yma; ny chigleu i dim or neb a ouynn6ch ch6i. 5 Miui hagen a uydaf gyfarwyd y6ch, kanys kennadeu Arthur y6ch, hyt lle y mae anidueil gynt a rith6ys Du6 no mi."

10. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yd oed cuan Cum Ca6lyt. "Cuan C6m Ca6lyt, yma y mae kennadeu Arthur. A 6dost di dim y 6rth Vabon vab Modron a ducp6yt?" *et cetera.* 10 "Pei as g6yp6n, mi ae dywed6n. Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, y c6m ma6r a wel6ch glynn coet oed. Ac y deuth kenedlaeth o dynyon ida6, ac y diua6yt. Ac y tyu6ys yr eil coet ynda6. Ar trydyd coet y6 h6nn. A minneu neut ydynt yn gynyon boneu vy esgyll. Yr hynny hyt hediō ny chiglef i dim or 15 g6ra ouynn6ch ch6i. Mi hagen a uydaf gyuarwyd y genadeu Arthur, yny deloch hyt lle y mae yr annueil hynaf yssyd yn y byt h6nn, a m6yaf a dreigyl, eryr Gwern Ab6y.

11. G6rhyr a dywa6t: "Eryr Gwern Ab6y, ni a doetham gennadeu Arthur attat y ouyn itt a 6dost dim y 6rth Vabon 20 uab Modron a duc" *et cetera.* Yr eryr a dywa6t: "Mi a deuthum yma yr ys pell o amser. A phann deuthum yma gyntaf, maen a oed ym, ac y ar y benn ef y pig6n y syr bob ucher; weithon nyt oes dyrnued yn y uchet. Yr hynny hyt hediō yd 6yf i yma. Ac ny chiglef i dim y 6rth y g6r a 25 ouynn6ch ch6i, onyt un treigyl yd euthum 'y geissa6 uym b6yt hyt yn Lynn Ly6. A phann deuthum i yno, y lledeis uyg cryuangheu y my6n eha6c o debygu bot vym b6yt ynda6 wers va6r. Ac y tynn6ys ynteu ui hyt yr aff6ys, hyt pann uu abreid im ymdianc y ganta6. Sef a 6neuthum inheu, mi 30 am holl garant, mynet yg g6rys 6rtha6 y geissa6 y diuetha. Kennadeu a yrr6ys ynteu y gymot a mi. A dyuot a oruc ynteu attaf i y diot dec tryuer a deugeint oe geuyn. Onyt

ef a wyr peth or hynn a geissbch chbi, ny bnn i neb ae gbypo. Mi hagen a uydaf gyuarbyd ybch hyt lle y mae."

12. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yr oed. Dywedut a oruc yr eryr: "Ehabc Lyn Lyb, mi a deuthum attat gan gennadeu

5 Arthur y ouyn a bost dim y brth Vabon uab Modron, a ducbwyd yn teirnossic y brth y uam." "Y gymeint a wypbwyf i, mi ae dywedaf. Gan bob llanb yd af i ar hyt yr auon uchot, hyt pan delbwyf hyt y mach mur Kaer Loyb. Ac yno y keueis i ny cheueis eirmoet o drbc y gymeint. Ac mal y

10 crettoch, doet un ar uyn dby ysgbwyd i yma ohonabch." Ac ysef yd aeth ar dby ysgbwyd yr ehabc. Kei a Gbrhyr Gbalstaot Ieithoed. Ac y kerdassant hyt pann deuthant am y uagbwyd ar karcharaot. Yny uyd kbynuan a griduan a glywynt am y uagbwyd ac by. Gbrhyr a dywaot: "Pa dyn a gbyn yn y

15 maendy hn?" "Oia br, yssit le idab y gbynaot y neb yssyd yma. Mabon uab Modron yssyd yma yg carchar; ac ny charcharbyd neb kyndostet yn llwr carchar a mi, na charchar Lud La Ereint neu garchar Greit mab Eri." "Oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy ellng ae yr eur ae yr aryant ae

20 yr golut pressennaol, ae yr catwent ac ymlad?" "Y gymeint ohonof i a gaffer a geffir drby ymlad." Ymchoelut ohonunt by odyno, a dyuot hyt lle yd oed Arthur. Dywedut ohonunt y lle yd oed Mabon uab Modron yg karchar. Gbysyab a oruc Arthur milwyr yr ynys honn, a mynet hyt

25 yg Kaer Loyb, y lle yd oed Mabon yg karchar. Mynet a oruc Kei a Bedwyr ar dby yscbwyd y pysc. Tra yuttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, rbygab o Gei y uagbwyd a chymryt y carcharaot ar y geuyn. Ac ymlad ar gwyd ual kynt ar gwyd. Atref y doeth Arthur a Mabon gantaol yn ryd.

30 13. Dywedut a oruc Arthur: "Beth iaanhaf weithon y geissab yn gyntaf or annoetheu?" "Iaanhaf yb keissaab deu geneu gast Rymhi." "A wys," heb yr Arthur, "pa du y mae hi?" "Y mae," heb yr un, "yn Aber Deugledyf."

Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt yn ty Tringat yn Aber Cledyf. A gouyn a oruc 6rtha6 : "A glyweist ti y 6rthi hi yma? Py rith y mae hi?" "Yn rith bleidast," heb ynteu, "ae deu geneu genthi yd ymda. Hi a lada6d vy ysgrybul yn vynych. Ac y mae hi issot yn Aber Cledyf y my6n gogof." Sef a 5 oruc Arthur gyrru ym Prytwenn y long ar uor ac ereill ar y tir y hela yr ast; ae chylchynu uelly hi ae deu geneu. Ac eu datritha6 o Du6 y Arthur yn eu rith ehunein. Gwascaru a oruc llu Arthur bob un bob deu.

14. Ac ual yd oed Gwythyr mab Greida6l dydgweith yn 10 kerdet dros vynyd, y clywei leuein a gridua[n] girat; a garscon oed eu clybot. Achub a oruc ynteu parth ac yno. Ac mal y deuth yno, dispeila6 cledyf a wnaeth, a llad y t6ynpath 6rth y dayar, ac ev diffryt uelly rac y tan. Ac y dywedassant 6ynteu 6rtha6 : "D6c uendydh Du6 ar einym 15 gennyt. Ar hynn ny allo dyn vyth y ware, ni a do6n y warett itt." H6ynt6y wedy hynny a doethant ar na6 hesta6r llinat, a nodes Yspadaden Pennka6r ar Culh6ch, yn uessuredic oll heb dim yn eisseu ohonunt eithyr un llinchedyn; ar morgrugyn cloff a doeth a h6nn6 kynn y nos. 20

15. Pan yttoed Gei a Bedwyr yn eisted ar benn Pumlumon ar Garn Gwyllathyr ar wynt m6yaf yn y byt, edrych a 6naethant yn eu kylch. Ac 6ynt a 6elynt v6c ma6r parth ar deheu ym pell y 6rthunt heb drossi dim gan y g6ynt. Ac yna y dywa6t Kei : "Myn llad vyng kyueillt, 25 syll dy racco tan ryss6r." Bryssya6 a orugant parth ar m6c, a dynessau parth ac yno dan ymardisg6yl o bell. Yny uyd Dillus Uaruau6c yn deiuau baed coet. Llyna hagen y ryss6r m6yaf a ochela6d Arthur eiryoet. Heb y Bedwyr yna 6rth Gei : "Ae hatwaenost di ef?" "Atwen," heb y 30 Kei; "Llyna Dillus Uaruau6c. Nyt oes yn y byt kynllyuau a dalyo Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri, namyn kynllyuau o uaryf y g6r a wely di racko; ac ny m6ynhaa heuyl, onyt yn

vyb y tynnir a chyllhellprenneu oe uaraf, kanys breu uyd yn uar. "Mae an kynghor ninneu 6rth hynny?" heb y Bedwyr. "Gad6n ef," heb y Kei, "y yssu y wala or kic; a g6edy hynny kyscu a 6na." Tra yttoed ef yn hynny, 5 y buant 6ynteu yn g6neuthur kyllhellbrenneu. Pan 6ybu Gei yn diheu y uot ef yn kyscu, g6neuthur p6ll a oruc dan y draet m6yhaf yn y byt. A thara6 dyrna6t arna6 anueitraf6l y ueint a oruc, ae wascu yn y p6ll, hyt pan daroed udunt y gnithia6 yn ll6yr ar kyllhellbrenneu y uaryf; a g6edy 10 hynny y lad yn g6byl. Ac odyna yd aethant ell deu hyt yg Kelli Wic yg Kerny6, a chynllyuann o uaryf Dillus Uaruac6 gantunt. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llad Arthur. Ac yna y kanei Arthur yr eglyn h6nn :

15

"Kynnllyuau a oruc Kei
o uaryf Dillus uab Eurei;
pei iach, dy angheu uydei."

Ac am hynny y sorres Kei, hyt pan uu abreid y uilwyr yr ynyss honn tangneuedu y r6ng Kei ac Arthur. Ac eissoes nac yr anghyfnerth ar Arthur nac yr llad y wyr nyt 20 ymyrr6ys Kei yn reit gyt ac ef o hynny allan.

16. Ac yna y dywa6t Arthur: "Beth ia6naf weithon y geissa6 or annoetheu?" "Ia6naf yb keissa6 Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri." Kyn no hynny ychydic yd aeth Creidylat uerch Lud La6 Ereint gan Wythyr mab Greida6l. A chynn 25 kyscu genthi dyuot G6ynn uab Nud ae d6yn y treis. Kynnlla6 llu o Wythyr uab Greida6l a dyuot y ymlad a G6ynn mab Nud. A goruot o Wyn, a dala Greit mab Eri a Glinneu eil Taran a G6rg6st Letl6m a Dyfnarth y uab; a dala o Penn uab Netha6c a N6ython a Chyledyr Wyllt y 30 uab. A llad N6ython a oruc, a diot y gallon, a chymhell ar Kyledyr yssu callon y dat; ac am hynny yd aeth Kyledyr yg g6yllt. Clybot o Arthur hynny, a dyuot hyt y Gogled.

A dyuynn a oruc ef Gwynn uab Nud atta⁶, a gell⁶ng y wyrda y ganta⁶ oe garchar, a g⁶neuthur tangneued y r⁶ng Gwynn mab Nud a Gwythyr mab Greida⁶. Sef tangneued a wnaethp⁶yt, gadu y uor⁶yn yn ty y that yn diu⁶yn or d⁶y borth ; ac ymlad bob du⁶ kalan Mei uyth hyt dyd bra⁶t or 5 dyd h⁶nn⁶ allan y r⁶ng Gwynn a Gwythyr ; ar un a orffo onadunt dyd bra⁶t, kymeret y uor⁶yn. A g⁶edy kymot y g⁶yrda hynny uelly, y kauas Arthur Mygd⁶n march G⁶ed⁶ a chynnllwyn C⁶rs Cant Ewin.

17. G⁶edy hynny yd aeth Arthur hyt yn Lyda⁶, a 10 Mabon uab Mel⁶t ganta⁶ a G⁶are G⁶allt Euryn, y geissa⁶ deu gi Glythmyr L[ed]ewic. A g⁶edy eu kaffel yd aeth Arthur hyt yg gorllewin Iwerdon y geissa⁶ G⁶rgi Seueri, ac Odgar uab Aed brenhin Iwerdon gyt ac ef. Ac odyna yd aeth Arthur yr Gogled, ac y delis Kyledyr Wyllt. Ac yd 15 aeth Yskithyrwynn Pennbeid ; ac yd aeth Mabon mab Mel⁶t, a deu gi Glythuyr Ledewic yn y la⁶ a Drutwyn geneu Greit mab Eri. Ac yd aeth Arthur ehun yr erhyl, a Chauall ki Arthur yn y la⁶. Ac yd esgynn⁶ys Ka⁶ o Brydein ar Lamrei kassec Arthur, ac achub yr kyfuarch. Ac yna 20 y kymerth Ka⁶ o Brydein nerth b⁶ylellic, ac yn wychyr trebelit y doeth ef yr baed, ac y holldes y benn yn deu hanner. A chymryt a oruc Ka⁶ yr ysgithyr. Nyt y k⁶n a nottayssei Yspaden ar G⁶lh⁶ch a lada⁶d y baed, namyn Kauall ki Arthur ehun. 25

18. A g⁶edy llad Ysgithyrwyn Bennbeid, yd aeth Arthurae niuer hyt yng Kelli Wic yng Kerny⁶. Ac odyno y gyrr⁶ys Men⁶ mab Teirgwaed y edrych a uei y tlysseu y r⁶ng deu glust T⁶rch Tr⁶yth, rac salwen oed uynet y ymdara⁶ ac ef, ony¹ bei y tlysseu ganta⁶. Diheu hagen oed y uot ef 30 yno ; neur daroed ida⁶ diffeitha⁶ traean Iwerdon. Mynet a oruc Men⁶ y ymgeis ac 6ynt. Sef y g⁶elas 6ynt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iwerdon. Ac ymritha⁶ a oruc Men⁶ yn rith

1. MS. ac ony, corr. Loth.

ederyn ; a disgynnu a 6naeth uch penn y g6al, a cheissa6 ysglyffya6 un or tlysseu y ganta6 ; ac yn chauas dim hagen namyn un oe wrych. Kyuodi a oruc ynteu yn wychyr da ac ymysgytya6, hyt pan ymordiwedawd peth or g6en6yn ac 5 ef ; odyna ny bu dianaf Men6 uyth.

19. Gyrru o Arthur gennat g6edy hynny ar Odgar uab Aed, brenhin Iwerdon, y erchi peir Di6rnach Wydel, maer ida6. Erchi o Otgar ida6 y rodi. Y dywa6t Di6rnach : “Du6 a wyr, pei hanffei well o welet un ol6c arna6, nas 10 kaffei.” A dyuot o gennat Arthur a nac genthi o Iwerdon.

Kych6ynnu a oruc Arthur ac ysga6n niuer gantha6, a mynet ym Prytwen y long, a dyuot y Ywerdon ; a dygyrchu ty Di6rnach Wydel a orugant. G6elsant niuer Otgar eu meint. A g6edy b6yta onadunt ac yuet eu dogyn, erchi y peir a 15 oruc Arthur. Y dywa6t ynteu, pei as rodei y neb, y rodei 6rth eir Odgar brenhin Iwerdon. G6edy llueuryd nac udunt, kyuodi a oruc Bedwyr ac ymauel yn y peir, ae dodi ar geuyn Hyg6yd g6as Arthur ; bra6t oed h6nn6 unuam y Gacham6ri g6as Arthur. Sef oed y s6yd ef yn wastat 20 ymd6yn peir Arthur a dodi tan y dana6. Meglyt o Lenllea6c Wydel yg Kaletv6lch, ae ell6ng ar y rot, a llad Di6rnach Wydel ae niuer ach[!]jan. Dyuot lluoed Iwerdon ac ymlad ac 6y. A g6edy ffo y lluoed achlan, mynet Arthur ae wyr yn eu g6yd yn y llong, ar peir yn llawn o s6llt 25 I6erdon gantunt ; a diskynnu yn ty L6ydeu mab Kelcoet ym Porth Kerdin yn Dyuet. Ac yno y mae messur y peir.

20. Ac yna y kynnul6ys Arthur a oed o gynify6r yn teir ynys Prydein ae their racynys, ac a oed yn Freinc a Llyda6 a Normandi a G6lat yr Haf, ac a oed o gic6r dethol 30 a march clotua6r. Ac yd aeth ar niueroed hynny oll hyt yn I6erdon. Ac y bu ouyn ma6r ac ergrym racda6 yn Iwerdon. A g6edy disgynnu Arthur yr tir, dyuot seint Iwerdon atta6 y erchi na6d ida6. Ac y rodes ynteu na6d udunt h6y, ac y

rodassant 6ynteu eu bendyth ida6 ef. Dyuot a oruc g6yr Iwerdon hyt att Arthur a rodi b6yttal ida6. Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iwerdon, yn y lle yd oed T6rch Tr6yth ae seithlydyn moch ganta6. Gell6ng k6n arna6 o bop part. Y dyd h6nn6 educher yd ymlada6d y 5 G6ydyl ac ef; yr hynny pymhet ran Iwerdon¹ a 6naeth yn diffeith. A thrannoeth yd ymlada6d teulu Arthur ac ef; namyn a ga6ssant o dr6c y ganta6, ny cha6ssant dim o da. Y trydyd dyd yd ymlada6d Arthur ehun ac ef na6 nos a na6 nieu; ny lada6d namyn un parchell oe uoch. Gouynn6ys 10 y g6yr y Arthur peth oed ystyr yr h6ch h6nn6. Y dywa6t ynteu: "Brenhin uu, ac am y becha6t y rith6ys Du6 ef yn h6ch."

21. Gyrru a 6naeth Arthur G6rhyr G6alsta6t Ieithoed y geissa6 ymadra6d ac ef. Mynet a oruc G6rhyr yn rith ederyn, a disgynn6 a 6naeth vch benn y wal ef ae seithlydyn 15 moch. A gouyn a oruc G6rhyr G6alsta6t Ieithoed ida6: "Yr y g6r ath wnaeth ar y del6 honn, or gell6ch dywedut, y harchaf dyuot un ohona6ch y ymdidan ac Arthur." G6rtheb a 6naeth Grugyn G6rych Ereint (mal adaned aryant oed y wrych oll; y fford y kerdei ar goet ac ar uaes y g6elit, ual y llithrei y 20 wrych). Sef atteb a rodes Grugyn: "Myn y g6r an g6naeth ni ar y del6 honn, ny wna6n, ac ny dywed6n dim yr Arthur. Oed diga6n o dr6c a 6nathoed Du6 ynni, an g6neuthur ar y del6 hon, kyny dele6ch ch6itheu y ymlad a ni." "Mi a dywedaf y6ch yd ymlad Arthur am y grib ar ellyn ar 25 g6elleu yssyd r6ng deu glust T6rch Tr6yth." Heb y Grugyn: "Hyt pann gaffer y eneit ef yn gyntaf, ny cheffir y tlysseu hynny. Ar bore auory y kych6ynn6n ni odyma; ac yd a6n y wlat Arthur, ar meint m6yhaf a allom ni o dr6c a 6na6n yno." Kych6yn a orugant h6y ar y mor parth a 30 Chymry. Ac yd aeth Arthur ae lu6ed ae ueirch ae g6n ym Prytwen, a thara6 lygat ymwelet ac 6ynt. Disgynn6 a 6naeth

1. MS. y iwerdon.

Twrch Trwyth ym Porth Cleis yn Dyuet. Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt ym Mynyd y nos honno. Trannoeth dywedut y Arthur eu mynet heibaôl. Ac ymordiwyd a oruc ac ef yn llad gwarthec Kynnwas Kôrr y Uagyl. A gwyd yllad a oed yn
 5 Deugledyf o dyn a mil kynn dyuot Arthur, or pan deuth Arthur, y kychwynnôys Twrch Trwyth odyno hyt ym Presseleu. Dyuot Arthur a lluoed y byt hyt yno. Gyrru a oruc Arthur y wyr yr erhyl, Ely a Thrachmyr, a Drutwyn keneu Greit mab Eri yn y labôh ehun; a Gwarthegyt uab Kaôh yghongyl
 10 arall, a deu gi Glythmyr Letewic yn y labôh ynteu; a Bedwyr a Chauall ki Arthur yn y labôh ynteu. A restru a oruc y milwyr oll o deu tu Nyuer. Dyuot tri meib Cledyf Divwlch, gwyd a gauas clot mawr yn llad Ysgithyrwyn Pennbeid. Ac yna y kychwynnôys ynteu o Lynn Nyuer, ac y doeth y
 15 Gwm Kerwyn, ac y rodes kyuarth yno. Ac yna y lladaôd ef bedwar ryssôr y Arthur, Gwarthegyd mab Kaôh, a Tharaôc Ailt Clwyd, a Reidôn uab Eli Atuer, ac Iscouan Hael. A gwyd yllad y gwyd hynny, y rodes yr eil kyuarth udunt yn y lle, ac y lladaôd Gwydred uab Arthur, a Garselit Wydel,
 20 a Gleb uab Yscawt, ac Iscawyn uab Panon; ae doluryâb ynteu yna a bnaethprwyd.

22. Ar bore ym bron y dyd drannoeth yd ymordiwedâôd rei or gwyd ac ef. Ac yna y lladaôd Huandab a Gogigôr a Phenn Pingon, tri gwydus Gleblyd Gauaeluaôr, hyt nas gwydyat
 25 Duôb was yn y byt ar y helb ynteu, eithyr Laesgenym ehunant, gôr ny hanoed well neb ohonaôl. Ac y gyt a hynny y lladaôd llawer o wyr y blât, a Gwydred saer, pensaer y Arthur. Ac yna yd ymordiwedâôd Arthur ym Pelumyaôc ac ef. Ac yna y lladaôd ynteu Madab mab Teithyon, a Gwyn
 30 mab Tringat mab Neuett, ac Eiryaôn Pennlloran. Ac odyna yd aeth ef hyt yn Aber Tywi. Ac yno y rodes kyuarth udunt. Ac yna y lladaôd ef Kynlas mab Kynan, a Gwylenhin bre[nh]in Freinc. Odyna yd aeth hyt yg

Glynn Ystu. Ac yna yd ymgollasant y gŵyr ar cŵn ac ef. Dyuynnu a oruc Arthur Gŵyn uab Nud attaŵ, a gouyn idaŵ a 6ydyatef dim y 6rth Tŵrch Trŵyth. Ydywa6tynteu nasg6ydyat.

23. Y hela y moch yd aeth y kynnydyon yna oll hyt yn Dyffryn Lych6r. Ac y digriby6ys Grugyn Gŵallt Ereint 5 udunt a L6yda6c Gouynnyat; ac y lladass[ant] y kynnydyon, hyt na diengis dyn yn vy6 onadunt namyn un g6r. Sef a oruc Arthur dyuot ae luoed hyt lle yd oed Grugyn a L6yda6c, a gell6ng yna arnadunt a oed o gi rynodydoed yn 6yrr. Ac 6rth yr a6r a dodet yna ar kyuarth, 10 y doeth Tŵrch Trŵyth ac y diffyrth 6ynt. Ac yr pan dathoedynt dros uor Iwerdon, nyt ymwelsei ac 6ynt hyt yna. Dyg6yda6 a 6naethp6yt yna a gŵyr a ch6n arna6. Ymrodi y gerdet ohona6 ynteu hyt ym Mynyd Aman6. Ac yna y llas ban6 oe uoch ef. Ac yna yd aethp6yteneit 15 dros eneit ac ef. Ac y llad6yt yna Tŵrch Lla6in. Ac yna y llas arall oe voch; G6ys oed y en6. Ac odyna yd aeth hyt yn Dyffrynn Aman6. Ac yno y llas ban6 a bennwic. Nyt aeth odyno ganta6 oe uoch yn vy6 namyn Grugyn Gŵallt Ereint a L6yda6c Gouynnyat. 20 Or lle h6nn6 yd aethant hyt yn L6ch E6in. Ac yd ymordiwed6d Arthur ac ef yno. Rodi kyuarth a 6naeth ynteu yna. Ac yna y llada6d ef Echel Uord6yt T6ll, ac Ar6yli eil G6yda6c G6yr, a llaber o wyr a ch6n heuyt. Ac yd aethant odyna hyt yn L6ch Ta6y. Yscar a 6naeth 25 Grugyn G6rych Ereint ac 6ynt yna. Ac yd aeth Grugyn odyna hyt yn Dintywi. Ac odyna yd aeth hyt yg Keredigya6n, ac Eil a Thrachmyr ganta6, a llia6s gyt ac 6ynt heuyt. Ac y doeth hyt yg Garth Gregyn. Ac yno y¹ llas L6yda6c Gouynnyat yn y mysc. Ac y llada6d 30 Ruduy6 Rys, a llaber gyt ac ef. Ac yna yd aeth L6yta6c hyt yn Ystrat Y6. Ac yno y kyuaruu g6yr L6yda6 ac ef.

Ac yna y lladað ef Hir Peissawc brenhin Lydað, a Lygatrud Emys a Gwrobothu, eþythred Arthur, vrodyr y uam. Ac yna y llas ynteu.

24. Twrch Trwyth a aeth yna y róng Taþy ac Euyas. 5 Gwyssyâb Kernyâb a Dyfneint o Arthur yn y erbyn hyt yn aber Hafren. A dywedut a oruc Arthur 6rth vilþyr yr ynys honn: "Twrch Trwyth a ladað llaber om gþyr. Myn gþrhyt gþyr, nyt a mi yn uýd yd aho ef y Gernyâb. Nys ymlityaf i ef bellach, namyn mynet eneit dros eneit ac ef a 10 wnaf. Gwnebch chôi a 6nelhoch." Sef a daruu o gyghor gantað ellóng kat o uarchogyon, a chón yr ynys gantunt, hyt yn Euyas, ac ymchoelut odyno hyt yn Hafren, ae ragot yno ac a oed o vilwyr prouedic yn yr ynys honn, ae yrru anghen yn anghen yn Hafren. A mynet a 6naeth Mabon 15 uab Modron gantað ar Wynn mygdôn march Gwedd yn Hafren, a Goreu mab Custennin, a Menâb mab Teirgwaed y róng Lynn Liban ac aber Gwy. A dygwydâb o Arthur arnað, a ryssþyr Prydein gyt ac ef. Dynessau a oruc Osla Gyllelluaðr a Manawydan uab Llyr a 20 Chacmôri gwas Arthur a Gwyn Gelli, a dygrynnyað yndað, ac ymauel yn gyntaf yn y traet, ae gleicâb ohonunt yn Hafren, yny yttoed yn lleni odyuchtað. Brathu amôs o Uabon uab Modron or neil[1] parth, a chael yr ellyn y gantað. Ac or parth arall y dygyrchysys Kyledyr Wyllt y 25 ar amôs arall gantað yn Hafren, ac y duc y gôlleu y gantað. Kynn kaffel diot y grib, kaffel dayar ohonað ynteu ae draet. Ac or pan gauas y tir, ny allôys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith, hyt pan aeth y Gernyâb. Noc a gaffat o drûc yn keissað y tlysseu hynny y gantað, gwaeth a gaffat 30 yn keissað diffryt y deu 6r rac eu bodi. Kacmôri ual y tynnit ef y uynyd, y tynnei deu uaen ureuan ynteu yr affôys. Osla Gyllelluaðr yn redec yn ol y twrch, y dygwydôys y gyllell oe wein ac y kolles; ae wein ynteu

gōedy hynny yn IIaōn or dōfyr, ual y tynnit ef y uynyd, y tynnei hitheu ef yr affōys. Odyna yd aeth Arthur a IIuoed, hyt pan ymordiwedaōd ac ef yg Kernyō. Gōare oed a gafat o drōc gantaō kyn no hynny y ōrth a gaffat yna gantaō yn keissaō y grib. O drōc y gilyd y kaffat y grib y gantaō. 5 Ac odyna y holet ynteu o Gernyō, ac y gyrrōyt yr mor yn y gyueir. Ny wybuōyt vyth o hynny allan pa le yd aeth, ac Anet ac Aethlem gantaō. Ac odyno yd aeth Arthur y ymeneinaō ac y uōrō y ludet y arnaō hytyg Kelli Wic yg Kernyō.

25. Dywedut o Arthur: "A oes dim weithon or anoetheu 10 heb gaffel?" Y dywaōt vn or gōyr: "Oes. Gōaet y widon Ordu merch y widon Orwen o penn Nant Gouut yg gōrthtir Uffern." Kychōyn a oruc Arthur parth ar Gogled, a dyuot hyt IIe yd oed gogof y wrach. A chynggori o Wynn uab Nud a Gōythyr uab Greidaōl gellōng Kacmōri a 15 Hygōyd y uraōt y ymlad ar wrach. Ac ual yd euthant y myōn yr ogof, y hachub a oruc y wrach; ac ymauel yn Hygōyd herōyd gōallt y benn, ae daraō yr IIaōr deni. Ac ymauel o Gacmōri yndi hitheu herōyd gōallt y phenn, ae thynnu y ar Hygōyd yr IIaōr. Ac ymchoelut a 20 oruc hitheu ar Kacmōri, ac eu dygaboli yll deu, ac eu diaruu, ae gyrru allan dan eu hub ac eu hob. A IIidyaō a oruc Arthur o welet y deu was hayachen wedy eu IIad, a cheissaō achub yr ogof. Ac yna y dywedassant Gōynn a Gōythyr ōrthaō: "Nyt dec ac nyt digrif genhym dy welet yn ymgribyaō a 25 gōrach. Gellōng Hir Amren a Hir Eidyl yr ogof." A mynet a orugant. Ac or bu drōc trafferth y deu gynt, gōaeth uu drafferth y deu hynny, hyt nas gōypei Duō y vn ohonunt ell pedwar allu mynet or IIe, namyn mal y dodet ell pedwar ar Lamrei kassec Arthur. Ac yna achub a oruc Arthur 30 drōs yr ogof, ac y ar y drōs a uyryei y wrach a Charnwennan y gyllell, ae tharaō am y hanner, yny uu yn deu gelōrn hi. A chymryt a oruc Kaō o Brydein gōaet y widon ae gadō ganthaō.

IV. THE PROCEDURE IN A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY.

Puipenac auenno kefroy
haul am tir a dayar.¹ Kefroet
panuenno o nauuethid ka-
langayaf allan. Neu onau-
5 ethid mey. Kanis² eram-
seroyd henny ybit agoredic
keureith am tir ay dayar.

Oderuit yr haulur mennu
10 holi tir en eramseroyt hinni
deuhet¹ ar er argluit yerchi
did y guarandau y haul
a hinni aretir. In edid
hunnu datkanet y haul. Ni
15 dele y dithun² kaifail ateb
edithun. Kanis haul dissiuit
yu ar³ guercheidveith ac
wrth hinni yguercheidveith
a deleant oyt urth porth.
20 Yaun yu irhalur y ludyas
udunt onit ekeureyth ay
deweyt ydeleu. Ac ena
emay⁴ ereneyt ev guarandau.
A gouin pale emay eu porth.
25 Odeweduant pot eu porth
eneu kemmut euhun. Roy
oyt trideu udunt. Obit en

1. Pwy bynnac a uynno
kyffroi hawl am dir a dayar,
kyffroet pan uynno o nawvet
dyd kalan gayaf allan, neu
o nawvet dyd Mei. Kanys
yn yr amseroed hynny y
byd agoredic kyvreith am
dir a dayar.

2. O deruyd yr hawlwr
mynnu holi tir yn yr
amseroed hynny deuet ar yr
arglwyd y erchi dyd y
warandaw y hawl, a hynny
ar y tir. Yn y dyd hwnnw
dadganet y hawl. Ny dyl
kaffael ateb y dyd hwnn.
Kanys hawl dysseivyt yw ar
y gwercheidweit. Ac wrth
hynny y gwercheidweit a
dylant oet wrth borth. Iawn
yw yr hawlwr y ludyas udunt,
onyt y gyvreith a dyweit y
dylu. Ac yna y mae iawn
yr yneit eu gwarandaw, a
govyn pa le y mae eu porth.
O dywedant bot eu porth yn
eu kymmwyt eu hun, roi oet

(Ch. 1). 1 the second *a* is added over the line, 2 add *yn* with several MSS.

(Ch. 2). 1 *h* over the line, 2 omit, 3 add *y* with many MSS., 4 add *iaun* with many MSS.

eli⁵ kemut naunieu. Obit en etredit neu uot llanu a trey ereghun ac eu porth. Os kin hanner did ebernir eroyt petheunos or did hunnu ebit eroyt. Os guedi hanner did petheunos otrannoyth. Ac essev achaws yu henne. Kanydoys did kubil ac nat yaun talu drill did en lle did. Ac en eroyt barnedic hunnu emay yaun deuod ar etir⁶ ac vynt ac eu porth.

tridieu udunt. O byd yn yr eil gymmwyt, naw nieu. O byd yn y trydyd neu vot llanw a threi yryngthunt ac eu porth, os kyn hanner dyd 5 y bennir yr oet, pythewnos or dyd hwnnw y byd yr oet; os gwedy hanner dyd, pythewnos o drannoeth. Ac yssef achaws yw hynny; 10 kanyt oes dyd kwbyl, ac nat iawn talu dryll dyd yn lle dyd. Ac yn yr oet barnedic hwnnw y mae iawn dyvot ar y tir ac wynt ac eu porth. 15

3. Ac yna y mae iawn gwneuthur dwy bleit aceisted yn gyfreithiawl. Sef ual yd eistedir yn gyfreithyawl. Eisted or brenhin neu or neb 20 a uo yn y le ae gevyn ar yr heul neu ar yr hin, rac avlonydu yr hin oe wyneb ef. Ar ynat llys neu ynat y kymmwyt, yr hwn hynaf a uo, 25 yn eisted rac y uron ef. Ac ar y llaw assw y hwnnw yr ynat arall a vo yn y maes. Ac ar y llaw deheu idaw yr

(Ch. 2). 5 leg. ereil, 6 e over the line

(Ch. 3). 1 n and y over the line, 2 leg. dui, 3 MS. eneu, 4 the e over the line, 5 added over the line, 6 add y with many MSS., 7 after neu some letters cancelled; er eneid added over the line

deheu ydau ereferiat neu er eferieit.⁸ Ac egkell⁹ er argluid edeu heneuid. Ay guirda o hinny allan o pop-
 5 thu ydau. Odena ford yr eneyt keuarvyneb · ac eu¹⁰ darimret yeubraudle. Keg-
 haus er haulur ar ellau assu-
 ydau ar eford · ar haulur
 10 enessav · ydau · en eperued¹¹
 ar kanllau ar ellau arall
 ydau. Ar¹² rigyll en seuill
 trakeuen ekeghaus¹³ · er
 amdiffinur ar ellau deheu ar
 15 eforth · ar amdiffinur
 enessau · ydau · eneperued ·
 ay kanllau or tu arall ydau ·
 arigill traigueuen entheu.
 Gwedi darvo eiste euelly ·
 20 Kemerer¹⁴ mach ar keureith.
 Esseu meychieu aid ar¹⁵
 tir ay dayar. Guystlon¹⁶ o
 dynyon · deu¹⁷ dyn neu auo
 muy · o popleit · arey¹⁸ hinni
 25 emedyant er argluid edant.

effeiryat neu yr effeiryet. Ac
 yg kylch yr arglyd y deu
 hyneuid ; ae wyrda o hynny
 allan o bob tu idau. Odyna
 fford yr yneit gyvarwyneb
 ac wynt y darymret y eu
 brawdle. Kynghaws yr
 hawlwr ar y llaw assw idaw
 ar y fford, ar hawlwr yn
 nessaf idaw yn y perved, ar
 kanllaw ar y llaw arall idaw ;
 ar ringyll yn seyll tracheuyn
 y kynghaws. Ar bleit arall
 y tu arall yr fford ; yn nessaf
 yr fford kynghaws yr amdiff-
 ynnwr ar y llaw deheu ar y
 fford, ar amdiffynnwr yn
 nessaf idaw yn y perued, ae
 ganllaw or tu arall idaw ;
 ar rhingyll traegevyn ynteu.
 Gwedy darvo eisted yvelly,
 kymerer mach ar gyvreith.
 Sef meichieu a vyd ar dir a
 dayar, gwystlon o dynyon,
 deu dyn neu a vo mwy o
 bob pleit. Ar rei hynny yn
 medyant yr arglyd yd ant.

(Ch. 3). 8 in marg., where it has been written twice, the first entry having been mutilated by the cutting of the margin, 9 on p. 103 the phrase is *ýný gýlch*, 10 *leg. uy y or the like*, 11 after this ydau with a stroke beneath it, 12 after this some letters cancelled, 13 some words omitted which in the text of the Laws are : ar bleit arall y tu arall yr fford yn nessaf yr fford *kygláos*, 14 MS. Kemeret, 15 MS. *art*, 16 some letters cancelled, 17 *e* over the line, 18 *h* after a cancelled and *r* written above it.

Odena guedi henne e dodir tellued.¹ essev yu hene.² Gostec ar emays. Puipenac a thorro etelleued honno teyr biu³ camluru a tal ne nau ugeint. Ar geyr adeweter guedi er ostec bot hunnu⁴ en diuunyant er neb ay deweto· ac yr keghaus edevether irporth ydau.

Guedi daruo eyste¹ en keureithaul mal y redewes-sam ny vchot ena e may yaun yr egnat deueduit wrth e dupleit ymdeve-duch o keureith weithion. Ac ena may yaun iregnat gouin yr² haulur puy de keghaus³ di a puy de kanllau· ac ena e may yaun⁴ yr haulur ev henwi. Ac ena may yaun eregnat gouin ir haulur a dodycollia kaffayl eneu pen vinteu. Ac ena ema yaun yr haulur⁵ dodav heb eff. Ac ena may yaun eregnat⁶ ac yr kanllau· a sauant huy ydau ef· en erenmay ef enidody arnadunthuy.⁷ Ac

4. Odyna gwedy hynny y dodir tyllwed. Sefyw hynny, gostec ar y maes. Pwy bynnac a dorro y dyllwed honno, teir buw camlwrw a 5 dal neu naw ugeint. Ar geir a dywetter gwedy yr ostec, bot hwnnw yn divwyn-yant yr neb ae dywetto, ac yr kynghaws y dywetter yr 10 porth idaw.

5. Gwedy darvo eisted yn gyvreithiawl, val y rydywed-assam ni uchot, yna y mae iawn yr ynat dyvedut wrth y 15 dwy bleit: "ymdywedwch o gyvreith weithyon." Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "pwy dy gynghaws di a phwy dy 20 ganllaw?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr eu henwi. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "a dody colli a chaffael yn eu pen 25 wynteu?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut, "dodaf," heb ef. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr kynghaws ac yr kanllaw, a 30

(Ch. 4). 1 *u* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *i* over the line, 4 *after this did cancelled*

(Ch. 5). 1 *y* over the line, 2 MS. *hýr*, 3 *ke* over the line, 4 *after this eregnat cancelled*, 5 *leg.* haulur deueduyt, 6 *add* gouin yr kyghaus, 7 *h* over the line

ena emay yaun⁸ udunt huin-
theu dewedvyt sauun.

5

Ac guedi hinny emay yaun
eregnat gouin eramdiffenvr¹
puy dekeghaus ditheu apuy
de kanllau. Ac ena emay
10 yaun ydau entehu eu henwi.
Ac ena emay yaun² yr egn-
at gouin ydau entehu · a did
ev kolli a kaffayl en eu pen
Ac ena may yaun ydau
15 entheu dewetuyt dodau heb
ef. Ac ena emay iaun³
eregnat devetvit wrth er-
haulur · haul di weython de
haul. Ac ena emay⁴ yaun
20 yhaulur⁵ decreu.

Llema essit yaun yr haulur
edewetuyd¹ menegi · yuot
ef en briodaur ar etir hun-
25 ema ardayar. Ac obit
aameuho ydau ef yuot en
briodaur · bot kanthau entheu
a kathuo ybriodolder · o · ach
ac edriu · hit emay digaun
30 en ekeureyth. Ay reerru en

savant hwy idaw ef yn yr
hyn y mae ef yn y dodi
arnadunt hwy. Ac yna y
mae iawn udunt hwynteu
dywedut : "savun."

6. A gwedy hynny y mae
iawn yr ynat ouyn yr
amdiffynnwr : "pwy dy
gynghaws ditheu, a phwy dy
ganllaw?" Ac yna y mae
iawn ydau ynteu eu henwi.
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat
ovyn idaw ynteu, a dyd ef
golli a chaffael en eu pen.
Ac yna y mae iawn idaw
ynteu dywedut : "dodaf," heb
ef. Ac yna y mae iawn
yr ynat dywedut wrth yr
hawlwr : "hawl di weithon
dy hawl." Ac yna y mae
iawn yr hawlwr dechreu.

7. Llyma yssyd iawn yr
hawlwr y dywedut, menegi y
vot ef yn briodawr ar y tir
hwnn yma ar dayar. Ac o
byt a amheuo idaw ef y vot
yn briodawr, bot ganthaw
ynteu a gatwo y briodolder
o ach ac edrif, hyt y mae
digawn yn y gyvreith, ae

(Ch. 5). 8 after this yregnat cancelled

(Ch. 6). 1 e over a cancelled i, 2 over the line, 3 over the line; after this
irhaulur cancelled, 4 e over the line, 5 leg. yrhaulur

(Ch. 7). 1 MS. edewetduyd

agkeureithiaul yar ybriodolder · ac osid ay hammehuho² emay ydau ef³ ay guyr · yreherru enagkeureithiaul. Ac esev emayentehu⁴ endodi ar ekeureith deleu deuot en keureythaul traykeuen er lle ereherruyd en agkeureithyaul⁵ ohonau.

Oderuit bot reȳ adewetho dodi keythveid ac guybedyeid or un pleyt Ninni adewedun egellir ene warhandawer atteb er amdiffenhur.

Heb amdiffenhur¹ myuy essit briodaur o acch² ac edriu · ac esseu eduyf en guarchadu empriodolder³ val emay goreu edeleauvy y-guarchadu · ac osid ay hamehuo y · am⁴ henni emay ymy ageidu digaun⁵ bot en guir adewedau. A thithei obuosty ema ty haythost en keureythaul odema. Ac osid a hamehuo hinni · emay ymy digaun ayguyr.

ryyrru yn anghyvreithyawl y ar y briodolder. Ac osit ae hamheuo, y mae idaw ef digawn ae gwyr y ryyrru yn anghyvreithyawl. Ac yssef 5 y mae ynteu yn dodi ar y gyvreith, dlylu dyvot yn gyvreithyawl traegevyn yr lle y ryyrrwyt yn anghyvreithyawl ohonaw. 10

8. O dervyd bot rei a dywetton dodi ceidweid a gwybydyeid or un bleit, Ninni a dywedwn y gellir, yny warandawer atteb y 15 amdiffynnwr.

9. Heb yr amdiffynnwr : “ Mivi yssyd briodawr o ach ac edrif. A sef yd wyf yn gwarchadw vym priodolder, 20 val y mae goreu y dlyaf y warchadw. Ac osit ae hamheuo imi hynny, y mae imi ageidw digawn bot yn wir a dywedaf. A thitheuo buost 25 ti yma, ti a aethost yn gyvreithyawl odyma. Ac osit a hamheuo hynny y mae imi digawn ae gwyr.”

(Ch. 7). 2 the third *h* over the line, 3 digawn has probably been omitted, 4 *h* over the line, 5 *r* over the line

(Ch. 9). 1 *leg.* eramdiffenhur, 2 there is something like an *h* over the second *c*, 3 the third letter seems to have been altered to *p*, 4 *y am*; *leg. y mi?* 5 *leg.* digaun ageidu

5 Ninni adewedun ket darfo eramdiffenur rohi atheb kin oyholŷ ev or haulur bot en anolo er ateb· eny warandao ef· er haul ac odena atebet.

Ac guedy darfo vdunt euduy kegheussayth mal edewedassam ni vchot. Gouenet 10 er egnat udunt aydŷgaun hyn adewedassant. Ac gouenet udunt auennant guellau eu kykeussayth.¹ Ac obit ay menno gather² ydau. Ac 15 onibit ay menno kymeret eregnat euduy kegheussayth³ a dadkanet huy. A guedy estadkano aynt eregneyt allan. ar effeyryhet y gyt 20 ac vy· a. Righyll ygyt aguy· hy eu kadv. Rac douot dynyon ywarandu⁴ arnadunt. Oderuit idyn deuot ywarandau arnadunt huntheu⁵ ev 25 adeily talu teyrbuy kamluru hir brenhin. Ac o bit ebrenin enemays· ev adele talu kamluru deudeplic am hinny. Ac ena guedy edeystedont 30 huy emay iaun· yr effeyryat· guedya duy ydangos oduy

10. Ninni a dywedwn, kyt darffo yr amdiffynnwr roi ateb kyn noe holi ef or hawlwr, bot yn anolo yr ateb, yny warandao ef yr hawl, ac odyna atebet.

11. A gwedy darffo udunt eu dwy gynheusaeth, val y dywedassam ni uchot, govynet yr ynat udunt, ae digawn yr hyn a dywedasant, a gouenet udunt a vynnant gwellau eu kyngheussaeth. Ac o byd ae mynno, gatter idaw. Ac ony byd ae mynno, kymeret yr ynat eu dwy gynheussaeth, a dadganet hwy. A gwedy as dadgano, aent yr yneit allan, ar effeiryeit y gyt ac wy, ar ringhyll y gyt ac wy y eu kadw, rac dyvot dynyon y warandaw arnadunt. O dervyd y dyn dyvot y warandaw arnadunt wynteu, ef a dyly talu teirbuw kamlwrw yr brenhin. Ac o byd y brenhin yn y maes, ef a dyly talu kamlwrw deudypllic am hynny. Ac yna gwedy yd eistedont hwy y mae iawn

(Ch. 11). 1 *ky* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *ssa* over the line, 4 *leg.* *ywarandaw*, 5 the second *h* over the line

er yaun⁶ udunt. Akanu onadunt huyntheu eu pader. Ac guedy epader emay yaun yr egnat dadkanu eduykeg-hessaith eylweyth.

Ac o deruit bot enreyt¹ egeyr keuarch. Elleger deu oy ouyn. Ac obit reyt yr bleyt egouener egeyr keuarhc ydy vrth kemyrit keghor² aynt tuy kan kanyat³ yr egneyt hyeu keghor ac essev edant ynyuer ebuant en eukehussayth heb auo muy aguas yr argluyd ygyt aguy yeu kadu Rac deuod neb yeu keghor ygyt ac huy ac odau neb atadunt ay keghoro talet ef kamluru er brenin a bot en anolo ekeghor. Ac guedy edarfo ekeghor deuent edeu hinný ar eregneyt⁴ adatkanent egneyth⁵ ekeghor.

Oderuit nabo reyt urth eyr keuarch yaun yu gadayl udunt vintheu eu ardelu.

(Ch. 11). 6 *u* over the line

(Ch. 12). 1 *some MSS. add wrth, 2 h over the line, 3 y over the line, 4 the second e over the line, 5 n over the line; leg. eregneit*

yr effeiryat gwediaw Duw y dangos o Duw yr iawn udunt. A chanu onadunt wynteu eu pader. A gwedy y pader y mae iaun yr 5 ynat dadganu y dwy gyng-heussaeth eilweith.

12. Ac o dervyd bot yn reit y geir kyvarch, ellynger deu oe ovyn. Ac o byd reit 10 yr bleit y govyner y geir kyvarch idi wrth gymryt kynghor, aent wy gan ganyat yr yneit y eu kynghor. Ac yssev yd ant, y niver y buant 15 yn eu kynghheussaeth, heb a vo muy, a gwas yr arglwyd y gyt ac wy y eu kadw rac dyvot neb y eu kynghor y gyt ac wy. Ac o daw neb 20 attadunt ae kynghoro, talet ef gamlwrw yr brenhin, a bot yn anolo y kynghor. A gwedy y darffo y kynghor, deuent y deu hinný ar yr 25 yneit a dadganent yr yneit y kynghor.

13. Odervydna boreit wrth eyr kyvarch, iawn yw gadael udunt wynteu eu hardelw, a 30

agerru deu youyn puy eu-
gubideyt · ac eu kedweyt · a
phale emaynt · odewedant eu
bot ene mays · munaher vynt ·
5 odewedant¹ eubot en² un ke-
mut ac vy rodher oyd trideu³
udunt. Odewedant eubot en
ereil kemud rodher oyd
naunyéu udunt. Odewetant
10 eubot egulat arall vynt⁴ neu
lanu neu Trey ereghunt ac
vy · oyt petheunos or did
hunnu · os kin hanner did
vit · os guedy hanner did
15 petheonos odranoyth · ar did
hennu endyd kolli akaffayal.
Abot egystlon egkarch⁵
brenin · hit edid hunnu · ac
erchi y paup deuot ay devni-
20 dev kanthau edid hynnu ·
hit ar etir. Kenebo duun
kan edu bleyd · hinny. Neu⁶
edyu endid keuereit bar-
nedic.

25

En etrededet guedi ede-
her vyneb¹ iaun yu i paup
eistet enelle mal ereystedus
edid kint · ac obetant meiru
30 rey or guir auu en ekeg-

(Ch. 13). 1 *ed* over the line, 2 over the line, 3 *e* over the line, 4 omitted
in several MSS., 5 *leg.* karchar e, 6 *written twice over*; *leg.* neud

(Ch. 14). 1 *leg.* vyneb en vyneb; *there are remains of the missing words*
on the margin

gyrru deu y ovyn pwy eu
guibydyet ac eu keidweit, a
pha le y maent. O dywedant
eu bot yn y maes, mwynhaer
wynt. O dywedant eu bot
yn un kymwt ac wy, rodher
oet tridieu udunt. O dywe-
dant eu bot yn yr eil gymwt,
rodher oet naw nieu udunt.
O dywedant eu bot yg gwlat
arall neu lanw neu drei
yryngthunt ac wy, oet
pythewnos or dyd hwnnw,
os kyn hannerdyd y byd.
Os gwedy hannerdyd,
pythewnos o dranoeth, ar
dyd hwnnw yn dyd kolli a
chaffael. A bot y gwystlon
yg karchar y brenhin hyt y
dyd hwnnw. Ac erchi y
bawp dyvot ae devnydeu
ganthaw y dyd hwnnw hyt
ar y tir. Kynnybo duungan y
dwy bleit hynny, neud ydiw
yn dyd kyvreith barnedic.

14. Ynytrydyd dyd guedy
y delher wyneb yn wyneb
iawn yw y bawb eisted yn y
lle, val y ryeistedws y dyd
kynt. Ac o bydant meirw

kussaeith doder ereill en eu lle · a guedi er² eisteter ena emae yaunt yr haulur · kenic y devnidieu iam etestion ay keidveit³ adeueduit evot ef en *paraut*. Ac ena emay yaun ir⁴amdifinnur gurtheb ac esev ateb a dere · deueduit yvot ef en *paraut* · ay defnetyeu kanhau val y hedeuis ac ena emae yaun yr brenin hercki dankos eguestelon en emays · kanys vint essit vechieu.⁵ ⁶Ac ena emay yaun ir egnat deuedut kosb er anostec · esseu eu hene teir biu camluru abot en anolo egeir adeueter.

Ac ena emae yaun irhaulur dodi em pen er eneyt pan niu effo adedeuis¹ en kentaf testion · akeitueit · a deleu ohonau enteu² muenhau en kentaf Ac ena emay yaun yr eneit erchi ydau enteu duyn y keditveit³ ay testion

(Ch. 14). 2 *some MSS.* yd, 3 the second *i* over the line, 4 *after this brenin cancelled*, 5 *kanis—vechieu* interlined, in part on the margin and illegible, 6 *there seems to be a lacuna here; some MSS. have: Ac ena ḡwedy dangosser y gwystlon y mae iān yr brenhin erchi yr righyll dodi gostec ar y maes*

(Ch. 15). 1 *leg.* aedeuis, 2 *leg.* enteu eu, 3 *leg.* keidveit

rei or gwyr a vu yn y gyn-
gheussaeth, dotter ereill yn eu lle. A gwedy yr eistether,
yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr
kynnic y devnydyeu y am y 5
dystyon ae geidweit, a
dyuedut y vot ef yn barawt.
Ac yna y mae iawn yr
amdiffynnwr gwrtheb. Ac
yssef atteb a dyry, dyuedut 10
y vot ef yn barawt, ae
devnydyeu ganthaw, val y
hedewis. Ac yna y mae
iawn yr brenhin erchi dangos
y gwystlon yn y maes; 15
kanys wynt yssyd veichieu.
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat
dywedut kosb yr anostec.
Sef yw hynny teir buw
kamlwrw a bot yn anolo y 20
geir a dywetter.

15. Ac yna y mae iawn yr
hawlwr dodi ym pen yr yneit
panyw efo a edewis yn
gyntaf dystyon a cheidweit, 25
a dylyu ohonaw ynteu eu
mwynhau yn gyntaf. Ac
yna y mae iawn yr yneit
erchi idaw ynteu dwyn y

y eu muinahu. Ac ena emae yaun idau enteu eu duin huy ene keuil⁴ ef ac eudangos. esseu eu rei 5 aedeueis⁵ ef erei a enguis en edit kyntaf Ny dele er amdifennwr llessu yrun onadunt kanivir⁶ nabo da idau adeueduit.⁷ Ar hun a llesso 10 onatuunt kin guibot bet aduedoent⁸ bit sauedc⁹ hunu. er amdifenur aeil gouin¹⁰ aoes breint yr rei hinny. Ac obit doent rac- 15 dunt. esseu pa achaws¹¹ egeill ef gouin hinny vrth na eill alldut bot en vybitiat ar treftadauc. Ac na eill gureic. ar gur. Ac ekit 20 ahene ni heill llauer o deneon bot yn vibetiet nac en kedueit heruit breint ar amdifenur ni lluger arnau deueduit hinny.

25

Oderuit ir amdifenur readau testion auo gwell no rei aedeuis er haulur. ae ouot en guell yu breint ay o bot 30 en amlach Amennu ohonau

geidweit ae dystyon y eu mwynhau. Ac yna y mae iawn idaw ynteu eu dwyn hwy yny kyvyl(?) ef ac eu dangos. Sef yw rei a edewis ef y rei a enwis yn y dyd kyntaf. Ny dyly yr amdiffynnwr llyssu yr un onadunt, kany wyr na bo da idaw a dywettont. Ar hwn a lysso onadunt cyn gwybot beth a dywettont, bit savedic hwnnw. Yr amdiffynnwr a eill ovyn a oes breint yr rei hynny. Ac o byd, doent racdunt. Sef pa achaws y geill ef ovyn hynny, wrth na eill alltut vot yn wybydyat ar drevtadawc, ac na eill gwreic ar wr. Ac y gyt a hynny ny eill llawer o dynyon vot yn wybydyeit nac yn geidweit herwyd breint. Ar amdiffynnwr ny lwgyr arnaw dywedut hynny.

16. O deruyd yr amdiffynnwr ryadaw tystyon a uo gwell nor rei a edewis yr hawlwyr—ae o vot yn well eu breint ae oe bot yn amlach—

(Ch. 15). 4 *some MSS. have* kylch, 5 the second *e* over the line; *leg. aedewis*, 6 the second *i* over the line, 7 *leg. adeueduit*, 8 *o* over the line, 9 *leg. sauedc*, 10 *i* over the line, 11 the second *a* over the line

kannal hinny. Iaun eu¹ dangos aguedi dangosso ef etestion nityaun² yr haulur eu llessu vyntheu. Ena emai iaun yr enat gouin yr haulur may breint de destion dŷ. Ac ena emay yaunt yr haulur deueduit breint y testion ae vntoe en veirri neu en kegheoron³ ae vnteu en veneich⁴ neu en ahtraon ae vnteu en efferiet neu en escoleicion ae vinteu en llecion breinaul Guedi daruo ir enat gouen ir haulur breint etestion iaun eu yr enat gouin yr amdifenur breint y testion Ac ena emay yaunt yr amdifennur deuedut ebreint goreu avo oy testion Ac ena emay yaunt yr enat datkanu deubrein yreduedasant eduyleit yeu testion.

Ena emay yaun yr enat gouin ir duipleit¹ a sauant huy hen erhen ededis en y dodi en eu pen² llema paup or guebethit en deueduit

a mynnu ohonaw gynnal hynny, iawn yw eu dangos. A gwedi dangosso ef y dystion, nyt iawn yr hawlwr eu llyssu wynteu. Yna y 5 mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "Mae breint dy dystyon di?" Ac yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut breint y dystyon, ae wynteu 10 yn veiri neu yn gynghellorion, ae wynteu yn veneich neu yn athrawon, ae wynteu yn effeiryeit neu ysgoleigyon, ae wynteu yn lleygion brein- 15 niawl. Gwedy darvo yr ynat govyn yr hawlwr breint y dystyon, iawn yw yr ynat govyn yr amdiffynnur vreint y dystyon. Ac yna y mae 20 iawn yr amdiffynnwr dywedut y breint goreu a vo oe dystyon. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat dadganu deu vreint y rydywedassant y 25 dwy bleit y eu tystyon.

17. Yna y mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr dwy bleit a savant hwy yn yr hyn yd ydys yn y dodi yn eu pen. 30 Llyma bawb or gwybydyeit

(Ch. 16). 1 *leg.* eu eu, 2 *t* over the line, 3 *leg.* keghelloron, 4 MS. venich
Ch. 17). 1 There is a smudge between *p* and *l*

esauahant · llema popun or duipleit yn amheu guibytied y kilit nasdegant yr degin · ket as deuetoent ar eutauaut
 5 leuerit jaun eu yr eneit ena ev kreirhau · ac guedi askreirhauont emay yaun vddunt menet allan. Ac edrych² er hyn jaunaf aueloent vrth a 10 gluassant. Ac oguelhant bot en vell testion eneill rei noe gilit · diuarnent huy eguaeathaf e testion. Oderuit bot en kestal eutestion · diuarner er 15 amdifennur · kanys etheuis ef testion a vey guell noc aoet kan² ellall. Ac nis cauas. Ac ena emay jaun yr egneit barnu deuot er 20 haulur ar etir · ar e breint edoet pan kechuinus³ en agkaefreithiaul yarnaau

25 Ac guediheni emay¹ yr eneit proui ekedueit² y edric a duc pop rey onadunt huy bot en priodaur ebleit emaent enikanhelu a deueduit o 30 keitueit pop rey eu bot en priodaur Ac odamheuir

(Ch. 17). 2 h over c, 3 h over the line

(Ch. 18). 1 leg. emay iawn, 4 MS. ekeuit^{due}

yn dywedut y savant. Llyma bob un or dwy bleit yn amheu gwybydieit y gilyd nas dygant yr dygyn, kyt as dywettont ar eu tavawt leveryd. Iawn yw yr yneit yna eu kreirhau. A gwedy askreirhaont y mae iawn udunt vynet allan, ac edrych yr hyn iawnaf a welont wrth a glywassant. Ac o gwelant bot yn well testyon eneill rei noe gilyd, divarnent hwy y gwaethaf y dystyon. O dervyd bot yn gystal eu dystyon, divarner yr amdiffynnwr; kanys edewis ef dystyon a vei well noc a oed gan y llall, ac nys kauas. Ac yna y mae iawn yr ygneit barnu dyvot yr hawlwr ar y tir, ar y breint yd oed pan gychwynws yn aghyvreithyawl y arnaw.

18. A gwedy hynny y mae iawn yr yneit provi y keidweit, y edrych a dwng pob rei onadunt hwy bot yn briodawr y bleit y maent yn y chynhelu; a dywedut o geidweit pob rei eu bot yn

vntheu yaun eu eucrērhau
ar nep akellio y kedueit
onaduunt y vrht ellu kollet
etir. o seif ekeitueit or due-
pleit kehedet yv. ar lle ebo
kehedet deuhanner vit.

Ked barner ydau deuod
yr tir. nikeluuin egur aoet
ene mediant kynt erdau
okeill kaffael. tu. atal. ydau
en er un lle ac en kastal
edeudir vrth na burir odena
ef. Ac nideleir talu tir
ambreinaul en lle tir abreint
ohonau val kegkalloraith
neu vaerony neu redit.

Ac ena emay yaun er
egneit deuot traceukeuen y
eu braudle ac ena emay
yaun vdunt kemrit keder-
nit a¹ bot vrth ebraut a
kamrit mach areugober. Ac
ena edeleant er eneit datcanu
eduy kegheusaeh. a guedi
hene datcanu eu uaraut² ac
ena ebrenin adele redhau
eguestelon. oeu carcar.

briodawr. Ac ot amheuir
wynteu, iawn yw eu kreir-
hau. Ar neb a gilio y geid-
weit onadunt y wrth y llw,
kollet y dir. O seif y keidweit 5
or dwy bleit, kyhyded yw.
Ar lle y bo kyhyded deu-
hanner vyd.

19. Kyt barner idaw dyvot
yr tir, ny chychwyn y gwr a 10
oed yn y medyant gynt
yrdaw, o geill gaffael tu a
thal idaw yn yr un lle ac yn
gystal y deu dir, wrth na
vwryir odyna ef. Ac ny 15
dylyir talu tir ammreiniawl
yn lle tir a breint ohonaw,
val kynghelloraeth neu vae-
roni neu rydit.

20. Ac yna y mae iawn yr 20
yneit dyvot tracheukevyn y
eu brawdle. Ac yna y mae
iawn udunt kymryt kedernit
ar vot wrth y vrawt, a
chymryt mach ar eu gobyr. 25
Ac yna y dylyant yr yneit
dadganu y dwy gynghew-
saeth, a gwedy hynny dad-
ganu eu brawt. Ac yna y
brenhin a dyly rydhau y 30
gwystlon o eu karchar.

V. THE PRIVILEGE OF ST. TEILIO.

The following Latin Charter (Lib. Land., page 118) deals with the same subject, and illustrates the Welsh :

Priuilegium Sancti Teliaui est et ecclesiae suae Landauiae, datum sibi et omnibus successoribus suis in perpetuo a regibus istis et principibus Brittaniae, confirmatum apostolica auctoritate, cum omnibus legibus suis in se plenariis sibi et terris suis, libera ab omni regali seruicio, sine consule, sine proconsule, sine conuentu intus nec extra, sine expeditione, sine uigilanda regione. Et cum omni iustitia sua ; de fure et furto, de rapina, de homicidio, de arsione, de rixa, de sanguine, de refugio uiolato ubique in terra sancti, de assaltu uiarum et extra vias, de faciendo iudicio et patiendo, de omni populo Sancti Teliaui in curia Landauiae ; de communione aquae et herbae, campi et siluae populo ecclesiae Sancti Teliaui ; cum mercato et moneta in Landauia ; cum applicatione nauium ubique per terras Sancti Teliaui libera pro regibus et omnibus nisi ecclesiae Landauiae et episcopis eius. De opprobrio et omni iniuria quod rex Moreanhuc et sui homines fecerint episcopo Sancti Teliaui et suis hominibus, idem rex Moreanhuc et sui homines rectum faciant episcopo et suis hominibus, et iudicium patientur in curia Landauiae. Omnis lex quae fuerit regali, omnis etiam et in curia plenarie episcopali Landauensi.

Lýmma y cymreith ha
bryein eccluys Teliau o
lanntaf arodes brenhined
hinn ha touyssacion Cymry
5 ýntrycýguidaul dý eccluys
teliau hac dir escip oll gueti
ef amcýtarnedig o audurdaut
papou rumein y holl cýfreith
didi hac dý thir' hac di dair'
10 ryd o pop guasanaith bren-
ennin býdaul · heb mair ·
heb cýghellaur · heb cýhoith ·
dadlma ýmeun gulat hac ný
dieithýr · heb luýd · heb
15 gauaýl · heb guýlma ýcýf-
reith idi ýnhollaül · o leityr ·
o latrat · o treis · odýnnýorn ·

Llyma y gyvreith a breint
eglwys Deilaw o Lanndaf, a
rodes y brenhined hynn a
thywysogyon Cymry yn dra-
gywydawl y eglwys Deilaw
ac yr escyp oll gwedy ef,
amgadarnedig o awdurdawt
pabeu Ruvein. Y holl
gyvreith idi ac y thir ac y
dayar ; ryd o bob gwasanaeth
brenhin bydawl ; heb vaer,
heb gynghellawr, heb gyhoed
dadylva y mewn gwlat ac yn
y dieithyr ; heb luyd, heb
avael, heb wylva. Y chyv-
reith idi yn hollawl o leidyr,
o ladrat, o dreis, o dynyorn,

o cýnluýn hac o losc · o
 amryson canguayt aheb-
 guayt · ý diruý haý camcul
 ýndi didi ýn hollaoul · o dorri
 naud ýnn lann hac ýn-
 dieýthyr lann · orachot ýnn
 luhýn hac dieithyr luhýn ·
 o cýrch ý popmýnnic artir
 teliau haý guir · haý braut
 dý lýtu ýr ecluýs ygundý
 teliau ýnn lantaf · hac ný lýs ·
 dufýr ha guell · hac choýt ha
 mayýs ýncýfrýtin dý lýtu
 teliau · cýfnofut habathori-
 aýth ýnn lanntaf hac aperua
 ardir teliau dýr loggou adis-
 cýnno nýthir ý pop mýnnic
 ýt uoý rýd rac brennin arac
 paup namýn dý teliau aý
 eccluýs lantam · ha dý escýp ·
 har mefýl har sarhaýthar cam
 har ennuet a gunech¹ brennin
 morcannhuc hay gur haý
 guas dý escop teliau hac dý
 gur hac dý guas · dýuot
 brennin morcannhuc ý-
 gundý teliau ýn lanntaf · dý
 gunethur guir ha cýfreith ·
 ha diguadef braut diam
 ý cam a diconher dý escop
 teliau ha dý gur ha dý guas ·
 ýthir haý dayr dý luýd
 dý uuner digauayl · ha pop

o gynllwyn ac o losc, o amry-
 son gan waet ac heb waet.
 Y dirwy ae chamgwl yndi
 idi yn hollawl o dorri nawd
 yn llann ac yn diethyr llann, 5
 o ragot yn llwyn ac diethyr
 llwyn, o gyrch []
 ar dir Teilaw. Ae gwir ae
 brawt y deulu yr eglwys yg
 Gwndy Teilaw yn Llandaf 10
 ac yny llys. Dwvyr a gwellt
 a choet a maes yn gyffredin
 ý deulu Teilaw. Cynewit
 a bathoriaeth yn Llandaf, ac
 aberva ar dir Teilaw yr 15
 llongeu a discynno yny thir
 pa le bynnac y bo, ryd
 rac brenhin a rac pawb
 namyn y Deilaw ac eglwys
 Landaf ac y hescyp. Ar 20
 mevyl ar sarhaet ar cam ar
 enywet a wnel brenhin Morg-
 annuc ae wr ae was y escop
 Teilaw ac y wr ac y was,
 dyvot brenhin Morgannuc y 25
 Wndy Teilaw yn Llandaf y
 wneuthur gwir a chyvreith a
 diodef brawt yam y cam a
 a digonher y escop Teilaw
 ac y wr ac y was. Y thir ae 30
 dayar, di luyd divuner
 diavael. A pob cyvreith a
 vo y vrenhin Morgannuc yn

cyfreith auo dŷ brennin
 morcannuc yn lŷs · ou bot
 oll yn hollaul dŷ escop teliau
 nŷ lŷs yntou · hay bot
 5 ynemelldicetic hac yn yscumunetic
 yr neb aitorro hac
 aŷ dimanuo y bryeint hunn ·
 hac ef hay plant guetŷ ef ·
 Hynn bendicetic hac ef hay
 10 plant aŷ enrŷdedocao y-
 breint hunn hac aŷ cat(6o).²
 Amen.

1. leg. gunel. 2. 6o added in later hand.

[y] lys, eu bot yn hollawl y
 escop Teilaw yn y lys ynteu.
 Ae vot yn emelldigedic ac
 yn yscumunedic y neb ae
 torro ac ae divanwo y breint
 hwnn, ac ef ae blant wedy
 ef. Yn vendigedic ac ef ae
 blant ae enrydedockao y
 breint hwnn ac ae katwo,
 Amen.

VI. MORAL VERSES.

Kalan gaeaf, kalet grafn,
deil ar gychwyn, llynnwynn llawn:
y bore gynn noe vynet
gwae a ymdiret y estrafn.

Kalan gayaf, kein gyfrin;
kyfret awel a dryckin:
gweith keluyd yu kelu rin. 5

Kalan gayaf, cul hydot,
melyn blaen bedu, gwedu hauot:
guae a haed meuyl yr bychot. 10

Kalan gayaf, crwm blaen gwrysc,
gnafn o benn dirieit teruysc:
lle ny bo dafn ny byd dysc.

Kalan gaeaf, garu hin,
anhebic y gynteuin:
namwyn Duu nyt oes dewin. 15

Kalan gaeaf, kein gyfreu
adar, byrr dyd, ban cogeu:
trugat daffar Duu goreu.

Kalan gayaf, kalet cras,
purdu bran, buan o vras:
am gymp hen chwerdit gwen gwas. 20

Kalan gaeaf, cul kerwyt,
gwae wann pan syrr; byrr vyd byt:
gŵir gŵell hegarŵch no phryt.

5 Kalan gayaf, llŷm godeith,
aradyr yn rych, ych yg gweith:
or kant odit kedyfdeith.

VII. DOOMSDAY.

Deus Duō delwat,
Gōledic, gōaed neirthyat.
Crist Jessu gōyliat,
Rōysc rihyd amnat
Aduelach kaffat. 5

Nym gōnel heb ranned
Moli dy trugared.
Ny dyfu yma,
Gōledic, dy gynna.
Ny dyfu, ny dyfyd 10
Neb kystal a Douyd.
Ny ganet yn dyd plōyō
Neb kystal a Duō.
Nac nyt adef
Neb kystal ac ef. 15
Vch nef, is nef
Nyt gōledic namyn ef.
Vch mor, is mor
Ef an creōys.
Pan dyffo Deōs, 20
Ef an gwnaho mār trōs.
Dyd braōt yn echwrys.
Kennadeu o drōs
Gwynt a mor a than,
Luchet a tharyan, 25
Eiryf ab¹ gōengan.
Lōyth byt yg griduan
Ergelāvr, dygetavr Iaōhethan.
Ergelhavr mor a syr²,

1. leg. *eiry fab?* 2. leg. *ser.*

Pan discynho Pater
 Y dadyl ae nifer,
 A chyrn gopetror
 Ac ennynnu mor.

5 Llôyth byt lloscetaôr
 Hyny uôynt marwaôr,
 Loscaôt ynyal ran
 Rac y vaôr varan.

10 Ef tynho aches
 Rac y varanres.
 Diffurn dyd reges
 Gôae ae harhoes.
 Ef tardho talaôr;
 Terdit nef y laôr.

15 Gôynt rud dygetaôr
 Ech y gadôynaôr.
 Neu byt mor wastat
 Mal pan great.
 Seith Pedyr ae dywaôt,
 20 Dayar diwarnaôt.
 Dywaôt duô Sadôrn
 Dayar yn vn ffôrn.
 Sadôrn vore rôyd
 In gônah o ny Culôyd.

25 Tir bydaôt tywyd,
 Gôynt y todo gôyd.
 Ebrynn pop dyhed,
 Pan losco mynyded.
 Atuyd triganned

30 A chyrn rac rihed.
 Kyfoethaôc ae henuyn,
 Mor a tir a llyn.
 Atuyd cryn dygrynn

A dayar gychwyn.
 Ac uch pop mehyn
 A marō mein uudyn.
 Eryf argelōch
 Ac enýnnu llōch. 5
 Ton aghyolōch,
 Taryan ymrythōch.
 Teithyāc afar
 Ac eryf trōy alar
 Ac enynnu trōy var 10
 Rwg nef a dayar.
 Pan dyffo Trindaōt
 Y maes maestaōt,
 Lu nef ymdanaō,
 Lōyth llydan attaō, 15
 Kyrd a cherdoryon,
 A chathleu egypton.
 Drychafant o vedeu;
 Eirant o dechreu.
 Eirant kōn coet, 20
 Ar gymeint adoet.
 A rewinŷys mor
 A wnant maōr gaōr,
 Pryt pan dyffo
 Ef ae gōahano. 25
 “ Y saōl a uo meu,
 Ymchoelant o deheu.
 A digonŷy kamwed,
 Ymchaelent y perthgled.
 Ponyt erlys dy gyfreu
 A lefeir dy eneu? 30
 Dy vynet yn du hynt yn nanheu
 Yn tywyll heb leuuereu.

Ac ym oed y ereu,
 Ac ym oed i ieitheu,
 Ac ym oed i ganwlat
 Ac eu cant lloneit.
 5 Canuet ḡlat pressent
 Ny bum heb gatwent.
 Oed mynch kyfar chwer̄
 Yrof am¹ kefynder̄.
 Oed mynch kyrysc̄ydat
 10 Yrof y am kywlat.
 Oed mynch kyflafan
 Yrof i ar truan.
 Am gorȳ h̄n vyth;
 Nym ḡnaei dyn byth.
 15 Am gyrr̄ys yg croc,
 A wyd̄n yn oc.
 Am gyrr̄ys ym pren
 Dipyn̄ys vym pen.
 Tafā ti vyn deu troet,
 20 Mor tru eu hadoet.
 Tauā dy 'r boenet,
 Escyrn vyn traet.
 Tauā dy vyn d̄y vreich;
 Ny ny dybyd eu beich.
 25 Tauā dy vyn d̄y ysc̄yd;
 Handit mor dyuyd.
 Tauā dy 'r cethron
 Y mȳn vyg callon.
 Tauā dy gethrāt
 30 Yrwg vyn deu lygat.
 Tauā yr da allat,
 Coron drein ym iat.
 Tauā dy oestru,

1. MS. *eim.*

A wanþyt vyn tu.
 Teu ýþ chitheu
 Mal yr yþch llæþ deheu.
 Iþch ný byd madeu
 Vy gwan a bereu." 5

"A wledic, ny wydyem
 Pan oed ti a grogem.
 Góledic nef, góledic pop tut,
 Ný wydem ni, Grist, tut vyhut.
 Bei ath 6ybydem, 10
 Crist, ath athechem."
 "Nyt aruollir gðat
 Gan 6ythy eissyfflat.
 Digonsa6chi anuat
 Yn erbyn Dofydyat.
 Can mil egylion 15
 Yssyd imi yn tyston,
 A doeth ym kyrcha6
 Góedy vyg croga6.
 Yg croc yn greulet
 Myhun ym gðaret. 20
 Yn nefoed bu cryt,
 Pan ým crogyssit.
 Pan orelwis Keli
 Dy Culþyd vch keli.
 A chenþch deu ieuan 25
 Ragof y deu gynran,
 A deu lyfyr yn ach llæþ
 Yn eu darlæa6.
 Nys deubi ryrys
 Rygossý rygossys. 30
 Ac aþch bi wynnyeith
 Gþerth aþch ynuyt areith.

Kayator y dyleith
 Arna&ch y vffern lleith.”
 Crist Jessu uchel ry seilas trycha[n] mil
 bl&ydyned,
 5 Er pan ytty& ym buched.
 Ac eil mil kyn croc
 Yt lewychi Enoc.
 Neu ny& atwen drut
 Meint eu heissyllut.
 10 G&lat pressent yth ermut,
 A chyt a&ch bei odit.
 Trychan mil bl&ydyned namyn vn
 Oric odit buched tragedwyd.

VIII. TO GWENWYNWYN.

Ysym arglōyd gōrd, gordiuōng y var,
 (gordōy neb nyō hystōng)
 glyō diwreid gōrdvleid¹ gorvlig,
 gleō dywal, ny dal, ny dōg.

Yssit ym arglōyd aerglōyf ner nerthuaōr,
 aerllēō llāōr,² llāōch niuer,
 ny oleith llēith yr llfyfyrder,
 ny odef cam, nyw kymer.

Yssit ym arglōyd eurgledyfrud gaōr,
 breisc llafnaōr brōysc llorfrud,
 ny daōl ōrth ae maōl maōruud,
 ny graōn golut, nyw golud.

Yssit ym arglōyd argledyr anaō beird,
 am bardeir yn eidaō,
 am karyat kadarn arnaō,
 am kerd, am kynnelō ohonaō.

Yssit ym arglōyd argledyr cat a tharyf,
 a theruyn ar gywlat,
 klotuaōr llāōr, llāō aghaeat,
 koryf toryf, teruysc oe anghat.

Yssit ym wledic wlat amdiffyn llary,
 (llawer dyn ae govyn)
 gwalchlan wosparth warth wrthryn,
 gōlpar gōanar Gōenwynwyn.

¹r over d ²r over 6

IX. CYNDDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFUDD.

(*) BLACK BOOK, page 39b.

Assuýnaw naut Duv diamhev¹ ý daun
 ae donýauc wiffinnhev.
 ar dý guir erir aerev.
 ar dý gulad guledic dehev.

5 Assuinaf archaf eirchad ýmgelwir.
 naut kýuir kýgwastad.
 ar dý drissev aer. drussad.
 ar di drissaur gvaur gwenvlad.

Assuinaw archaw arch vaur ý periw.
 10 a peris new a llaur.
 naut rac dý uar car kertaur.
 ar dý pirth ar di porthaur.

Assuinaf naut haut haelon deheuparth
 diheuporth kertorion.
 15 ath turuf oth tarianogion.
 ath torýf oth teern meibon.

Assuinaf ých naut na cheluch ých porth.
 can perthin attreguch.
 gostecwir llis gosteguch.
 20 gostec beirt bart aglywuch.

Assuinaf naut haut² haelvonet worsset.
 nýth orsseiw teernet.
 ar dý torif coryf kýwrisset
 ar dý teulu teilug met.

1. MS. diamehv. 2. MS. haut naut with marks of transposition.

Metcuin ev gwiraud metkirkn ae gwallav.

ae gwellig in eurdirl.

a gloev y ved in edirl.

a gliv deur. a glev teeirl.

Teernweilch Pridein prýdaw ych priwgert.

5

ych priwclod a digaw.

ych bart ych beirnad vytaw.

ych porth perthin yv ataf.

Attep a ganaw ar canhuyw vy argluit.

erliv. wi. can dothuif.

10

Heissaun liw liev gliv glevrvit.

Haessa di var di bart wif.

Viw kertaur im ruw. ruisc. morkimlaut gurt.

ruisfirt kirt kert. vahaut.

assuin asserv herv hirvlaut.

15

assuinaf ar wut naw. naut.

(b) RED BOOK.

Dadolch Rys vab Gruffud. Kyndelch ae cant.

Assynaf naed Du (diamheu dy daen,

ath donyaec (yf inneu)

ar dy wyr, eryr aereu,

ar dy wlat, wledic deheu.

20

Assynaf, archaf arch vaer y beryf

a beris nef a Haer,

naed rac dy var, car kerdaer,

ar dy byrth, ar dy borthaer.

25

Assynaf, archaf (eirchat ym gelwir)

naed kywir kyngwastat

ar dy drysseu, aer drassyat,

ar dy dryssaer, gawr gwenwlat.

Asswynaf aŵch naŵd, na chelŵch aŵch porth,
can perthyn attregŵch.

Gostecwyr llys, gostegŵch:
“Gostec, beird! bard a glywch.”

5 Asswynaf naŵd haŵd haelon deheubarth,
diheuborth kerdoryon,
ath daryf oth duranogyon,
ath doryf ath deyrnueibyon.

10 Asswynaf naŵd haŵd haeloned worsaf
(nyth orseif teyrned)
ar dy doryf, koryf kywryssed,
ar dy deulu teilŵng med.

Medgwyn eu gwyn eu gwiriaŵt, medgynn ae gwarchae,
ae gŵercheidŵ yn eurdyrn,
15 a gloeŵ yfet yn etyrn,
a glyŵ deŵr, a gleŵ deyrn.

Teyrnweilch Prydein, prydaf aŵch prifgerd,
aŵch prifglot a dygaf,
aŵch bard, aŵch beirnyat vydaf,
20 aŵch porth perthyn yŵ attaf.

Atteb a ganaf a ganwyf; arglyd,
erglyŵ vi, kan dothwyf.
Leissaŵn llyŵ, llêv glyŵ gleŵ rwyf,
llaessa dy var, dy vard ŵyf.

25 Wyf kerdâŵr ym rwyf rwyf Morgymlaŵd gwyrdd,
rwyf ffyrd, kyrd kerd wahaŵd.
Asswyn asserŵ herŵ hirvlaŵd,
asswynaf ar ud naf naŵd.

X. A RELIGIOUS POEM.

BLACK BOOK.	RED BOOK.	
In enu domni meu y. voli. maur y uolaud.	Yn en ⁶ D ^ī , meu y moli ; ma ⁶ r y mola ⁶ t.	
Molawe douit. maur y kinnit ar y cardaud.	Molaf Douyd, 5 ma ⁶ r y gynnyd ar y carda ⁶ t.	
Duu an amuc. Duu an goruc. Duu an guaraud.	Du ⁶ an hamuc, Duw an goruc, Du ⁶ an g ⁶ vara ⁶ t. 10	
Duu an gobeith. teilug pirfeith. tec y purfaud.	Du ⁶ an gobeith, teil ⁶ ng perffeith, tec y purffa ⁶ t.	
Duu an d ⁶ li. Duu issi vr ⁶ y. vrenhin trindaud.	Du ⁶ an dyly, Du ⁶ yssy bry, 15 brenhin trinda ⁶ t.	
Duu a broued in y truy ⁶ ted in ¹ y trallaud.	Da ⁶ a prouet ynn yn dr ⁶ ydet dr ⁶ y y dralla ⁶ t.	
Duu a d ⁶ fyu. oe garcharu gan vuildaud.	Duw a dyuu 20 oe garcharu gan uvullda ⁶ t.	
Guledic deduit an gunel in rit erbin dit braud.	G ⁶ ledic detwyd an g ⁶ nel ni yn ryd erbyn dyd bra ⁶ [t]. 25	

An duch ir gulet
ir y varet.
ae werindaud.

5 Ym paraduis.
im pur kynnus
rac puis pechaud.

An gunel iechid
ir y penid
ae pimp dirnaud.

10 Dolur eghirith.
Duu an diffirth
ban kymirth cnaud.

Din a collei
bei nas prinhei
15 diuei devaud.

Or croc crevled
y deuth guared
ir vedissyaud.

20 Kadarn bugeil
Crist nid adweil.
y teilygdaud

An dŵc yr wled
yr y ware
ae werindaŵt.

Ym Paradys,
ym pur gynnys
rac pôys pechaŵt.

An gônel iechyt
yr y penyt
ae pym dyrnaŵt.

Dolur eghyrth—
Duŵ an diffirth,
pan gymerth knaŵt.

Dyn a gollei
pei nas prynei—
diuei deuaŵt.

Or groc greulet
y deuth gwaret
yr vedissyawt.

Cadarn uugeil
Crist nyt adueil
y teilyngdaŵt.

XI. A DIALOGUE BETWEEN UGNACH UAB
MYDNO AND TALIESSIN.

“Marchauc a girch y dinas,
ae cun gwinion ae cirn bras,
nýth adwaen, mi ryth welas.”

“Marchauc a kirch ir aber
y ar march cadarn kadfer,
dabre genhiw ; ným gwatter.”

“Mi nýd aw ina in aur,
gotev gueith y godriccaur :
elhid bendith new a llaur.”

“Y gur nim guelas beunit
y¹ tebic y gur deduit,
ba hid ei dý? a phan doit?”

“Ban deuaw o Caer Seon
o imlat ac Itewon,
it aw Caer Lev a Gwidion.”

“Dabre de genhiw ir dinas,
ath uit met ara phellas,
ac eur coeth ar di wanás.”

“Mi nýd adwaen y gur hý
a metev tan a gveli :
tec a chuec y diwedi.”

1. leg. *vyt.*

5

10

15

20

A DIALOGUE

“Dabre genhiw im tino,
 ath uit guin gorysgelho,
 Vgnach ýw vý heno mab Mýdno.”

“Vgnach, bendith ith orsset !
 5
 ath vo rad ac enrydet !
 Taliessin viw inheu, talaw itti dý
 gulet.”

10

“Taliessin, penhaw or guir,
 beitad ýg kert kýuergir,
 tric ima hid dýv merchir.”²

“Vgnach, mvihaw ý alaw,
 ath vo rad ý gulad pennhaw:
 ný haetaw kabil, ny thrigiaw.”

2. *is added in a later hand.*

XII. WINTER.

Llŷm awel, llum brin,
 anhaut caffael clid :
 llicrid rid, reuhid llin,
 rŷ seiw gur ar vn conin.

Ton tra thon toid tu tir,
 goruchel guaetev rac bron banev
 bre : breit allan or seuir. 5

Oer lle lluch rac brŷthuch
 gaeaw, crin caun, calaw truch,
 kedic awel, coed in i bluch. 10

Oer guelȳ pisscaud yg kisscaud
 iaen, cul hit, caun barywhaud,
 birr diuedit, guit gvyrhaud.

Ottid eirŷ, guin ŷ cnes,
 nid a kedwir oe neges,
 oer llinnev, eu llŷu heb tes. 15

Ottid eirŷ, guin aren,
 segur ŷscuid ar iscuit hen,
 rŷuaur quint, reuhid dien.

Ottid eirŷ ar warthaw rev¹,
 goscupid quint² blaen guit tev,
 kadir ŷscuid ar ŷscuit glev. 20

1. In MS. **res** has been altered later to **reo**.

2. MS. **gint**

Ottid eirý, tohid istrad,
diurýssint vy keduir y cad,
mi nid aw, anaw nim gad.

5

Ottid eirý o dv riv,
karcharaur goruit, cul biv,
nid annuýd hawdit hetiv.

Ottid eirý, guin goror
mýnit, llum guit llog ar mor :
meccid llvwýr llauer kýghor.

Glossary

GLOSSARY

The paragraphs refer to the Grammar. *voc.* = causing vocalic mutation (lenation). *nas.* = causing nasal mutation. *spir.* = causing spirant mutation. *coll.* = collective. *n.l.* = nomen loci. *ch*w follows *c*, *ð* follows *d*, *ng* follows *g* in the order of the alphabet.

1. **a** (voc.) rel. part. § 82 ff. With pers. pron. (§ 48 ff.) sg. 1 *am*, sg. 2 *ath* (voc.), sg. and pl. 3 **ae**, **ay**, **as**, pl. 1 *an*, pl. 2 *ach*.

2. **a** (voc.) interr. part. § 239. With pres. of copula **ae**. **ae.. ae** whether .. or.

3. **a** (voc.) interj. § 243.

4. **a** (spir.) prep. *with*, see 1. **ac**.

5. **a** (spir.) conj. *and*, see 2. **ac**.

6. **a** (voc.) prep., see 1. **o**.

6. **a-** used to infix pronoun. § 94. With pers. pron. sg. 1 *am*, sg. 2 *ath*, sg. and pl. 3 *as*.

abad m. *an abbot*; pl. **-eu**.

aballu to perish. 158, 15.

aber a river-mouth, estuary.

aber-fa f. harbour, harbourage.

abert sacrifice. 150, 17.

abid f. a habit, monastic dress.

abreið scarcely, hardly. 159, 10. 197, 20. 200, 17.

1. **ac**, **a** (spir.) prep. *with*, § 162. With art. **ar**; with poss. adj. sg. 1 *am*, sg. 2 *ath* (voc.), sg. 3 m. **ae** (voc.) f. **ae** (spir.), pl. 1 *an*, pl. 2 *ach*, pl. 3 *ae*.

2. **ac**, **a** (spir.) conj. *and*, *as*. § 198. With art. **ar**; with poss. adj. sg. 1 *am*, sg. 2 *ath* (voc.) etc. **ac.. ac** both .. and.

1. **ach** (awch, ych) *your*. §§ 57, 58.

2. **ach** *lineage, descent*; pl. **-oed**.

3. **ach**, see 1. **a**, 1. **ac**, 2. **ac**.

achaws m. *cause, reason*. **pa a. why?** 218, 16. **o a. because** § 199. Cf. **achwysson**.

achenocid, see **anghenoctid**.

aches (from Lat. *accessus*) *flood-tide*. 228, 9. See CZ, V, p. 566.

achlan *entire, all*. 202, 22, 23.

achub to occupy, seize, precipitate oneself, snatch. 151, 5, 180, 19, 199, 12, 201, 20 (see *cyfarth*). 207, 17.

achubeid to seize. 152, 8.

achwanecäu to augment, increase.

achwaneg *more*.

achwanegu to increase.

achwysson (pl.) *causes*. 161, 15.

achyfeith, see **anghyfyeith**.

adán f. a *wing*; pl. **-eð**. 203, 19.

adar (coll.) *birds*; sg. **ederyn**.

adaw to leave, allow. pres. ind.

pass. edir. 152, 4. 158, 8. 193, 10.

adeilad to build, a *building*; pl.

-eu. 139, 3.

ad-feilaw to decay, decline. 238, 20.

ad-fod to exist, be. fut. ind. sg. 3

adfyð 228, 29, 33.

ad-libin a *wretched remnant*. 153,

28.

ad-na-bod to recognise, know. § 144.

pres. ind. act. sg. 1 **adwaen**.

ad-newyðu to renew. 155, 4.

adolwyn to beseech. 142, 31. pret.

pl. 3. **adologyssant**. 149, 10.

adref *homeward*. 196, 9. **atref**

198, 29.

adwaen, see **adnabod**.

adwy a gap, opening; pl. **-eu**. 175,

17.

aðas fit, meet, suitable.

aðassu to fit, adjust. 150, 26.

aðaw to promise. 170, 13. 177, 7.

218, 27. pres. ind. sg. 3 **edew** 239, 20.

aðef to acknowledge, admit, allow.

227, 14.

aðfelach? 227, 5.

að-fwynn-der m. *gentleness, nobility, honour*. 181, 24.

að-oed m. *appointed time; destiny, fate*. 229, 21. 230, 20.

aðurn adornment. 163, 29.

aðurnaw to adorn, decorate. 155, 5.

1. **ae**, see 1. **a**. 2. **ae**, see 2. **a**.

3. **ae**, see 1. **ac**. 4. **ae**, see 2. **ac**.

aed, see **myned**.

Aeð (Ir. **Aed**) n. pr. m. 201, 14.

aeðfed ripe, mature. 165, 20.

aer slaughter; pl. **-eu**.

Aer n. pr. m. 195, 26.

aer-fa f. slaughter; pl. **-eu**.

aer-glwyf dealing wounds in battle. 233, 5.
aer-llew m. lion of battle. 233, 6.
aeth, see **myned**.
aeth-lym keen and sharp. **Aeth-lem** f. the name of a sow. 207, 8.
af, see **myned**.
Afallach n.l. *Avallon*.
afar m. grief. 229, 8.
af-lonyðu to incommod. 209, 23.
aflonyðwch disturbance. 148, 6.
afon f. a river; pl. -oeð.
afory to-morrow. 203, 28.
Affric *Africa*.
affwys m. an abyss, deep, bottom. 197, 29. 206, 32. 207, 2.
agalen f. a whetstone. 194, 14.
agori to open; part. **agoredig**.
agos near; comp. **nes**; sup. **nessaf**.
angel an angel; pl. **engylion**.
angerð m. vehemence, force. 151, 17. 184, 24. 186, 4.
angeu, see **angheu**.
anghad f. hand. 233, 20.
anghaead unclosed, open, liberal. 233, 19.
anghen (agen) m. need, necessity; a. **yn** a. by sheer necessity 206, 14; cf. Hg. II. 197, 25.
anghenoctid (achenoctid) want, indigence. 142, 20. 146, 3.
angheu (agheu, ageu) f. death. 150, 15.
angheuawl deadly; mortally wounded. 159, 8. 18. 183, 26.
anghlywedig unheard of, unusual.
anghreifft (agreifft, agriff) example. 165, 12.
anghyf-nerth helplessness, impotence. 143, 6.
anghyf-reith injustice, wrong.
anghyfreithiawl unjust, wrongful.
anghyfrwys untrained, unskilled.
anghyf-yeith alien in speech, foreign. 191, 19. pl. -yðyon. 153, 17.
anghyolwch? 229, 6.
aho, see **myned**.
alaf wealth; pl. -oeð. 164, 9.
Alban *Scotland*. yr A. 141, 7.
allan out, outwards, outside. o
hynny a. thenceforth.
allt a cliff. A. *Clwyd* (wrongly, instead of *Clud*) *Dumbarton*.
all-tud a foreigner, alien; exile.
am (voc.) prep. about, on account of. § 164. **am hynny** therefore.
am-blygu to embrace. 148, 12 v. l.

amcawð said (he). **amkeudant** said they. § 133 (b).
am-ðiffyn to defend, protect; defence.
am-ðiffynwr m. a defendant in a lawsuit.
am-gadarnedig confirmed, ratified.
amgen different. **nyd** a. namely.
amherawdyr m. an emperor; pl. **amherodron**.
amherodraeth f. empire, dominion.
amheu to doubt, dispute, call in question.
amlach, **amlaf**, see **amyl**.
amlwg clear, manifest.
ammreiniawl (*ambreinawl*) without privilege. 221, 16.
amnad? 227, 4.
amod m. a covenant, compact. 149, 17. 150, 20. 158, 24. 159, 10.
amryfael various, different; pl. -on.
amryson a quarrel. 223, 2.
am-ryw various, divers.
am-sathyr a treading, moving of feet. 193, 15.
amser m. time; pl. -oeð.
amug, see **amwyn**.
amws m. a stallion; pl. emys.
am-wyn to protect. § 133 (b). pret. ind. act. sg. 3 **amug**.
Amwythig *Shrewsbury*. 161, 31.
amyl frequent; numerous; comp. **amlaach**; sup. **amlaf**.
amylader plenty, abundance, multitude. 145, 23.
amylhäu to increase, augment.
1. an (yn) our. § 57.
2. an, see 1. a.
3. an, see 1. and 2. ac.
anadyl breath.
anaf m. a blemish, wound. 242, 3.
anaw poetry, muse. 233, 13.
anawð, see **an-hawð**.
an-dylyedus illegal, wrong. 167, 26.
an-eiryf innumerable, countless; a countless number. 184, 27.
an-fad evil, crime. 231, 14.
an-feidrawl immense.
anfon to send, dispatch. pres. ind. sg. 3 **enfyn** 228, 31.
Angiw *Angou*.
an-hawð not easy, difficult. 241, 2.
anhebig (y) unlike, dissimilar (to). 225, 15.
anheilwng unworthy.
anher, see **hanher**.
anifeil m. an animal, beast; pl. -eid.

annerch *to greet, address*; pl. -eu *greetings.* 143, 8.

annobeithaw (*o*) *to despair (of).*

annod *delay.* 171, 27.

annoeth (*anoeth*) *a precious thing;* pl. -eu. 165, 13. 187, 13. Cf. Arch. I, p. 453.

annog *to urge, encourage, recommend.*

annwyd *nature, temper.* 242, 6.

anolo *void, worthless, nugatory.*

an-osteg f. *disturbance, disorder.*

anreg f. *a dish of meat*; pl. -yon. 163, 31 (*fercula*).

anreithaw *to plunder, ravage.*

anreithwr m. *a plunderer.*

anrydeð, see enrydeð.

ansawð f. *condition, nature, quality, state, station.* 160, 10. 180, 6.

ansoðedig *established, founded.*

ant, see myned.

an-udonawl *perjured, treacherous, wicked.* 149, 31 v. l.

an-uundeb (-dab) *discord, disunion, conflict.* 167, 30.

an-waethach *no less.* 145, 20 v. l.

anwyl *a friend*; pl. -yd. 160, 26.

anyanawl *natural, native, innate.*

1. ar (voc.) prep. *on, over, for, before.* § 165. *within* 146, 25. ar *hynt there-upon.* *About to, on the point of.*

ar gychwyn 225, 2.

2. ar, see 1. and 2. ac.

3. ar=a (rel. part.) + ry, see § 95 note.

4. ar, see 1. o.

aradyr *a plough.*

araf *slow, gentle, mild.* 155, 27.

arall *another, other*; pl. ereill. § 68. ereill . . . ereill *some . . . others.*

arbed *to spare, save.* 153, 23.

ar-benhir *chief, principal.*

arch f. *a request.* 153, 34. 234, 9.

arch-esgob m. *an archbishop*; pl. archesgyb.

archesgobaeth *an archbishopric*; pl. -eu.

archesgobawd f. *an archbishopric.*

archesgob-dy m. *an archbishop's palace.*

archyssant, see erchi.

ar-dymheru *to temper, warm.* 143, 13.

ar-delw *a voucher.* 215, 30.

ar-ðerchawg *exalted, noble, illustrious.*

ar-ðerchocäu *to exalt, honour.*

ar-ðyrchafel *to raise, exalt*; part. ar-ðyrchafedig.

areith f. *a speech.* 231, 33.

aren (arien) *hoarfrost.* 241, 17.

arf m. *a weapon*; pl. -eu.

arfawg *armed.*

ar-fer *to be wont, be accustomed;* use, wont.

arferu (*o*) *to use, employ, enjoy, be accustomed.*

arfolk *to entertain, receive.* 148, 10; 231, 12.

ar-gelwch *concealment, seclusion.* 229, 4.

ar-gledyr m. *a protector.*

argiwýð m. *a lord*; pl. -i.

argiwýðes f. *a lady, mistress.*

argiwýðiaeth f. *lordship.*

ar-gyfreu *a marriage portion.* 140, 12. 24.

ar-gyweðu (*y*) *to injure, hurt.*

arnaf etc., see ar § 53.

aros *to await, expect, wait.* past subj. sg. 3 arhoei; pret. sg. 3 arhoes.

arth m. *a bear.* 172, 27.

aruthreð *terror, fear.* 172, 28.

aruthyr *terrible, fearful.* 172, 29.

ar-weðu *to bear, wield.* 159, 3.

arwein *to carry, bear.* 163, 3. 10.

arwyð f. *a token, mark; a battle-standard; signal*; pl. -on. 150, 26. 158, 32. 180, 4. 183, 8. 194, 22.

arwyðocäu *to signify, imply.*

aryant *silver.*

as (es), see 1. and 6. a.

asgell *a wing*; pl. esgyll.

asgell-wrych m. *spray.* 154, 18.

asgrifenu, see ysgrifenu.

asgwrn *a bone*; pl. esgyrn.

asserw *bright, brilliant.* 235, 15.

assw (asseu) *left.*

asswy *an invocation.* 235, 15.

asswynaf *I invoke, entreat.*

at (voc.) prep. *to.* §§ 53, 166.

attal *to restrain, withhold, hinder.*

atteb (at-heb) m. *to answer; an answer, defence*; pl. -yon. 167, 19. 169, 1.

attregwch *a stopping, delay.* 234, 18. 236, 2.

1. ath, see 1. and 6. a.

2. ath, see 1. and 2. ac.

athechem? 231, 11.

athoed, see myned.

athraw *a teacher*; pl. -on. 145, 3. 161, 11. 219, 13.

awdurdawd m. *authority.* 222, 7.

awch, see ach.

awel m. *a breeze, wind.* 241, 1.
 awn, see myned.
 awr f. *hour.* yn a. *now.* 239, 7.
 yr a. *hon now.* 142, 15.
 awssen *absence.* 177, 6.
 awst *August.* 166, 16.
 1. ay, see 1. a.
 2. ay, see 1. and 2. ac.

ba, see pa.
 bach *a bend, angle.* 198, 8.
 baeð m. *a boar.* b. *coed a wild boar.* 184, 12; pl. beið. 201, 16.
 Baðon n. l. *Bath.* 179, 31.
 bagyl f. *a crook, crutch.* Cwrr y Fagyl n. l. 204, 4.
 1. ban *loud.* 227, 18.
 2. ban, see pan.
 bann *a height;* pl. baneu 241, 6.
 b. y gaer *battlement;* 196, 1.
 banw *a pigling.* porchell . . hyt tra uo en denu . . ac o henne eny el e moch yr coet banu vyt BCh. 92, 28.
 bar m. *wrath, anger.* 229, 10. 233, 1.
 baraf, see baryf.
 baran *wrath, fury.* 280, 8.
 baran-res *rank of soldiers, host.* 228, 10.
 Barberfloi n. l. *Barfleur.*
 barð m. *a poet, bard;* pl. beirð.
 barð-eir *song, panegyric.* 235, 14.
 barfawg *bearded.* 199, 31.
 barn *judgment.* 188, 6 v. l.
 barnuto *judge, decide, fix, pass judgment, deem.* past. part. barnedig.
 barwn m. *a baron;* pl. -eid, -yeid.
 baryf (baraf) *a beard.*
 baryfhäu *to grow a beard.* 241, 12.
 Cf. baryf-lwyd rew FB. 244, 9.
 bathoriaeth f. *mintage, mint.* 223, 14.
 bedissyawd f. *the universe.* 238, 18.
 bedw f. (coll.) *birch-trees.* 225, 9.
 Bedwyr n, pr. m.
 beð m. *a grave;* pl. -eu.
 1. bei, bey, see bod.
 2. bei *a fault.*
 beich *a burden, load.* 230, 24.
 beiðad m. *a challenger.* 240, 9.
 beirnad (beirnyad) m. *a judge.* 235, 7. 236, 19.
 bendigedig *blessed.*
 bendyfth (benthid) f. *a blessing.*
 bennwig f. *a young sow.* 205, 19.
 ber *a spike, lancee;* pl. -eu. 231, 5.
 beth, see peth.
 beunyðawl *daily.* 190, 9.

biw f. *cattle.* 242, 5; *a standard of value.* teirbuw 211, 5.
 blaen m. *point, top, end, front.* or b. *in front,* oe f. *before him,* ym b. *pawb before any one else,* yn ol ac ym b. *behind and before.*
 blaen-weð *highest state, summit.* 169, 21. RB. II. 41, 33.
 blawð *tumult, commotion.* 235, 15.
 bleið-ast f. *a she-wolf.*
 blin *wearied, weary.*
 blinaw *to weary, molest, harass.*
 blinder *weariness.*
 blodeuaw *to flourish, prosper.* 186, 1.
 blwch? 241, 10.
 blwyðyn f. *a year;* pl. -eð.
 blyngħäu *to become angry, to frown.* 140, 7. 172, 23.
 blyneð f. *years (after numerals).*
 bo, see bod.
 bocsach f. *a boasting, vaunting.* 174, 13.
 boch, see bod.
 bod *to be, state of being (verb subst. and copula)* § 152 ff.
 boð *goodwill, pleasure.* oe eu b. *of their own free will.* 156, 6. 12.
 boði *to drown.*
 bogel f. *the navel.* 174, 25.
 Bolwyn n. l. *Boulogne.* 184, 31.
 bon *stem, root, stump;* pl. -eu.
 boneð *lineage, noble birth.* 162, 1.
 bonheðig *hereditary, innate* 180, 15; *noble;* pl. -yon; superl. bonheðickaf.
 bore m. *morning.* y b. *in the morning.* 225, 3.
 brad m. and f. *treachery, plot.*
 bradwr m. *a traitor;* pl. bradwyr.
 bran m. and f. *a raven;* pl. brain.
 bras *stout, fat.* 241, 2. 227, 20.
 Cf. Gnawd buan o vain, gnawd buan o vras MA. 845^b 15.
 brath m. *a stab, wound.* 188, 21.
 brathu *to wound, stab, spur.* impf. ind. act. pl. 3 brethynt; impf. ind. pass. brethid; part. brathedig.
 1. brawd f. *judgment, day of judgment.* 185, 16.
 2. brawd m. *a brother;* pl. brodyr, broder.
 brawd-le m. *a judgment seat.*
 bre *hill, promontory;* 243, 7.
 Redyn-fre n.l.
 breich m. and f. *an arm.* 230, 23.
 breið *hardly, scarcely.* 241, 7.
 breiðwyd f. *a dream, vision.* 173, 6; v. l. ib. 14.

breiniawl *privileged*. 219, 14.
 breint (bryein, brein) m. *privilege, prerogative; state, condition*. 220, 22.
 breisg *stout*. 233, 10.
 brenhin, (breenhin, brennhin, bren-nin) *a king* ; pl. -oeð.
 brenhinawl *kingly, royal*.
 brenhines f. *a queen*.
 brenhin-wisg *royal robe* ; pl. -oeð.
 brenhinyaeth f. *kingdom*.
 brethid, brethynt, see brathu.
 breu *brittle*. 200, 1.
 breuan f. *a handmill, quern*. 206, 31.
 briawaw *to break in pieces, shatter, destroy*. past part. briwedig. 147, 3.
 broder, brodyr, see brawd.
 bron (bronn) *breast* ; pl. bronnoeð ; dwy-fron *breasts*. rac b. *before, in front of* ; ger b. *before* ; ym b. y dyð *towards day* ; cf. ymrion y gorfin Hg. II, 248, 17 ; dynyon ymron agheu, ib. 201, 34.
 brwysg *strong, impetuous, swift*. 233, 10.
 bry adv. *above*. 237, 15.
 bryd *mind, thought* ; on f. *with one accord*. 175, 10.
 bryn (brin) m. *a hill, mount*.
 brys m. *haste* ; ar f. *in haste*.
 bryssyaw *to hasten*.
 Brytaen f. *Britain*. B. Fechan
Brittany. Brytanyeid *Britons*.
 brythwch *tumult, storm*. 229, 7 ; 241, 8. brythwch gaeaf MA. 189a⁴⁶.
 bu, see bod.
 bual *a drinking-horn*.
 buan *swift, rapid*. 151, 21. 225, 21.
 buaned *swiftness, fleetness*. 158, 29.
 bucheð f. *life, salvation*. 150, 15.
 bucheðu *to live*. 165, 9.
 buðugawl *victorious, gifted*. 164, 28.
 buðugolyaeth f. *victory, triumph* ; pl. -eu. 144, 5.
 buðyn? 229, 3.
 bugeil m. *a shepherd*. 238, 19.
 bwlich *a gap* ; pl. bylcheu *embra-zures*. 164, 22.
 Bwlwyn n. l. *Boulogne*. 162, 14.
 bwrð m. *a table* : pl. byrðeu.
 Bwrgwyn n. l. *Burgundy*.
 bwrw *to throw, cast, strike, hit, overthrow*. impf. ind. act. sg. 3 byryei ; pret. ind. sg. 3 byryawð.

bwyell-ig *a small hatchet*. 201, 21.
 bwyd m. *meat, food*.
 bwyta *to eat, act of eating*.
 bwyttal *virtuals*. 203, 2.
 bychan *small*.
 bychod *a trifle*. 227, 10.
 1. byd m. *world*. gwyn y f. *happy he!* 170, 18. goreu yn y b. *best of all* ; gwas yn y b. *any youth*.
 2. byd, see bod.
 bydawl *earthly*. 222, 11.
 byðin f. *a troop, division of an army* ; pl. -oeð.
 byðinaw *to array in troops, to draw up in battle array*.
 byhud ? 233, 9.
 bylchau, see bwlich.
 byrr (birr) *short, brief*.
 byryei, see bwrw.
 byth (fyth) *ever*.
 byw (1) *alive* ; (2) *life*.
 bywyd *life*. 193, 9 v. l.

cabil *reproof*. 240, 13.
 cad f. (1) *battle, roði c. ar faes to give battle* ; (2) *a battalion*.
 cadarn *strong, firm, powerful*.
 cadarnhāu *to strengthen, fortify, confirm, ratify, affirm*.
 cadeir f. *a chair, seat*.
 Cadell n. pr. m.
 cad-ffer *strong in battle*. 241, 5.
 cad-lys f. *a fortified court*. 195, 5.
 cadw *to keep, preserve, maintain*.
 Cad-wallawn n. pr. m.
 cadwent f. *battle, fight, contest*. 198, 20 ; 230, 6.
 cad-wr m. *a warrior* ; pl. cedwyr. 241, 15. 242, 2.—n. pr. m.
 cadwyn a *chain* ; pl. -awr. 228, 16.
 cadyr *strong, firm*. 241, 22.
 cae m. *an enclosure, fence*. 149, 6.
 cael, see caffel.
 caer f. *a citadel, fortress, city*. pl. ceyryð 156, 31. 193, 2. C. Alclud (Ir. Ail Clúaide) Dumbarton, C. Efrawg York, C. Faðon Bath, C. Fuðei Silchester, C. Geint Canterbury, C. Idor Dorchester, C. Lew Dinas Dinlle, C. Loyw Gloucester, C. Lyr Leicester, C. Lleon Chester, C. Llion ar Wysc Caerleon, C. Lwydcoed Lincoln², C. Seon Segontium,³ C.

¹ See Rhys, *Celtic Heathendom*, p. 406.

² According to Holder, *Alt-keltischer Sprachschatz* II, col. 192, *Lētocētum* is the old British name for Lichfield in Staffordshire.

³ On p. 239, l. 13 *Caer Seon* is confused with *C. Sion* 'Zion' ; hence the mention of Jews in l. 14. Cf. Rhys, l.c., p. 272.

GLOSSARY.

Weir Warwick, C. Wynt Winchester, C. Wyrangon Worcester.
 caeth captive; pl. ceith.
 caeu to shut, close. fut. ind. pass. cayator. 232, 1.
 Cafall the name of one of Arthur's hounds. Cabal, Nennius ed. Mommesen, p. 217.
 caffel (caffael, cael) to get, seize, obtain, succeed 184, 15. pres. ind. sg. 2 ceffy, pl. 2 ceffwch, pret. pass. caffad (cahat), etc. § 145.
 calaf (coll.) stalks, reeds; 241, 9.
 calan m. Calends; c. Awst first of August; c. gaeaf All Saints' Day; c. Mei May-day.
 calaneð corpses, pl. of celein. 188, 12.
 caled hard, severe; pl. -yon.
 Caled-fwlch (Ir. calad-bolg) m. hard in making notches, the name of Arthur's sword.
 calon (callon) heart; pl. -eu, -oeð.
 cam crooked, wrong; wrong, injustice; gan g. wrongfully, unjustly.
 camgwyl a fine, penalty. 225, 3.
 v. l. for camlwrv Leg. Wall. 40b2.
 camlwrv a fine, penalty for the lesser offences.
 cam-ryfgyu to act arrogantly. 166, 10. Cp. Hg. I. 219, 28.
 cam-weð sin, iniquity. 229, 28.
 1. can (gan) (voc.) prep. with, by. § 167. With pron. end. § 53. gellwng y eneit gan yr wybyr spiritum in auras emisit 159, 25; yr yscymunedickaf vradwr gan Védrawt that most accursed traitor of a Medrawd 189, 15.
 2. can (gan) conj. since. § 202.
 3. can, see 1. cant.
 canal, see cynhal.
 canfed hundredth, a hundredth part. 230, 5.
 can-fod to perceive. § 160.
 canhorthwy help, aid. 178, 8. 10.
 canhorthwyaw to help. 176, 8.
 canhwys, see canu.
 canhym-deith to accompany, keep up with. 208, 28.
 cani, see cany.
 can-lyn to follow.
 can-llaw m. a supporter. 212, 11; 213, 21; 214, 10.
 can-mawl to praise, commend.
 canonwr m. a canon; pl. -wyr.
 cans, see canys.

1. cant (can) (nas.) m. a hundred.
 2. cant, see canu.
 canu to sing, celebrate in song, recite, play; pres. subj. act. sg. 1 canwyf; impf. ind. pl. 3 cenynt; pret. ind. sg. 3 cant.
 can-wlad a hundred countries. 232, 3.
 can-wr a hundred men 151, 25. 172, 15.
 cany (cani), before vowels canyd, conj. since not. § 202.
 canyad permission, consent. 217, 13.
 canys (cans) i.e., can with the present of the copula, for, since. § 202.
 caplan m. a chaplain. 155, 3.
 car a friend, relative; pl. -ant.
 Caranwys Carnotensis. 179, 21.
 carchar m. a prison, gaol.
 carcharawr m. a prisoner; pl. carcharoryon.
 carcharu to imprison. 242, 5.
 cardawd charity, alms. 237, 7.
 carn a cairn.
 carreg a rock; pl. cerrig.
 carn-wyn having a white hilt. Hence carnwennan f., the name of Arthur's knife. 207, 31.
 caru to love, impf. ind. act. pl. 3 cerynt; past part. caredig.
 carw a stag. 196, 29.
 caryad m. love, affection. 233, 15.
 caryant 140, 4, either miswritten for caryat or formed like mol-yant, með-yant, &c.
 cassäu to hate.
 casseg f. a mare.
 castell m. a castle, fortress; pl. cestyll.
 cathyl f. a song, lay, poem; pl. cathieu. 229, 17.
 Catyneis n. l. Caithness. 145, 11.
 Caw n. pr. m. 201, 19.
 cawn m. (coll.) reed grass, stalks, coarse grass; 241, 9; 12; sg. conin.
 cawr m. a giant, mighty man; pl. cewri.
 cawssei, see caffel.
 cayator, see caeu.
 cedernid strength, force, security, violence.
 cedig battlesome, boisterous. 241, 10.
 cedwyr, see cadwr.
 cedymdeith, see cydymdeith.
 cefeis, see caffel.

cefn (keuen) *back*; pl. cefneu; dan-
gos eu cefneu *to flee, take to flight*.
drachefyn *behind, back, again*; tra-
gefyn *behind him*; dyfod t. *to return*
213, 8; trach-eu-cefn 221, 21;
drae-cefn *wynteu behind them*.
179, 26.

cefynderw *a cousin*. plant yr hen-
vam a yyd keuyn-dyru BCh. 75, 28.
cegin f. *a kitchen*.

Cei n. pr. m. *Caius*.
ceidwad m. *a witness*; pl. keidweid.

ceing f. *a branch*. 165, 21. 197, 3.
cein *beautiful, fair, delightful*.

Ceint (Cent) *Kent*. 189, 19.
ceissaw *to seek, fetch, endeavour*.

ceirch *oats*. 196, 4.
ceith, see caeth.

cefyd *skilful, ingenious; an artist*.
cefyd f. *an art*; pl. celfyðeū.

celi *the heavens*. 231, 25. Celi
God. 231, 24.

celu *to hide, conceal*.
celwrm m. *a piece?* 207, 32.

celwyðawg *lying, false*. 190, 10.
Celyðon: llwyn C. 148, 25 = coit
Celidon, Nennius, p. 199.

Celli-wig f. *the name of Arthur's
court in Cornwall, now Callington*.

cenedaeth f. *a race, kind*.
cenedyf f. *a race, kind*; pl. cened-
loëð.

ceneu m. *a whelp*. 198, 32. 199, 4.
32. Ceneu n. pr. m. 162, 3.

cennad m. and f. *a messenger,
emissary, embassy*; pl. -eu.

cennadwri f. *a message, tidings*.
censeint *a convent*; pl. censeimoeð.

cenwch, see l. can.
cerð *craft, art, song*; pl. cyrð.

cerðawr m. *a craftsman, minstrel,
bard*; pl. cerðoryon.

cerðed *to walk, travel, journey, go*.
cerðedyad *a course, motion*. 161, 11.

Ceredigywawn *Cardigan*. 205, 28.
cerenhyð *relationship*. 168, 20.

Cernyw *Cornwall*.
cerwyd *a stag*. 226, 1.

cerwyn f. *a caldron*. Cwm C.,
n. l. 204, 15.

cesseil *the armpit*. 194, 14.
cethr *a spike*; pl. -awd. 230, 29.

cethron *a spike*. 230, 27.
cewilyð *shame*. 141, 8. 142, 31.

cewssynt, see caffel.
ci m. *a hound*; coll. 205, 9; pl.

cwn.

cicwrr *a footsoldier; coll. infantry*.
202, 29.

cig m. *flesh*.
ciglef, see clybod.

cil *a recess, nook*.
Cil-gwri n.l.

cilyaw *to retreat, desert, fail*.
cilyð n. *mate, fellow*. § 72.

ciwdawdwrm. *a citizen, inhabitant*.
claðu *to bury*.

claf *sick*. 143, 13. 149, 28.
cleðyf m. *a sword*; pl. -eu, per
metathesim clefyðeu.

clefyd m. *sickness, disease*. 161, 27.
clefyðeu, see cleðyf.

cleigaw *to plunge, immerse*. 206, 21.
cleis *a stripe*. 194, 14. Cf. maen
cleis, *marble*. Lhwyd.—Porth Cleis

n. l. 204, 1.
clid *a shelter*. 241, 2.

clod m. and f. *fame, renown*.
clod-fawr *famous, celebrated*.

clodfori *to make illustrious, render
famous*. 165, 15.

cloff *lame*.
clomen (colomen) f. *a dove*. 163, 10.

clust m. *an ear*. 201, 29. 203, 26.
clwm a *tune*; pl. clymeu moduli

147, 14.
Clwyd *a river-name*. 204, 17.

clybod *to hear*. impf. ind. act.
sg. 3. clywei; impf. pass. clywid;
pret. ind. sg. 1 ciglef; sg. 3 clygleu.

§ 133 b. clybod ar *to hear of*.
clymeu, see clwm.

cnawd *flesh*. 238, 12.
cnes *skin*. 241, 14.

cneuen *a nut*. 196, 23.
cnithiaw *to pluck*. 200, 9.

coch *red*.
cochi *to redden, become red*. 173, 16.

coydant m. *provocation, offence*.
166, 4.

coed (coyt) m. (coll.) *a wood, trees*;
baeð c. *a wild boar*. pl. codyð.

coeth *pure, fine*. eur c. *refined gold*.
cof *memory, recollection*.

coffau *to remember, to call to
mind*.

cog *a cuckoo*; pl. -eu.

congyl f. *a corner, angle*. 204, 9.
colled m. *loss*; pl. -eu 175, 31.

collen *hazel*. c. derwen *an oak
sapling*. 197, 2.

colli *to lose, be lost*. 238, 13.

conin, see cawn.

corff *a body, corpse*.

GLOSSARY.

corn *a horn, trumpet; a drinking horn.* pl. *cyrn, curn.*
 coron *f. a crown.*
 coryf *pommel, saddle-bow; metaph. stay, support.* 233, 20; 234, 23.
 Arch. I, p. 487.
 cosb *punishment, fine.* 217, 18.
 craft *firm, steadfast.* 140, 5.
 cras *hard, dry.* 225, 20.
 crawn, *see croni.*
 credu *to believe.* pres. subj. pl. 2
 crettoch.
 crefyðous *devout; a religious person.* pl. -son. 155, 5.
 crefyðwr *m. a religious person.* 144, 13 (miswritten for *crefftwyr* = *operarii* Geoffrey II, 14).
 Creiðylad *n. pr. f.*
 creir *m. a relic;* pl. -eu. 153, 26.
 creirhāu *to cause to swear by relics.* 221, 2.
 crettoc, *see credu.*
 crēu *to create.* 227, 19. 228, 18.
 creu *gore, blood.*
 creu-lawn *blood-thirsty, cruel; compar. creulonach.*
 creulon-der *cruelty, tyranny, oppression.*
 creu-lyd *blood-stained, gory;* f. creuled. 231, 20. 238, 16.
 crib *f. a comb.* 203, 25.
 crin *withered, brittle.* 241, 9.
 Crist *Christ.*
 cristawn *a Christian; pl. cristonog-yon.*
 cristonogawl *Christian.*
 crog *f. a cross.*
 crogaw, crogi *to crucify, hang.*
 croni *to hoard, amass, accumulate.*
 pres. ind. act. sg. 3 crawn 233, 12.
 crwmm *bent.* 225, 11.
 crychyd *a shake (in music);* pl. -eu. 147, 14 v.l.
 cryd *a trembling, tremor.* 231, 22.
 cryfang *a talon;* pl. -heu 197, 28.
 cryn *a trembling, quaking.* 228, 33.
 cryno *suitable.* 156, 32. compar. -ach. 169, 2.
 crynu *to tremble, quake.* 184, 22.
 past part. crynedig 152, 16.
 cuan *an owl* 197, 8; 9; *a rock-owl, Lhwyd.*
 cuðyaw *to cover, hide.* 154, 13.
 cul *lean, thin, emaciated.*
 Culwyð *God.* 228, 24. 231, 25.
 Custenhin *n. pr. m. Constantine.*

cwbwl *(cwbyl) entire, whole.*
 cweiraw, *see cyweiryaw.*
 cwefeint *(cwfeint) f. convent, assembly;* pl. *cwfenoed.*
 cwm *m. a valley.* 197, 12.
 cwnsli *m. counsel.* 148, 2.
 cwrr *an edge, corner.* C. y Fagyl n.l. 204, 4.
 cwympl *m. a fall.* 225, 22.
 cwynaw *to lament.*
 cwyn-fan *f. a lament, wailing.*
 cychwyn, cychwynnu *to set out, move, start.* deil ar gychwyn = dail yn syrthio MA. 361 b, n. 8.
 cyd *(ced) conj. though;* § 205.
 cyd ac, y gyd ac *together with.* y gyd yg cyd together 155, 2. § 171.
 y gyd a hynny *likewise* 204, 26. 218, 20.
 cyd-ðioðef *to suffer.* 142, 14. past. part. -edig *(y) suffering (with).*
 cyd-ðiolch *to congratulate.* 180, 10.
 cyd-farchawg *m. a knight-comrade.*
 cyd-gynghor *joint counsel.* 155, 2.
 cyd-synyedigaeth *f. consent.* 145, 4.
 cyd-tywyssawg *m. a joint leader.* 178, 1.
 cyd-ym-deith *m. a companion, comrade;* pl. -on.
 cydymdeithocäu *to accompany, associate with.* 146, 4.
 cyf-agos *near.*
 cyfan *whole, entire.* 183, 32.
 cyfar *trouble, anger;* 230, 7. Cf. Rhyfedd ym fyw llyw llawged gan gylar o gwyn gofid MA. 301 a 17.
 cyf-arch *(keuarch) to request, ask;* c. gwell *to greet;* geir cyfarch *a supplementary question asked after the trial, before the verdict is given.*
 cyf-ar-fod *to meet, encounter, touch;* § 160.
 cyfarth *to bark, bay;* roði c. rendre les abois, *to stand at bay.* achub yr c. (sic leg.) *to be first at the charge.*
 cyf-arwyð *m. a guide.*
 cyf-ar-wyneb *(ac) opposite (to)* 210, 5.
 cyf-eillt *m. a friend.*
 cyf-eir *f. yn y gyfeir straight before him, headlong.* 207, 6.
 cyf-enw *a namesake.* yg kyuenw yr vn dyd ym phen y vlwydyn that day a year. 195, 19.
 cyf-ergir *m. and f. a conflict, contest.* 240, 9.
 cyf-ing *narrow, strait.* 175, 17.
 cyf-lawn *full, complete.*

cyflasfan f. *an outrage, slaughter.*
 cyf-le m. *an opportunity.* 159, 16.
 cyflehäu *to dispose, arrange, place.*
 163, 27.
 cyf-lym *sharp, quick, speedy.*
 cyf-newid (O. W. *cyfnofud*) f. *coin, merchandise.* 223, 13. Cf. ef a holltir
 furyf y gyfnewit; haner erwn a vyd
 RB. 2. 146, 19.
 cyfodi *to arise.*
 cyf-oed *having the same age, so old.* 141, 28.
 cyf-oeth m. *power, dominion, kingdom, wealth; pl. -eu.*
 cyfoethawg *powerful, wealthy.*
 cyfoethogi *to enrich.*
 cyfranc f. *an encounter, fight, combat.* 178, 12.
 cyf-red *equally swift.* 225, 6.
 cyf-reith f. *law, right; pl. -eu.*
 cyfreithiawl *legal, lawful.*
 cyfreu *plumage?* 225, 17. *action?* 229, 30.
 cyf-rin *a confidant.* 225, 5.
 cyfrwch *a meeting.* 147, 5 (v.l.).
 cyfrwng m. *mean, interval.* yg c. in the midst of 184, 9.
 cyfrwys *trained, expert.* 186, 19.
 190, 9 v.l. 191, 21.
 cyf-ryw m. *the same kind.* 181, 27.
 a kind 161, 27. *similar, like, such.*
 cyf-uch *of equal height.* yn g. ac on a level with. 174, 30.
 cyf-un-deb *unity, concord.* 167, 23.
 cyf-yawnhäu *to adjust, arrange.* 163, 27 v.l.
 cyf-yeith *having the same language.* 196, 13.
 cyf-yl *nearness, proximity.* yn y gyfyl *near him.*
 cyff m. *stock, trunk, stem; pl. -yon.*
 cyffelybu *to compare, imitate.*
 cyffredin *common.* yn g. in common 185, 25. 223, 12.
 cyffro m. *excitement.* 164, 27. 176, 6.
 cyffroi (*kefroy*) *to excite, arouse, disturb;* c. *cyfreith (hawl) to institute a legal action (a claim).* past part. *cyffroedig.* 184, 10.
 cyffur *occasion, opportunity.* 147, 9.
 cymghaws m. *a counsel, advocate.*
 cymghellawr m. *a chancellor, the king's principal steward or reeve.*
 cymghelloraeth f. *chancellorship.*
 cymheusaeth f. *a pleading.*
 cymghlodforussed *equally renowned.* 186, 5.

cymghor (keghor) m. *counsel, advice; caffel yn y gyghor to decide.*
 cymghorsynt *envy, malice.* 156, 20.
 Cf. LÄ. 12, 19.
 cymghori *to advise.*
 cymghreir f. *a covenant, truce.* 159, 12.
 cymgwastad *constant.* 234, 6.
 235, 27.
 cyhoeð *public.* 222, 12.
 cy-hyd *having equal length.* yn gyhyd ac as long as.
 cyhydeð *equality, parity.* 221, 6. 7.
 cylch m. *a circle.* yg c. *around, about, towards, concerning;* yn eu c. *about them, around them;* yg c. *hynny about that.*
 cylchynu *to surround, encompass, besiege.* 146, 17 v. l.
 cyllell f. *a knife, dagger.*
 cyllell-bren *the wooden lath of a scabbard;* pl. -eu 195, 14. *wooden tweezers* 200, 5.
 cyllell-fawr *big-knived.* 206, 19.
 cymhell *to compel, force, drive, exact.* c. y law to force one to surrender.
 cymenn *wise; compar. cymhenach.* 175, 28.
 cymer, see cymryd.
 cymmeint *of equal size, as much, as many, so great, so many.*
 cymmwvd m. *a commote, a division of country.*
 cymod *to propitiate, make peace.* 197, 32. 201, 7.
 cymodawg *a neighbour;* pl. cymodogion.
 cymod-loneð *a concord, agreement.*
 cymrwð *mortar.* 193, 2.
 Cymry (pl. of Cymro m. a Welshman) *Wales.* 154, 10. 203, 31. 222, 4.
 cymryd (kemyrit) *to take.* pret. ind. sg. 3. cymterh, cymirth. c. arnaw to feign; c. eu fforð (hynt) to set out; c. ffo to take to flight.
 cymyn *to entrust.* 157, 10.
 cymnediw *a command, injunction;* pl. -eu; 150, 24; 166, 26.
 1. cyn (cynn) prep. *before.* § 170.
 2. cyn (gynn) conj. *sooner, before.*
 § 204. gynn noe fyned *before he goes.* 225, 3.
 3. cyn *a stump;* pl. -yon. 197, 14.
 cynadyl *a meeting, assembly.* 171, 19.
 cyn-deced *as fair.* 163, 14.

GLOSSARY.

cyn-digrifed *as pleasant.* 163, 14.
 cyn-dosted *equally harsh.* 198, 17.
 Cyn-ðelig n. pr. m. 162, 7.
 Cyn-ðelw n. pr. m.
 Cyn-farch n. pr. m.
 cynefawd *custom, usage.* 163, 24.
 167, 1.
 Cyn-felyn n. pr. m.
 cynhal, cynnal (*kanal*) *to sustain, support, maintain.*
 cynhebig *similar, like.*
 cynhebygu *to compare.* 161, 2.
 cynhelu *to support.* 220, 30.
 cynhen *contention, strife, contest;*
 pl. cynhenneu.
 cynhyrfu *to excite, move.* 173, 27.
 cynired *to come together, assemble; bring together; a concourse.* 162, 20.
 Cyn-las n. pr. m.
 cynllwyn *an ambush, waylaying.* 223, 1.
 cyn-lysfan *a leash, a slip.*
 cynna *equally good, peer.* 227, 9.
 cynnal, see cynhal.
 cynnelw *pattern, example, model.* 233, 16.
 cynnifywr (coll.) m. *combatants, warriors.* 202, 27.
 cynnig *to propose, proffer, suggest.*
 cynnullaw *to collect, call together.*
 cynnwys *to receive, admit, adopt.* 238, 5. Ar sawl a oed dan geithiwet heuyt ef ae kynnwys sawd ym paradwys LA. 1331²; Creawdyr celi an kynnwys ni yn trugared, FB. 1996.
 1. cynnyð m. *a huntsman;* pl. -yon. 205, 4. 7.
 2. cynnyð *increase, prosperity.* 237, 6. ef a doeth att Walchmei. Ac a gyuarehawd gwell idaw. Duw a ro kynnyd arnat, heb y Gwalchmei Hg. I. 223, 2.
 cynnyðu *to increase.* 180, 12.
 cyn-ran m. *a first or chief part; a leader.* 231, 27.
 cyncnt adv. *formerly, before.* yn g. sooner, rather 181, 8.
 cyntaf *first; yn gyntaf first, at first.*
 cyntefin (Ir. ceteemuin) *the beginning of summer.* 225, 14.
 Cyn-was n. pr. m. 204, 4.
 cyny (kene) conj. *though not.* § 205.
 cyrch m. *an attack, onset, raid.*
 cyrchaw *to fetch, bring.* 231, 18.
 cyrchu *to attack, set upon, march upon, make for, approach.*

cyrn, see corn.
 cyryscwyðad *a quarrel, contention?* 230, 9.
 cysgawd m. *shade, shelter, shadow.* 241, 11.
 cysgu *to sleep.*
 cystal *equally good, as good.*
 cy-war-sangu *to trample upon, oppress, crush.* 149, 26. 152, 16. 180, 32.
 cy-weir *prepared, equipped, complete.* 158, 29. 179, 16.
 cyweiryaw *to prepare, equip, lay out.*
 cy-weithyð *a company.* 194, 3.
 cy-wir *true, just.* 234, 6.
 1. cy-wlad f. *a neighbouring territory, borderland.* 233, 18. Rybu Vran vab Llyr llu rwymadur mat ygkamp ygkyllat ygkur MA. 180 b 13.
 2. cy-wiad m. *a compatriot.* 230, 10.
 cywrein *skilful, cunning.*
 cy-wrisseð *contention, strife.* 234, 23. 236, 11.
 cy-wyð-ol-(y)aeth f. *harmony, music;* pl. -eu 163, 14. Used also as sg. pa gywydolyaeth yw honn? LA. 82, 10.
 chwaer f. *a sister;* pl. chwioryð.
 chware *to play; play;* pl. chwareyuu.
 chwech, chwe (whe) (spir.) *six.*
 chwedyl m. *a story, tale, news, tidings;* pl. chwedieu.
 chweg *sweet.* 239, 21.
 chwerthy *to smile.* chwerðið (§ 129) 225, 22.
 chwerw *bitter.* 230, 7.
 chwi *you.* Emphatic chwichei, conjunctive chwitheu, chithei. § 45.
 Chwintus n. pr. m. *Quintus.*
 da (1) *good, profitable;* (2) *goods, wealth, benefit.*
 dabc *come!* § 141.
 dad-ganu *to recapitulate, rehearse, recite.* 173, 6.
 dadolwch *intercession, invocation.* 235, 17.
 dad-rithaw *to re-transform.* 199, 8.
 dadyl m. and f. *a meeting, dispute, suit, judgment;* pl. dadleu (used as sg. masc. and pl.) *a dispute.*
 dadyl-fa *a meeting-place, court.*
 O. W. dadlma 222, 13.
 dafad f. *a sheep;* pl. defeid.

daffar *provision.* 225, 19; cf. gwnaeth Duw trvgar gardauid FB. 15, 14.

dangos (dankos) *to shew, disclose, produce.* d. cefneu *to flee;* d. bronnoeð *to face;* d. deheueð *turn the right to, face;* d. ysparduneu y *to spur.*

dala (daly) *to hold, seize, retain, hold back, capture.* act. pret. ind. sg. 3 delis (dellis), past subj. pl. 3 delhynt, pluperf. pl. 3 dalyassant.

dam-gylchu *to surround;* past part. damgylchedig.

dam-gylchynu *to surround.* 142, 17.

damunaw *to desire, wish, seek for;* part. damunedig.

damwein m. *accident, chance, fortune, event;* pl. -eu; o δ. *by chance.*

damweinaw (y) *to happen to, to befall.* 173, 11.

danfon *to send, dispatch.* 178, 7.

dar f. *an oak-tree.* 197, 2.

dar-estwng *to subdue, subjugate, yield;* past part. darestyngedig.

dar-fod *to cease, end, come to pass, happen.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 deryw; fut. ind. sg. 3 dervyð; impf. ind. sg. 3 daroeð; cond. sg. 3 darfei. § 160.

dar-lleaw *to read.* 231, 29.

darmerth *provision, preparation.* 162, 19.

dar-o-gan *prophecy, prognostication;* pl. daroganneu.

darpas (am) m. *preparation (for), provision, project.*

darparu *to prepare, intend.* 196, 7.

dar-ym-red *to pass to and fro;* 210, 7.

dathoedd, see dyfod.

1. **daw** m. *a son-in-law;* pl. dofyon.

2. **daw**, see dyfod.

dawn *gift, mental endowment;* pl. donyeu.

dayar (dayr, dair) f. *earth, land, ground.*

dayar-dy *a subterranean vault.*

dayar-gychwyn *an earthquake;* 229, 1.

dayoni *goodness, virtue, valour.* **dayrawl** *earthly, mundane, material.* 164, 9.

de, see dy.

dechreu *to begin, inaugurate; a beginning, origin.*

dedwyð *happy, blessed, virtuous.*

dedwyðyd *happiness, felicity.*

defawd f. *custom, practice, habit, ordinance;* pl. defodeu.

defnyð m. *material, element, substance, cause;* pl. defnyðeu, defnyðyeu *witnesses, guarantors, etc. in a lawsuit.*

deg, deng (nas) ten. § 41.

deheu (1) *right (dexter), righteous;* (2) *the right hand or arm, the right side of the body, south, South-Wales;* pl. -oeð.

Deheu-barth *South-Wales.*

dehongyl (dehogyl) *to interpret; interpretation.* 173, 8, 13.

dehol *to expel, banish.* 143, 21. 155, 7.

deifaw *to roast.* 199, 28.

deil (coll.) *leaves.*

deissyfeid (deissifyt, dissuict) *to demand, request, seek, merit.*

deissyfyd (dysseifyd) *sudden, unexpected.* 147, 3. 187, 23. 208, 17.

1. **delhynt**, see dala.

2. **delhynt**, see dyfod.

delw f. *image, form.*

delwad m. *creator.* 227, 1.

delwyd, see dyfod.

deni, see l. tan.

derwen f. *an oak-tree.* collen d. a *young oak.*

dethol *select, picked.* 202, 29.

deu m. *two;* f. **dwy** (dui, du). § 42 (a).

deubi, see dyfod.

deu-ðeg (nas.) *twelve.*

deu-ðeg-mlwyð *twelve years old.*

deu-ðyblig *double, two-fold.* 214, 29.

deugeint forty.

deugeinfed *fortieth; ar y d. with forty men.* § 165.

Deu-gleýf *the name of a cantref in Pembroke.* 204, 5.

deu-hanner *divided in two equal halves.* 221, 7.

deuth, see dyfod.

Dewi n. pr. m. *David.*

dewin m. *a magician.* 225, 16.

dewis to choose, prefer.

dewr *brave.*

dewreð *prowess, valour, prime of life.* 140, 6. 180, 10. 186, 1. 4. **warriors** 144, 1, (omnem armatum militem).

Dews (Deus) Lat. *Deus.* 227, 1. 20.

1. **di**, see ti.

2. **di (dy)** (voc.) O.W. = later i, y, prep. to. diði to her. § 195.

di-aerfa *without slaughter.* 170, 10 (sic leg.).

di-afael *exempt from seizure.* 223, 32.

di-angc *to escape.* pret. ind. act. sg. 3 diengis (dihegis).

di-al *to avenge; vengeance.*

di-am (O. W.) *for.* § 164.

di-amheu *undoubted, certain, evident.* 235, 18.

di-anaf *flawless, whole.* 202, 5.

di-annod *without delay.*

di-anrydeðu *to dishonour.* 142, 6.

di-arfeu *unarmed.* 156, 1.

di-arfod *unprepared.* 177, 30.

di-arfu *to disarm.*

diawd *drink.* 170, 16.

did, see dodi.

di-drifwr m. *a hermit.* 165, 8.

di-dryf *a solitary place, hermitage.* 165, 9.

di-ðarbod *to consider, care.* heb δ.

parum *cogitans* 184, 14. impf. ind. act. pl. 3 diðorynt 175, 26. § 147.

di-eithyr *outside.* § 172. yn y d. 222, 14.

dién *buds.* 241, 19. Arch I. p. 503.

dieu, dieuoed, see dyð.

difa *to destroy, annul.* 197, 13.

di-fanw (O. W. dimanw) *to disparege, slight.* pres. subj. act. sg. 3 difanwo. 224, 7.

di-farnu *I judge, decide against.* 140, 9. 220, 13. 16. fut. sg. 3 diwarnawd 228, 20.

di-fei *faultless, perfect.* 238, 15.

di-fetha *to destroy.* 197, 31.

di-fryssio *to hasten, speed.* 242, 2.

di-funer *exempt from allegiance to a lord.* 223, 31.

di-fwlch *without a notch.* Cleðyf D. n. pr. m. 204, 12.

di-fwyn *void, idle, unused, untouched (of a virgin).* 201, 4.

di-fwynant *profitless.* 211, 8.

diffeth waste.

diffethwch m. *a waste, wilderness.*

differei, see diffryd.

diffryd (rac) *to defend, protect (from).* past. subj. act. sg. 3 differei; pret. ind. sg. 3 diffyrth, diffirth. § 133a.

diffurn? 228, 11.

di-garyad *unloving, unkind.* 142, 4.

1. digawn (dygawn) m. *a sufficiency; sufficient.*

2. digawn *to be able, to effect, do, accomplish;* pres. ind. sg. 1 digonaf.

di-gribyaw (y) *to attack.* 205, 5. Cf. ym-gribiaw.

digrif *pleasant, agreeable.*

digrifwch *pleasure, enjoyment.*

di-gyfoethi *to dispossess, deprive of territory.* 191, 17.

diheu *undoubted, certain, d.-porth firm support.* 234, 14.

di-hewyd *affection, inclination, desire.* 175, 25. 180, 32. 182, 11.

diléu *to exterminate, annihilate.*

dilid *to pursue.*

di-luyð *exempt from hosting.* 223, 31.

dillad (coll.) *clothes, dress.* 154, 8.

dim *a thing, something; nothing, naught.* diléu hyd ar ðim *to annihilate;* dilid hyd ar ðim *to pursue to extinction;* adv. at all.

din *a fortress.* Din Tywin. l. 205, 27.

Din-dagwl n.l. *Tintagel.*

dinas m. *a city, citadel;* pl. dinas-soeð.

di-obeithaw *to despair.* 190, 13.

di-od *to take off, divest, extract.*

di-ødef (O. W. diguadef) *to suffer, undergo, withstand.*

dioer *verily, certainly.* 176, 1.

di-o-gel *safe, secure.*

diogelwch *safety, security.*

diolch (i) *to thank.*

dipynwys, see dybynu.

dir *necessary.* 190, 10.

dir-fawr *very great, huge, enormous.*

dirieid *wicked.* 225, 12.

dirwy f. *a fine, mullet.*

di-rybuð *without warning.* 158, 12.

disgyblu *to study, imitate (like a disciple).* 156, 22. Cf. Hg. I. 208, 5.

disgynnu *to dismount, descend, alight, land, put up at.*

dispelaw *to unsheathe.* 199, 13.

dissifid, see deissifyd.

distryw *to destroy, demolish.*

ditheu, see tithew.

dithwn (O. W.) *this day.* 208, 15. 16.

di-wall *careful, unceasing.* 164, 5.

1. diwarnawd m. *a day.*

2. diwarnawd, see di-farnu.

diwedyð m. *evening.* 241, 13.

diweð *end or d. at last.*

di-weir *chaste.* 164, 15.

diweir-deb *chastity.* 190, 16.

diwethaf *last.* 154, 30.

di-wreið *an uprooting.* 233, 3.

di-wreiðedig *uprooted, demolished.* 155, 4.

di-wyll *cultivation.* 167, 8.

dodi (dody) *to place, put, give, charge.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **did** ; **dodi ar y gyfraith to appeal to the law** ; **dodi ym mhen un to suggest, submit, entrust, hand over.** **dodyw, doent**, see **dyfod**.
 1. **doeth wise, sage.** 143, 3.
 2. **doeth, see dyfod.**
doeth-ineb wisdom. 142, 32.
Dofyð m. the Lord, God.
Dofyðad m. the Lord. 231, 15.
dofyon, see 1. **daw.**
dogyn portion, share. 202, 14.
doið, see **dyfod**.
dolur grief, anguish. 144, 20.
doluryaw to grieve. 154, 25, 204, 20.
domni = Lat. *Domini*. 237, 2.
donyawg gifted, endowed. 235, 19.
donyeu, see **dawn**.
dos, see **myned**.
dothuif, doy, doynt, see **dyfod**.
drachefyn, see **trachefyn**.
dragon, **dreig f. a dragon** ; 172, 29.
a battle standard. pl. **dreigeu**.
 150, 26. 180, 2. 184, 3.
drein (coll.) thorns. 230, 32.
dros, see **etros**.
drudbold, *arrogant, wicked.* 186, 13.
 232, 8.
drudannaeth f. arrogance. 165, 28
 (*protervia*).
Drud-wyn m. the name of a hound.
 204, 8.
drwg bad, evil ; mischief, harm.
drws door, entrance ; pl. **drysseu**.
drwy, see **trwy**.
drycin (i.e. dryg-hin) foul weather.
 225, 6.
drychafel to raise, lift ; rise.
dryg-ðamwein misfortune, ill-luck.
dryll m. portion, fragment ; pl. **-eu**.
dryllyaw to break in pieces, shatter.
dryssawr m. a doorkeeper. 234, 8.
drysseu, see **drws**.
du black.
duc m. a duke.
duch, dug, see dwyn.
du-hunaw to awake. 173, 6.
Du-las (Ir. Dub-glas) a river-name.
 146, 14.
du-un accordant, agreeable. 216, 23.
duw (dyw) : pob d. on every day.
 201, 5. d. **Sadwrn on Saturday.**
 228, 21. 240, 10.
Duw m. God. pl. **dwyweu** 142, 21.
dwfrein, see **dwyrein**.
dwfyr (dwfwr) m. water.

dwrn a fist, hand ; pl. **dirn.** 235, 2.
dwy, see deu. **dwyweu**, see **Duw**.
dwywawl divine.
dwy-law (pl. of llaw) hands.
dwyn to take, carry, bring, capture ;
 § 133 (b). d. **ar gef to call to mind.** d. **ruthur to attack.** d. **yr dygyn to affirm on oath.** pres. ind. act. sg. 1 **dygaf** ; fut. ind. pass. **dygetawr** (§ 129, n.) ; imper. sg. 2 **dwg** ; pres. subj. sg. 3 **duch** (§ 110 n. 2) ; pret. ind. sg. 3 **dug**.
dwyrein (dwfrein, dwyfrein) the east. 172, 1. 181, 17.
 1. **dy**, see 2. **di**.
 2. **dy (de) (voc.) poss. adj. thy.** § 57.
 3. **dy (de), see ti.**
dy-borthi to carry, inflict. 180, 26.
dy-bryd ugly, foul, base. 178, 6 ;
 180, 19 ; 190, 26.
dybynu to hang down. 230, 18.
dycco, dyccwy, see **dwyn**.
dychymyg m. invention, device ;
 pl. **-eu, -yon.** 164, 26.
dyð (O.W. did) m. day, daytime, daylight, date ; pl. **dieu** (after numerals), **dieuoð, dyðyeu** ; d. **brawd Doomsday** ; hanner d. **mid-day**.
dyð-gweith on a certain day, one day. 199, 10.
dyðwyn to bring. 194, 13.
Dyfod Demetia.
Dyfnarth n. pr. m. 200, 28.
Dyfneint n. l. Devon. 206, 5.
dyfod (deuod, douot) to come. § 141.
dyfodedigaeth f. a coming, arrival.
dy-fryssyw to hasten. 242, 2.
dyfuant, dyfyð, see **dyfod**.
dyfynnu to summon. 201, 1. 205, 2.
Dyfyn-wal n. pr. m.
dyffio, see **dyfod**.
dyffryn m. a valley. D. **Llychwr the valley of Loughor.**
dyffygyaw to fail, lack. 145, 24.
 180, 11.
dy-gaboli to belabour, beat soundly
 207, 21.
dygaf, dygetawr, see dwyn.
dygonho, see 2. **digawn.**
dy-grynn terror. 228, 33.
dygrynnnyaw to seize, clutch.
 206, 20.
dy-grynnöi to avail, profit. 153, 10.
 175, 30.
dy-gwyðaw to fall, chance.
dygwyðedigaeth f. setting (of the sun). 151, 4.

dygyn *hard, severe; a test, proof.*
See *dwyn.*

dy-gyrchu *to make for, set upon;*
draw. 194, 23. 202, 12. 206, 24.

1. dy-heð *discordant, strange?*
piteous, a pity? 194, 19.¹
2. dyheð? 228, 27. Here MA.
73 b 6 has the variant *tuedd*, pl. of
tu 'country-side, country.'

dy-leith *death.* 232, 1.

dylyed f. *due, claim, right, title.*

dylyedawg *high-born, noble;* pl.
dylyedogyon. 140, 29. 155, 14.
156, 24.

dylyedus *due, proper.* 182, 20.

dylyu (*deleu*) *to have a right to,*
deserve, be due, owe. 171, 26. 208, 20. 23.
217, 25. 237, 19.

dyn m. and f. *a human being, man;*
coll. *men* 204, 5. pl. -yon (*deneon*).

dy-nessäu *to approach, draw near.*

dyn-y-orn (cf. Ir. *duin-orgun*) *homi-*
cide, murder. 222, 17.

dyrchefynt, see *drychafel.*

dyrn-awd m. *a blow;* pl. *dyrnodeu.*

dyrn-feð *a handbreadth.* 197, 24.

dy-roði *to give.* pres. ind. act.
sg. 3 *dere, dyry;* imperat. sg. 2 *dyro.*

dyrys (1) *difficult, intricate;* (2)
adversity. 162, 20. 167, 16. 175, 18.

dysg m. *teaching, instruction,*
example, behaviour. 164, 12. 182, 19.
184, 23 (*hortamen*). 187, 7.

dysgu *to teach, instruct.*

dysseifyd, see *deissfyd.*

dywad, see *dywedud.*

dywal *fierce.* 183, 13. 233, 4.

dywalhäu *to harass.* 185, 26.

dyfyð, see *dyfod.*

dyw, see *duw.*

dywedud *to say.* § 133.

dywygyad (di-) *manner, fashion.*
164, 12.

1. e, see *yð.*
2. e, see 4. y.

eb-rwyð *swift, quick.* 176, 11.

ebryñ? 228, 27.

ech *outside of, beyond?* 228, 16.
Cf. FB. 66, 8; 106, 30; 140, 31; MA.
208a 49.

Echel *Achilles.*

echenawg *needy, destitute.* 143, 5.

echwrys *violent, fierce.* 227, 22;
Cf. FB. 159, 5; 199, 20. MA. 247,
24, 36.

ed, see *yð.*

ederyn, see *adar.*

edifar *repentant, sorry.* 149, 17.

edir, see *adaw.*

edirn (etyrn) *sovereignty, supre-*
macy. 235, 3. 236, 15.

edrych *to look, see.* 164, 23. 220, 9.

ed-rif *descent, lineage.* 212, 29. Cf.
MA. 168a 51.

ed-ucher (=hyd ucher) *till evening.*
193, 1. 203, 5.

edyw, see *ydyw.*

ēēwīs, see *aāaw.*

ef (eff) *he, it.* §§ 45; 47. Emphatic

efo (effo); *conjunet. ynteu.* § 45 (b).

efelly *thus, so.* See *felly.*

efo, effo, see *ef.*

Efyas n. l. *a cantred in Hereford-*
shire. 206, 4.

effeiryad m. *a priest;* pl. *effeiryeid.*

eglur *clear, bright, brilliant,*
renowned, famous. 167, 1. 169, 22.

eglur-der *brightness, brilliance.*
173, 1.

eglwys f. *church;* pl. *eglwyseu.*

egnad (O.W.), pl. *egneyd*, see
ynad.

englyn m. *a stanza of three or four*
lines. 200, 13.

engylyon, see *angel.*

enghyrth (eghirith) *terrible, pain-*
ful. 238, 10. FB. 1772; MA. 351b 21.

ehang *unrestricted, free.* 173, 29.

ehawg m. *a salmon.* 197, 28.

ehedeg *to fly.* 172, 29.

ehofyn-der *fearlessness, confidence,*
courage. 187, 4.

ehunan *himself;* pl. *ehunein* § 60.

ei, see *myned.*

eiðaw *his;* eiðunt *theirs.* § 55.

Eifft *Egypt.* yr E. 172, 18.

eigawn *ocean, sea.* 161, 18.

eingon f. *an anvil.* 196, 21.

1. eil *second, next.* eil hynaf *eldest*
but one; eilweith *a second time,*
again; bop eilwers *alternately.*
2. eil *a son.* 200, 28; 205, 24.

eilenwi *to fulfil, accomplish.*
152, 14. 169, 22.

eillaw *to shave, to cut (hair).*

einyrn *ours.* 169, 14. § 55.

eirant *they will arise.* 229, 19; 20.
See RC. VI, 27.

eirchad *a suitor, suppliant.* 234, 5.

eir-m-oed *since my time.* 198, 9.
§ 197 n.

¹ For oed dyhed kelu y ryw was hunn WB. 475, RB. 116 has ys oed gryssyn kelu &c.

eiry snow.
Eiryawn n. pr. m. 204, 30.
eiryf number. 172, 14.
ein-y-oed (eiroed) ever, always.
 § 197 n. 140, 3.
eisseu want, indigence. 146, 2.
 199, 19.
eissoes yet, nevertheless.
eissylliad hell. 231, 13. v. l. *issaf wlad*, MA. 74b 14. *eissylflat*, FB. 161³⁴. v. l. *Eissif wlad* MA. 27a⁵⁶.
 See FB. 302²⁸.
eissyllud progeny, followers. 232, 9.
 Cf. FB. 44, 2; 203, 24; MA. 143a 39.
 169a, 35.
eisted (eyste) to sit; e. wrth y gaer to besiege the city.
eisted-fa f. *a seat, throne*; pl. -eu.
eithaf end, extremity; pl. -oed.
eithyr prep. *except.* § 172.
el, see *myned*.
el-chwyl a second time, again. 141,
 22. 142, 22.
elhei, elhid, elhynt, eloch, see
myned.
Elen n. pr. f. *Helen*.
ell (ill, yll) all, see § 67.
ellwng to dismiss, dispatch, let;
shed (blood). past. subj. act. sg. 3
ellygei, pret. ind. sg. 3 *ellygwys*, etc.
past part. ellyngedig.
ellyn a razor. 203, 25.
em, see *yn*.
emelldigedig accursed.
Emrys n. pr. m. *Ambrose*.
Emyr n. pr. m.
en, ena, see *yn, yna*.
encil, encilyaw to retreat. 185, 1.
encyd space of time. 184, 8.
ene, see *yny*.
eneid (eneyt) m. life, soul; pl. -eu;
myned e. dros e. to engage in a life-for-life struggle.
enfyn, see *anfon*.
ennuis (O.W.), see *enwi*.
ennymnu to kindle, fire; be inflamed.
enrydeð (anryded) m. honour, dignity. 142, 16. 144, 11. 145, 21.
enrydeðu (anrydedu) to celebrate.
 154, 23. pres. subj. act. sg. 3
enrydeðocao.
enrydeðus honourable, noble, venerable, dignified. 143, 24.

enteu (entheu, entehu) pers. pron.
 sg. 3 m. §§ 45(c); 46(c).
enw (heno) m. a name.
enwi to name. pret. ind. act. sg. 3
enguis (O.W.) 218, 5.
eny, see *yny*.
enwyed (ennuet) damage, injury.
 Sew y turyw ac enwywet lllosgy tey a
 thorry aradyr BCh. 63, 8.
 1. er, see 1. yr.
 2. er (yr) prep. for. §§ 53, 197.
 3. er, see 1. y.
er-byn against; yn erbyn to meet, against, by. § 173. *yn awch e. against you.* 180, 19.
erbynaw to receive; withstand.
erbynycid (erbyneid) to receive.
 141, 16. 143, 25.
erchi (hercki) to ask, request, bid;
pres. ind. act. sg. 1 archaf.
ereghthun, ereghthunt, see *rwng*.
ereill, see arall.
ereint silver. 200, 24. 203, 19.
 205, 5. Cf. Rhys, Celt. Heathendom,
 p. 125.
erestyn m. a juggler. 147, 13. The
 parallel passage in M.A. 531a 55 has:
 ac en rith kroesan ac arwestdyn ac
 gwareyt.
ereu 230, 1 = *eireu* MA. 73b⁴⁶,
 see *geir*.
er-gelu to hide. fut. ind. pass.
ergelawr 227, 28. *ergelhawr* ib. 29.
er-glybod to listen to. imper. sg. 2
erglyw 235, 10. 236, 22.
er-grym dread, fear. 202, 31.
er-gyd m. a stroke, blow, cast; pl.
 -eu.
er-hyl hunt, chase. 201, 18; 204, 8.
er-lid to pursue.
er-lysu to reject, deny. 229, 30.
ermid m. a hermit. pl. -wyr.
ermud? 232, 10.
ermyn-wisc a robe with border of
ermine. 161, 29.
eryf? 229, 4. 9.
eryr m. an eagle; pl. -od 154, 3.
metaph. a leader.
es, see §§ 94; 159 n. 2.
Esgeir Oervel n. l. *Seiscenn Uar-beoil* in Ireland. 201, 32. 203, 3.
esgob m. a bishop; pl. *escyb*.
esgobaeth f. a bishopric; pl. -eu.
esgobawd a bishopric.
esgolheig m. a scholar, clerk; pl.
 -ion.
esgyll, see asgell.

esgyrn, see **asgwrn**.
esgynnu to ascend, mount, climb.
esmywyth-der m. ease, rest.
estrawn a stranger. 225, 4.
estwng = **gestwng** to let down.
e. gantunt *incumbentes* 176, 30.
etifeô m. an heir; coll. heirs.
 141, 1. pl. -yon 181, 26.
eto, see **etwa**.
etheuuis, see **âdaw**.
ethol to choose, select.
ethynt, see **myned**.
etwa (eto) yet, still. *ettwa* 191, 7.
eu their. § 57. *eu hun* themselves.
eur m. gold.
eur-âwrn golden-handed, liberal.
 pl. -ârn 235, 2. 236, 14.
eureid golden, gilt, set with gold.
 184, 3 (*aureus*).
eur-gleðyf-rûð golden-sword-red.
 233, 9.
euryn golden. 201, 11.
ewin f. a nail, talon, claw. 201, 9.
ewythyr m. an uncle (brother of one of parents, grand-parents, or great-grand-parents); pl. **ewythres** 206, 2.
eyl-weyth, see 1. **eil**.
fal (mal) conj. as. § 216.
felly thus. *yfelly* 164, 30. 166, 20.
fi, fifi, see **mi**.
fry above.
fyhud? 231, 9.
fyn (nas.) my. §§ 57, 59.
ffalst *cunning*. 147, 16.
Ffichteid *Picts*.
fflam f. a flame, fire. 160, 4. 185, 4.
fflamchedig inflamed, flaming.
 159, 20.
Fflandrys *Flanders*.
flo to flee. ar *flo* in flight.
fforð f. a road, way, passage, means;
 pl. **ffyrð**.
fforest f. a forest; pl. -i.
Ffreinc f. *France*.
ffuruf f. form, manner; pa ff. how?
ffustaw to strike, beat. 175, 2.
ffwrm f. a furnace. 228, 22.
ffyð faith. 149, 31.
ffyð-lawn faithful. 181, 3.
ffynhawn f. a fountain, spring.
ffyrð, see **fforð**.
gadael (*gadayl*) to leave, allow.
 215, 29. See **gadu**.
gadaw to leave.
gadu to leave, allow, permit. pres.
 ind. act. sg. 2 *gedy*; § sg. 3 **gad**
 146, 2; pl. 2 *gedwch*; imper. pass.
gat-her.
gafael (*gafayl*) f. a seizing, holding; seizure. 222, 15.
gafael-fawr of mighty grip.
Glewlywd G., 204, 24.
galar sorrow. 229, 9.
galw to call, summon, name. pres.
 ind. pass. *gelwir*; imper. pl. 2 *gelwch*.
gallel, *gallu* to be able; power,
 might. pres. ind. act. sg. 2 *gelly*;
 sg. 3 *geill*, etc.
gan, see **can**.
ganed, see **geni**.
garscon? 199, 12.
garth a mountain ridge. 205, 29.
garw rough.
gast f. a bitch.
gawr f. and m. a shout, cry;
 battle. 205, 10. 229, 23.
gayaf (*gaeaf*) m. winter. 156, 14.
gefeil tongs, pincers. *gefeil* 194, 14.
 1. **geir** (*gyr*) m. a word, request.
 pl. -eu; o un eir with one accord.
 2. **geir** (*gyr, ger*) near. g. *llaw*
 near, close by. g. *bronn* before, § 168.
gelfin a beak. 196, 23.
gelyn m. an enemy; pl. -yon.
gelynawl hostile.
gellwng to loose, let loose, let,
 dismiss, deliver up, draw (a sword).
 pret. ind. act. pl. 3 *gellygassant*.
geneu m. jaws, mouth. 229, 31.
geni to be born; pret. ind. pass.
ganed. 227, 12.
genthi, genti, see **can**.
ger, see 2. **geir**.
Gereint n. pr. m. 203, 9. 211, 8.
Gillamor (Ir. *Gilla mör* Big Lad)
 n. pr. m. 192, 14.
Gillamwri (Ir. *Gilla Muire* the servant of Mary) n. pr. m. 192, 13.
Gilpadrig (Ir. *Gilla Padraig* the servant of Patrick) n. pr. m. 192, 13.
gilyð, see **cilyð**.
girad lamentable, piteous, terrible.
 173, 3. 192, 9.
glan f. a bank, shore; pl. *glanneu*.
glanhâu to clean, polish. 194, 16.
gleif m. and f. a lance, spear. Hg.
 II. 91, 12 = *paladyr onn* CM. 87, 32.
gleis, see **cleis**.
glew brave, stout; a brave man,
 hero.—n. pr. m. 204, 20.

glew-der *bravery, boldness, valour.*
 Glew-lwyd n. pr. m. 204, 24.
 glin m. *a knee; pl. -yeu.*
 gloew *bright, sparkling.* 235, 3.
 glud *tenacious, fast, diligent.*
 175, 5. MA. 285 a 1.
 glyn (wrth) *an adhering (to), following close.* 195, 4.
 glyn m. *a valley, glen.* 197, 12.
 204, 14.
 Glyth-myrr n. pr. m. 201, 12.
 Glythfyr ib.
 glyw m. *a ruler.* 233, 3. 235, 4.
 gnawd *customary, usual, common.*
 gnotædig *accustomed, usual.*
 142, 11. 145, 22.
 gobeithe *hope.*
 go-bedr-or *the four-corners (of the world).* 228, 3. FB. 199, 20. 160, 19.
 MA. 236b 28.
 go-ben-yð m. *a pillow; pl. -eu.*
 go-byrr m. *a fee, pay.* 221, 25.
 go-chel *to avoid, ward off, shun, escape.* 148, 30. 150, 21. 159, 3.
 169, 28.
 Godlont *Gothland.* 156, 11.
 go-driccawr m. *a lingerer, sojourner.* 239, 8.
 go-dwrð m. *a rumbling noise.*
 172, 28.
 go-ðef *to suffer, allow, permit.*
 233, 8.
 goðeith m. *a heath.* 185, 5. 226, 4.
 goðen *purpose, design.* 239, 8.
 yg g. gweith *Mynaw* FB. 187, 29.
 gof m. *a smith.* 196, 21.
 gofmal m. *anxiety* 147, 6; pl. gofeilon
 156, 30.
 gofalus *anxious.* 149, 27. 160, 3.
 gofud m. *affliction, injury.* 143, 6.
 gofwy *to visit.* 142, 3.
 gofyn(wrth) *to ask (of), seek.* 199, 2.
 gofynnnyad *an asking; demand.*
 205, 20.
 Gogigwrr n. pr. m. 204, 23.
 go-gleð m. *the North.* 145, 12.
 200, 32. 201, 15.
 go-gof f. *a cave; pl. -eu.*
 go-gyfarch *prominent, conspicuous.*
 Read with Add. gogifurð (*duodecim pares*), q. v. 162, 16; 171, 11.
 go-gyf-urð *of equal rank, peer.*
 171, 11, v.l.
 go-hir *to delay; delay, respite.*
 golchi *to wash, polish.* 194, 6.
 go-leith *to dissolve.* 233, 7. FB.
 58, 30.

goleuhäu *to light up, illumine,*
 173, 1.
 golud *wealth.* 198, 20. 233, 12.
 go-luð *to hinder, obstruct.* 233, 12.
 golwg f. *a look, glance.*
 gor-alw *to cry or call aloud.* 184, 18.
 pret. ind. act. sg. 3 gorelwys. 231, 24.
 FB. 283, 10. MA. 195 a 54.
 gor-cheidwad m. *a guardian, custodian;* pl. gwercheidweid 208, 17.
 gor-chyfygu *to overcome, conquer.*
 155, 26.
 gor-chymyn (gorchymun) *to command, commend, commit to; a command, injunction;* pl. -eu.
 gorðerch-wraig f. *a concubine;* pl. -wraigð 164, 12.
 gorðeri m. *a shrieking, noise, disturbance.* 176, 19. 183, 22.
 gor-ðifwng *very steady, steadfast.*
 233, 1.
 Gor-ðu n. pr. f. 207, 12.
 gorðwy *oppression, violence.* 233, 2.
 gor-ðyneid *to experience, enjoy habitually.* 142, 14. FB. 28, 18;
 44, 13; 88, 27; 258, 22.
 gorelwys, see gor-alw.
 gor-esgyn *to invade, overrun.*
 1. goreu best.—n. pr. m. 195, 8.
 2. goreu, see gwneuthor.
 gor-flwng *very severe, austere.*
 233, 3.
 gor-fod *to overcome, conquer.* g. ar
 181, 4. pres. ind. sg. 3 gor-yw 230, 13.
 § 160.
 gor-flflowys *to cease, rest.* 157, 25.
 gor-hoffder m. *a boasting, vaunting.* 174, 34.
 gor-hoffð *a boasting, affectation.*
 174, 13.
 gor-llewin *the West.*
 gormes f. *oppression, tyranny.*
 gormod *excess;* 164, 6. yn o. *too much,* 176, 6.
 gor-or m. *a border, side.* 242, 7.
 gor-seð (gworsseð) f. *a seat, throne, court.* 234, 21. 240, 4.
 gor-sefyll *to withstand, stand.*
 pres. ind. act. sg. 3 gorsseiw 234, 22.
 pres. pass. gorseuir 241, 7. Cf. MA.
 160 b 2.
 gor-uchel *very high or loud.* 150, 7.
 241, 6.
 gorug, see gwneuthor.
 Gor-wen n. pr. f. 207, 12.
 gorwyð m. *a steed, warhorse.*
 242, 5.

***gor-ysgelu** to overflow (*the bowl*).
 pres. subj. sg. 3 **gorysgelhō** 240, 2.
 Ni ddodai eirif ar ra dillad
 Na gwin grysgelo nac ysgarlad
 MA. 222 b 18.
 Cf. gwin gorysgalawc RB. 103,¹⁸
 gorysgalauc in *large bowls* E. Lh.
gosgorð retinue. 141, 9.
go-sgubaw to sweep. pres. ind.
 act. sg. 3 **gosgupið** 241, 21.
 gosgymonn (literally *fuel, food*)
 occasion. 174, 5. RB. 114, 4; Hg.
 II. 34, 30; FB. 6, 8; 306, 16.
gossod to put, establish, set, attack,
 thrust. g. ar to attack; g. **drwy**
 arrange. past part. -edig 148, 16.
gosteg f. silence, the proclaiming
 of silence in court. 211, 3. 8. 234, 20.
gostegu to proclaim silence. 234, 19.
gostegwr m. a silencer. 234, 19.
grað f. a step; pl. -eu. 166, 27.
grawn m. grain (coll.) 225, 1.
Greid n. pr. m. 198, 18.
Greidawl n. pr. m. 199, 10.
grîð-fan to groan, a groaning.
Groeg f. *Greece*.
Gruffuð n. pr. m. 162, 4. 235, 17.
Grugyn n. pr. m. 203, 19.
grwm-seid having a dark-coloured
 haft. 194, 15; MA. 95a 2. Cf.
gwrym-dudet FB. 83, 19; gweilch
 gwrym-de 84, 4.
grym force, strength, effort. 151, 13.
 184, 24.
gwad m. a denial. 231, 12.
gwadu to deny, refuse; pres. subj.
 pass. **gwatter** 239, 6.
gwae woe! g. a. woe to him who...
 225, 4. 10. g. **wann** woe to the weak!
 226, 2.
gwaed m. blood. 150, 10.
gwaed-lyd bloody. 184, 9.
gwaeð an outcry, cry of distress;
 pl. -eu.
gwaeth worse; **gwaethaf** worst.
gwa-hanu to separate. past. subj.
 pass. **gwehenid** 183, 5. pass. part.
gwanedig.
gwa-hawð to invite.
gwal a lair. 202, 1; 203, 15.
gwala f. a fill, sufficiency. 200, 3.
gwalch a hawk; metaphor. a leader;
 pl. **gweilch**.
gwalch-lan a band of heroes?
 233, 23. MA. 150a, 40; 161 B 20.
Gwalchmei n. pr. m. 173, 31.
gwal-par strong-spearred. 233, 24.

gwalstawd m. an interpreter.
 MA. 128a, 42. Cf. Rhys, Celt.
 Heathendom, p. 489.
gwallaw to serve liquor. 235, 1.
 Anc. Laws, I. 32. § viii.
gwalt the hair of the head.
 1. **gwan** to pierce; pret. ind. act.
 sg. 3 **gwant**, § 133 a; past. ind. pass.
gwanwyd, § 134, (f).
 2. **gwan** (**gwann**) feeble, weak.
gwanar a chief, lord. 233, 24.
 MA. 181 a 40; 203 b 19; 220 a 34;
 221 a 45; b 37.
gwanas a clasp, buckle. 239, 18.
 FB. 250, 21. 18, 19; 23, 16; 59, 14;
 MA. 144 b 26; 177 a 19; 205 b 4; 269 a
 29; 299 b 46; 48.
gwanhāu to weaken. 178, 6.
gwanwyn m. spring. 155, 27.
gwaradwyð m. disgrace, shame,
 reproach. 150, 12.
gwaradwyðus disgraceful. 180, 29.
gwarafun to forbid, refuse. 168, 25.
gwarandaw to listen, hear.
gwarawd, see **gwa-red**.
gwar-chadw to guard, protect;
 g. ar to besiege. 146, 18.
gwarachae to besiege; m. a siege.
gwar-der humanity, pity. 153, 33.
gware to play; m. a game, play;
 pl. **gvary-eu**. Cf. **chware**.
gware n. pr. m.
gwa-red to succour, help, rescue;
 help, deliverance. pret. ind. act.
 sg. 3 **gwarawd**.
gwar-eð meekness. 238, 2. RB. II.
 1223.
gwarth disgrace, shame. 233, 23.
gwarthaf upper part, surface.
 ar w. on the top of 241, 20.
gwartheg kine, cattle.
Gwarthegyd n. pr. m. 204, 9.
gvary-yð m. a juggler. 147, 13.
 Hg. II. 10, 15.
gwas m. a youth, lad, servant; pl.
 gweis.
Gwasgwin Gascony. 160, 4.
gwassanaeth service, attendance.
gwassanaethu to serve.
gwassanaethwr m. a servant.
gwa-sgaru (tr. and intr.) to disperse,
 scatter. past part. **gwasgaredig**.
gwa-sgawd shelter, protection.
 148, 28; 156, 2.
gwasgu to press, crush.
gwastad level, even, constant,
 temperate; yn w. constantly.

gwastadawl *constant.* 169, 4. v.l.
(sic leg.)

gwawr *dawn.* 173, 15. metaph.
234, 8.

gwayw (gwaew) *m. and f. a lance, spear; pl. gwewyr.* 175, 2.

gwām, gwāost, see **gwybod**.

gwei prep., conj. *after.* § 174. 210

gweō f. *form, fashion.* pa (py) *weō*
how?

gweōi f. *a prayer.* 161, 28.

gweōiaw *to pray.* 215, 1.

gweōu *to befit, to submit.* 144, 6.
148, 11. 165, 5.

gweōus *fitting, meet, seemly.*

Gweōw n. pr. m. 201, 8.

gweōw *deserted, desolate, lonely.*
225, 9.

gwehenid, see **gwahanu**.

gweich, see **gwalch**.

gwein f. *a sheath, scabbard.*

gweir-glawd f. *a meadow; pl.*
-glōyeu.

gweis, see **gwas**.

1. **gweith** m. *work, task.* yg g.
at work. 226, 5.

2. **gweith** f. *a turn, time; dyō-g. once; weithon (weithyon) this time, now; pl. -eu sometimes. -eu . . . -eu*
ereill now . . . again. 187, 18.

gweith-red m. *an action, deed; pan del ar weithred cum ad actum accedit* 167, 21. RB. II 84⁶.

gwele *to see, provide, arrange.*

gweledigaeth f. *a vision, dream.*

gweli f. *a wound; pl. -eu, -oē.*

gweli m. *a bed.* 241, 11.

gwell *better;* 204, 26. **cyfarch**
g. to greet.

gwellāu *to improve, amend.* 214, 12.

gwelleu *shears, scissors.* 203, 25.

gwellig *leg, gwellung?* *to distribute?* 235, 2. FB. 45, 15. MA. 172b15; 181 b 39 v.l. 140 b 12.

gwellt (gwell) *grass.* 223, 12. Cf. Peredur, ed. K. Meyer, § 80, 16.

gwen *a smile.* 225, 22.

gwen-gan *white and fair.* 227, 26.

Gwen-hwyfar (Ir. Find-abair) n.
pr. f. 172, 20.

gwenith m. *wheat.* 196, 3.

gwenn, see **gwynn**.

Gwenn f. *the name of Arthur's shield.*

gwen-wlad f. *a happy land.* 234, 8.
=Heaven, MA. 173 b 24; 177 a 42; 189 b 20; 222 b 38.

gwenwyn m. *poison.* 202, 4.

Gwenwynwyn n. pr. m. 233, 24.

gwer, see **gor**.

gwerin-dawd f. *virginity.* 238, 3.
LA. 17, 4; 65, 21.

gwern (coll.) *alder-trees.* G. Abwy n. l.

gwers f. *a while, space of time.*
197, 29. 194, 6. pob eil-w. *alternately, in succession.* **gwers** . . . g.
arall 175, 29.

gwersyll a *camp; pl. -eu.*

gwerth m. *price, reward.*

gwerth-fawr *valuable.* comp.
gwerthfawrogach 169, 1.

gweryd f. *a virgin.* 161, 5; pl. -on.

gwesteri m. *a guest.* 193, 9.

gwewyr, see **gwayw**.

gwiōn f. *a witch.*

gwin m. *wine.*

gwir (1) *true, truly.* g.-aberth
150, 17. g. *gwell truly better.* 226, 3.
(2) *justice, right.* 223, 27.

gwirawd *a beverage, drink; pl.*
gwirodeu. 164, 2. 235, 1.

gwisg f. *dress, clothing; pl. -oēd.*

gwisgaw *to put on, wear; part.*
gwisgedig dressed, clad.

gwlad f. *a kingdom, country; pl.*
-oēd. gwledi; g. present the present world. G. yr Haf n. l. 202, 29.

gwledig m. *a ruler.*

gwledychu *to rule, reign.*

gwleō f. *a feast, banquet.* 238, 1.

Gwndy n. l. 223, 10.

gwnel, see **gwneuthur**.

gwneuthur *to make, do, form.* § 142.

gwnn, see **gwybod**.

gwor-saf *support, bulwark.* 236, 9.

gworsseō, see **gorseō**.

gwosparth *support* 233, 23. Cf.
gosparth Brython MA. 124 b 38.

gwr m. *a man, husband, vassal;*
y **gwr** *he who* 239, 10; (applied to God) 203, 17. pl. **gwyr** *men, soldiers*
179, 11.

gwyrach f. *a hay, witch.*

gwyrageō, see **gwreig**.

gwrawl *manly, brave, stout; pl.*
gwrolyon. 139, 3.

Gwrolyon n. pr. m. 206, 3.

gwr-da m. *a noble.* pl. **gwyrda** ;
gwynda *seint holy men;* MA. 142a.

gwrō *strong, vehement.* 233, 1.
235, 13; 'g. **fleid** *a fierce wolf* 233, 3.

gwreig f. *a woman, wife;* pl.
gwraged.

gwreigawl *womanish, cowardly* ;
 pl. **gwreigolyon**. 186, 17.
Gwr-gi (Ir. Fer-chū) n. pr. m.
Gwr-gwst (Ir. Fer-gus) n. pr. m.
gwrhāu *to pay homage*.
gwr-hyd *manliness, valour, bravery, strength*.
Gwrhyr n. pr. m.
gwreith *to dress, mend, temper; a dressing* ; 195, 10. Cf. Hg. 38, 37.
 pl. **-yeu**.
gwirth (wrth) voc. (1) prep. *against, towards, for, for the purpose of* ; *wrth* **hynny** *because of that, therefore* ; *y-wrth* *from, of; in comparison with*. §§ 53, 194. (2) conj. *because*. § 231.
gwirth-dir *borderland*. 207, 12.
gwirth-eb *to answer, reply*.
gwirth-gasseō *rebellion, dissension*. 174, 4. Hg. 276, 2. LA. 15, 26; CM. 110, 28.
gwirth-od *to give back, reject, renounce* 165, 7. pres. ind. act. sg. 3
gwirthyd 154, 14.
gwirthwm *very heavy*. 149, 28. 172, 26.
gwirthyn *resistance, opposition*. 233, 23.
gwirth-wyneb *opposite, adverse* ;
yg g. y mynyd *facing the mountain* ;
talu yn y g. *to pay in return*. 142, 23.
gwirth-wynebu (y) *to oppose, resist*.
gwirthyd, see **gwirth-od**.
gwrych (coll.) *bristles*. G. Ereint n. pr. m. 203, 19.
gwryms *strife, hostility*. 197, 31. FB. 63, 25; 85, 12; 159, 5; 193, 6; 199, 20; 200, 9.
gwrysg (coll.) *the smaller branches of a tree*. 225, 11.
Gwy the Wye. Aber G. 206, 17.
Gwyar n. pr. m. 173, 31.
gwybod *to know, recognize; knowledge, courtesy*. § 143.
gwybyōiad m. *an eye-witness* ;
 pl. **gwybyōyeid**.
gwychyr *stout, resolute, bold* ;
superb. **gwychraf**. 183, 13; 191, 4; 192, 10.
Gwydre n. pr. m. 204, 19.
 1. **gwyd** m. (coll.) *wood, trees* 241, 13. 21. *mast of a ship* 242, 8.
 2. **gwyd** *presence* ; **yny vyd, hyny vyd** *lo! behold! thereupon* ; 193, 1; 198, 13. 199, 27. **yn eu g.** *at once* 202, 24.

gwyδad, gwyδyad, see **gwybod**.
gwyδ-bwyll *some game like chess* ; 164, 24; 167, 3. See RB. 153, 5.
Gwyδel *an Irishman* ; pl. **Gwyδyl**.
gwyf-fa f. *festival, watch, ward* ; pl. **-eu**.
gwyliad m. *a guardian*.
gwyllt *wild* ; *aeth yg g. he became mad*. RB. 100, 6, 8. **Cyledyr W.**
gwyneb (wyneb) *face*. 209, 23. 216, 27.
Gwyneδ *Venedotia, North Wales*. 161, 22.
gwynn m., **gwenn** f. *white, blessed* ; pl. **-ion**. **gwyn y fyd** *happy he!* 170, 18. **Gwynn** n. pr. m. 200, 25. **Avon Wenn** 173, 23.
gwyn-seid *having a white haft*. 194, 15. Cf. Laws I. 586, 726. II. 866, evii.
gwynnyeith *pain, torture*. 231, 32. FB. 185, 5. FB. 303, 3; MA. 193 a 13.
gwynt m. *wind, favourable wind*.
gwyr, see **gwybod**.
Gwyr n. l. *Gower*. 205, 24.
gwyrd *green, fresh, vigorous*. 236, 25.
gwyrhāu *to incline, bend*. 241, 13. FB. 241, 8.
 1. **gwys** f. *a summons, command*.
 2. **gwys**, see **gwybod**.
 3. **gwys a sow**. 205, 17.
gwyssyaw *to summon*. 198, 24.
gwystylm. *a hostage* ; pl. **gwystlon**.
gwystyn m. *a withered stump*. 197, 4.
Gwythyr n. pr. m. *Victor*.
gynn, see **cyn**.
gynt, see **cynt**.
gyr, see 2. **geir**.
gyrru *to send, despatch, drive, hasten* 199, 6; **ry-ryrru** (reherru) 213, 4.
gyt, see **cyt**.
 1. **ha**, see 2. **ac**.
 2. **ha** interj. § 243.
hac, see 2. **ac**.
haeōu *to deserve, claim, merit*.
hael *generous, liberal* ; pl. **-on**.
haelder m. *generosity*. 145, 17.
hael-foneō *one of noble descent*. 234, 21.
haf *summer*. **Gwlad yr H.** 202, 29.
haf-δyδ *a summer's day*. 242, 6.
hafod *a summer dwelling*. 225, 9. Cf. RB. II. 277, 5.
Hafren f. *the Severn*.
hagen *however, yet, indeed*.

han-bwyllaw to consider, remember 190, 27. RB. 120; 173¹⁵.
hanfod, see hanfod.
han-denu to have leisure, linger. 190, 27 v. l.
han-fod to arise, issue; proceed from, descend. § 160.
hanner (hanher) m. a half, middle. 140, 20. 179, 20. h. dyð midday; h. nos midnight; h. gwr a coward 170, 24. 180, 32.
harð fair, beautiful, comely.
hawdit, see haf-ðyð.
hawð easy, pleasant; compar. **haws**.
 1. **hawl** f. a claim.
 2. **hawl**, see **holy**.
hawlwr m. a claimant.
haws, see **hawð**.
hayach wellnigh, almost. 167, 6. 192, 15.
hayachen almost. 207, 23.
hayarn iron, sword. 160, 4.
 1. **heb**, **hebry** says. § 151.
 2. **heb** (voc.) prep. without, besides. §§ 16 (i); 53; 175.
hebrwng to conduct, escort.
hebry, see 1. **heb**.
heðiw to-day.
heðwch peace.
heðychu to make peace, pacify.
hefyd also, in addition.
hegarwch m. kindness. 226, 3.
heibaw adv. past, by. 156, 14. 204, 3.
heint m. a sickness, disease. 149, 28.
hela to hunt, chase.
helw possession; **ar y h.** in his possession. 152, 11; 204, 25.
helym f. a helmet. 159, 22.
hen old; an old man. superl. **hynaf**.
hen-dad m. an ancestor; pl. -eu.
heneint (henein) old age. 139, 9.
 1. **heno**, see **enw**.
 2. **heno** to-night.
heww, see **enw**.
herw a plundering, pillaging. 235, 15. Cp. Gwynfyd herwr ywr hirnos MA. 361 a¹⁷.
herwyð according to, by; **yn h.** according to; **yn h. y nerth** with all his might. h. fal 165, 2.
hestawr, a corn measure of about two bushels. 199, 17.
heul f. and m. the sun.
heussawr m. a herdsman. 195, 3. FB. 174, 1.

hi she, her. Emphatic **hihi**, conjunct. **hitheu**. § 45.
hin weather. 209, 22.
hir long, tall; drwy h. o amser for a long time 141, 5. Compar. **hwy**. **Hir** n. pr. m. 206, 1.
hir-flawð a long tumult. 235, 15.
Hir-las n. pr. m. 178, 16. 184, 10.
hitheu, see **hi**.
hob : **dan eu hwb ac eu h.** pushing and kicking them. 207, 22.
hoedel lifetime, life. 152, 18.
hoff-der m. a boasting. 174, 34. LA. 143, 22.
holy (holi) to claim, ask, search, demand; imper. sg. 2 **hawl**.
holl, see **oll**.
hollawl whole, entire; **yn h.** completely, altogether.
holtti to split, cleave.
honni to proclaim. 159, 25.
honna, see **hwnnnw**.
Howel (Hywel) n. pr. m.
Humyr the Humber. 145, 11.
Huandaw n. pr. m. 204, 23.
 1. **hun** sleep. 172, 26.
 2. **hun**, pl. **hunein** self. § 60.
hwb, see **hob**.
hwch m. and f. a pig. 203, 11.
hwnn m., **honn** f., **hyunn** n. this. pl. **hynn**. §§ 61; 62.
hwnt yonder; h. ac yman (yma) here and there. 185, 25.
hwnnnw m., **honna** f., **hyunny** n. that. pl. **hyunny**. §§ 61, 62.
 1. **hwy** (wy), **hwynt** they, them. Emphatic (h)wyntwy, conjunct. (h)wynteu. § 45.
 2. **hwy**, see **hir**.
hwyl f. a sail; pl. -eu.
hwylaw to sail. 157, 28.
hwynt, see 1. **hwy**.
hwyred slowness, tardiness. 151, 19.
hy bold. 239, 19.
 1. **hyd** f. length; prep. as far as, up to, § 177; conj. as long as, as far as, § 214; h. na so that not § 214; until almost 154, 13; h. pan until, so that § 225; h. tra while. § 230. ba h. whither?
hy-dwi well-grown, tall. 158, 18.
hyð a stag; pl. -od. 241, 12.
Hy-gwyð n. pr. m. 202, 19.
hynaf, see **hen**.
hynefið m. an elder. 210, 3.
hyunn, see **hwnnnw**.
hyunny, see **hwnnnw**.

hynt f. *a course, path, journey.*
ar h. *immediately.* 174, 16. 175, 6.
hyntyd, see 2. **gwyd**.

1. i (voc.) prep., see 1. **y**.
2. i, see mi.
3. i, see yδ.
iach *sound, whole.* 200, 16.
iachau *to heal.*
iad *the upper part of the head.* 230, 32.
iaen *ice, a sheet of ice.* 241, 12.
iarll (jarll) m. *an earl;* pl. ieirrl.
iawn (yaun, jaun) (1) *right, just;*
ymlaδ yn i. *to fight in reality.* superl.
-haf, -af 198, 30. 31. (2) *a recompense, satisfaction.* 166, 15. 18.
iawnder m. *right.*
iðaw, iði, see 1. **y**.
læw a *Jew;* pl. -on.
iechid *health, salvation.* 158, 21.
ieith f. *language;* pl. -oeδ, -eu.
lesu *Jesus.*
ieuanc *young;* superl. jeuaf.
ieuencnid *early manhood;* *youth.*
Ieuau n. pr. m. *John.* 231, 26.
in, see yn. ima, ina, see yma, yna.
inheu, inneu, see mi.
ir-lloñed m. and f. *wrath.* 159, 20.
is *below, beneath.* §§ 53, 178.
Iscawyn n. pr. m. 204, 20.
Islont *Iceland.*
issod *below.* 199, 5.
Iwerðon f. *Ireland.* 155, 28.

llad (Ir. laith) *liquor, drink.* Sie leg. 230, 31? Cf. FB. 201, 22; 23.
lladrad *robbery.* 222, 17.
llaδ *to strike, slay, cut, cut off, kill.* impf. ind. pl. 3 lleδynt; impf. pass. lleδid; pret. pass. llas. p. part. lladegid. § 134(a).
Llaesgenym n. pr. m. 204, 25.
llaessäu *to relax, abate, moderate.*
llafur m. *labour, exertion, toil, effort.*
llafur yaw *to labour, endeavour, attempt.* 140, 13. 159, 15. 166, 21. 180, 32. 186, 9.
llafur yus (llafurus) *laborious.* 191, 27.
llafyn *a blade;* pl. llafneu, llafnawr. y llall *the other;* pl. y lleill. § 70.
Llamrei *the name of Arthur's mare.* 201, 20.
llann *an enclosure, land.* 223, 5;
Ll. daf n. l. *Llandaff.*

llanw (1) *to fill.* 175, 7. (2) *tide.* 198, 7. 209, 4. 216, 11.
llary *generous, gracious, gentle.* 233, 31. MA. 249 b 48; 247 a 48; 241 b 42.
llas, see llad.
llathru *to glitter, glisten.*
llaw f. *a hand;* pl. dwy-law.
cymhell y l. *to force to surrender;* 152, 23; rag ll. *at hand, imminent.*
llawch *protection.* 233, 6. MA. 192 b 8; 247 b 6.
llawen *glad, gay, merry.* ll. yw genyf gaudeo 170, 13.
llawer *many, much.*
llawhethan 227, 28 = llywethan¹ MA. 73 a 18 v.l. *one of the constellations.* Cf. Barddas I., 404.
llaw-hir *long-handed.*
llawn *full.*
llawr m. *the ground; the earth;* 239, 19. 234, 10. 239, 9. yr ll. *to the ground; y lawr down.*
lle m. *place;* pl. -oeδ. *where* 225, 13. yn lle *instead of, for* 180, 2; yn y lle *immediately;* yssid le iðaw gwynaw *he has reason to lament; pa le where?* with subjunctive clause, *where.* 225, 13.
llechu *to lurk, hide.* 177, 22.
lleid m. *breadth.* 154, 7.
Lledewig, see Llywedig.
lleid-lwm *half-bare, half-naked.*
Gwrgwst Ll. n. pr. m. 200, 28.
llefaru *to speak.* 229, 31.
llef m. *voice, sound.*
llefein *to shout, cry;* m. *a shouting.* 139, 22. 202, 16. 220, 4.
lleng *a legion.*
Llengrys n. l. *Lengriae.* 179, 6.
llei *less, inferior.* 162, 1.
lleidyr m. *a thief;* pl. lladron.
1. lleill, see llall.
2. lleill: y ll. *one of two.* 194, 17. § 71.
lleis *voice.* 153, 4.
lleissawn *generous, liberal.* 235, 11. MA. 154b ll; 159b 8.
lleith *death.* 232, 2. 233, 7.
llemenig *striding, bounding.*
Cadwr Ll. n. pr. m. 161, 23.
llenwi *to fill.* 206, 22.
Lles n. pr. m. *Lucius.* 157, 31.
llesg *feeble, faint.* 191, 20.
llesged f. *feebleness, sloth, cowardice.* 166, 30; 167, 5. 9. 180, 23.
lletty m. *a lodging;* pl. -eu. 195, 9.

¹ A popular etymology for Leviathan.

lletty-wr m. *a host.* 195, 9.
 Lleu n. pr. m.
 lleuer f. and m. *light*; pl. -eu.
 llew m. *a lion.* 186, 30. 235, 11.
 llewenyð *joy.*
 llwychu *to shine.* llwychi 232, 7.
 leg. llewychei? MA. 243 b 9.
 lleyg m. *a lay-man*; pl. -yon.
 lliaws m. *a multitude, host.*
 llirid, see llygru.
 llid m. *anger, indignation.*
 llidyaw *to become angry.*
 llin, see 1. llyn.
 llinad (lin-had) coll. m. *linseed*,
 sg. llin-hedyn. 199, 18. 20.
 llithraw *to slip, glide along, pass
 by.* ll. *at to flock to.* 145, 23.
 llithrei 203, 20 leg. llathreiglistened;
 cf. RB. 2, 2.
 1. lliw (llyw) m. *colour, hue.* 164, 13.
 241, 16. 2. lliw, see 1. llyw.
 llor-ruð (lit. *red-handed*) *a slayer
 of men.* 233, 10.
 llong f. *ship*; pl. -eu.
 lloneid *fill, the full of anything.*
 llorsg *arson.* 223, 1.
 llorsgi *to burn, set on fire.*
 llu m. *a host, army*; pl. -oeð.
 lluched *lightning.* 227, 25. pl.
 llucheid. 185, 27.
 Lluð n. pr. m. 198, 18. See Rhŷs,
 Celt. Heath. p. 125.
 lluðed *fatigue.* 207, 9.
 lluðyas *to hinder.* 208, 21.
 lluest *a camp*; pl. -eu.
 Llundein *London.*
 llunyaethu *to arrange, dispose,
 array.* 146, 5. 165, 19. 182, 14.
 llunyeithaw *to arrange, put in
 order.* 178, 2.
 lluoss-og-rwyð *a multitude.* 141, 28.
 llurug f. *a coat of mail.* 150, 25.
 llu-yð m. *a hosting, military ex-
 pedition.* 222, 14; 223, 32.
 llw m. *an oath.* 221, 4.
 llwch *a lake.* 229, 5. 241, 8. **Ll.**
Tawy 205, 25.
 llwdyn m. *the young of animals*;
 pl. llydyn. 203, 4.
 llwfyrr m. *a coward.* 242, 9.
 llwgryr *harm, damage, disad-
 vantage.* 218, 25.
 llwm *bare, poor.* 226, 4. 241, 1.
 242, 8.
 llwrw (Ir. lorg *track*): yn ll. *as
 regards?* 198, 17. *loco, vice,* Davies.
 llwyd *grey.*

llwyðawg n. pr. m. 205, 6.
 llwyðeu n. pr. m. 202, 25.
 llwyn (lluhyn) m. *a wood, grove,
 bush*; pl. -eu.
 llwyð *complete; yn ll. wholly, com-
 pletely.*
 llwyð m. *a tribe, people.* 227, 27.
 Llychlyn *Norway.* 157, 9;
 Llychlyn-wr m. *a Norseman.*
 157, 11.
 Llychwr n. l. *Loughor.* 205, 5.
 llydan *broad, extensive.*
 Llydaw *Armorica, Brittany.*
 Llydewig *Armorican, Breton.*
 Glythmyr **Ll.** 201, 12.
 llydw *a host, household, com-
 munity.* 223, 10; 13. See MA. 308 b 28,
 249 a 14, 343 a 51.
 llyfyr m. *a book.*
 llyfyr-der m. *cowardice.* 233, 7.
 llygad m. *an eye.* taraw l. *in the
 twinkling of an eye, immediately.*
 Llygad-ruð n. pr. m. *Red-eye.*
 206, 2.
 llygru *to corrupt, mar, spoil,
 violate.* 167, 4. 189, 3. 195, 13; *to
 become foul* 241, 3.
 llyngcu *to swallow.*
 llyngches f. *a fleet.* 145, 9.
 llym *keen, sharp.* 241, 1.
 llyma *lo here!* 169, 17 (en). § 244.
 llyna *lo there!* 169, 16 (en). § 244.
 1. llynn (lin) f. *a lake, pool*; pl.
 llynneu. **Ll.** Lliwan 206, 17 = Linn
 Liuan, Nennius ed. Mommsen,
 p. 214.
 2. llynn *a drink.* 193, 15.
 llynnwyn m. *a pool.* 225, 1. Leg.
 Wall. 480 b 4.
 Llyr n. pr. m. 139, 1. 206, 19.
 llys f. *a court, palace*; pl. llyssoeð.
 llyssu *to reject.* 218, 7.
 llythyr m. *an epistle, letter*; pl. -eu.
 1. llyw (lliw) m. *a leader.* 235, 11.
 236, 23.
 2. llyw, see 1. lliw.
 Llywelyn n. pr. m.
 llywodraeth f. *management.*
 llywodryr m. *a leader, commander*;
 pl. llywodron.
 llywyaw (llywaw) *to rule, direct.*

ma, see mae.
 mab m. *a son*; pl. meib, meibon.
 Mabon n. pr. m. 195, 24. See
 Rhŷs, Celt. Heath., p. 21.

mach m. *a surety, guarantor*; pl. meicheu, *meychyeu*. 210, 20; 21; 217, 14; 221, 25.
 Madawg n. pr. m. 204, 29.
 mæðeu *to forgive; forgiveness*. 231, 4
 mæðeueint *forgiveness, remission*. 150, 20.
 mae (may) *is*; pl. maent. *what is?* 219, 7. §§ 152. 154 (a).
 mæðu *to beat, strike, pound*. 159, 24. 183, 23.
 maen m. *stone*; pl. mein; m. freuan *quern-stone*. m.-dy m. *a stone house*. 198, 15.
 maer (mair) m. *a steward, reeve*; pl. meirri. 202, 7. 219, 9.
 maerony f. *stewardship*. 221, 18.
 maes (mays) m. *an open field, open court, battlefield*; roði cad ar f. *to give battle*; cawssant y m. *they won the day*.
 maestawd *majesty*; maes m. *field of judgment*. 229, 13. MA. 165 a 22; 171 b 51; 195 a 9.
 magu *to rear, bring up, to produce, engender, conceive*. pres. ind. sg. 3
 meccis 242, 9. FB. 244, 21. MA. 363 a 21; 33.
 magwyr f. *a wall*. 198, 12.
 mal (fal) conj. *as*; when. § 216.
 malpei (malhei) *as if*. y m. 195, 11.
 man f. *mother*.
 man *fine, small, insignificant*. 184, 18; 196, 10.
 manach m. *a monk*; pl. meneich.
 manachlawg f. *a monastery, convent*; 188, 22. m. gwrageð 190, 15.
 pl. -logoeð 165, 4.
 Manawyðan n. pr. m. 206, 19.
 march m. *a horse*; coll. *horsemen*. 202, 30. pl. meirch, meirych. 143, 15. 162, 20. ar feirych *on horseback* 174, 18.
 marchawg m. *a knight*; pl. marchogyon.
 marchogaeth *horsemanship, riding*.
 1. marw *dead*; pl. meirw.
 2. marw *to die*. 145, 1. 149, 9.
 marwawr (pl.) *cinders*. 228, 6.
 marwolyaeth (marwolaeth) f. *death*. 145, 7.
 mawl, see moli.
 mawr *great, big*; compar. mwy; super. mwyhaf, mwyaf.
 mawr-fuð *great gain or advantage*; 233, 11.
 Maxen n. pr. m. *Maximus*.

meccis, see magu.
 með *mead*.
 með-gell f. *a mead-cellars, cellar*. 164, 2. 204, 27
 með-gorn m. *a mead-horn*; pl. -girn 235, 1.
 með-gwyn *a mead-banquet*. 235, 1.
 236, 13.
 meðu *to possess*. 181, 5.
 meðwl m. *thought, purpose, mind*.
 meðyant m. *possession, power, authority*.
 meðylyaw *to think, consider, meditate*.
 mefyl f. and m. *disgrace, shame, insult*. 225, 10.
 meglyd (yn) *to grip, grasp, cling to*. 176, 14; 202, 20. FB. 51, 12; 141, 29; 183, 24; 247, 7.
 megys conj. *as, like, as it were*. § 217: m. na *as if not*; with subj. so that 145, 23. 180, 3.
 mehyn *place, country?* 229, 2. FB. 123, 28; 133, 25; 169, 1; 190, 29; 202, 8; 210, 10.
 Mei May. 208, 5.
 meicheu, see mach.
 mein, see maen.
 meint f. *size, number, quantity, length; such*. pa f. *how much*.
 Meir Mary (*the Virgin*).
 meirw, see marw.
 melyn *yellow*.
 melys *sweet*. 170, 18.
 Melit n. pr. m. 201, 11.
 menegi *to make known, declare*.
 meneich, see manach.
 Menw n. pr. m. 201, 28.
 merch f. *a daughter*; pl. -ed.
 Merchyrr: dyw M. *on Wednesday*. 240, 10.
 meredig *irrational, foolish*. 193, 5. RB. 115, 18. Laws I, 260.
 merthyr m. *a martyr*. 161, 4.
 messur m. *a measure, impression*. 202, 26.
 measuredig *measured, according to measure*. 199, 19.
 meu *mine*; § 55.
 Meugant n. pr. m.
 Meuruc n. pr. m. *Mauricius*.
 meycheu, see mach.
 mi (fi, fy, i) I, me. *Emphatic mifí*, conjunctive minheu, inneu. § 45.
 1. mil f. *a thousand*; pl. -yoed.
 2. mil m. *an animal*; coll. 204, 5.
 pl. -eid.

mil-wr m. *a warrior.*
 milwryaeth f. *prowess, warfare.*
 164, 15; 175, 25; 177, 8; 185, 30.
 mill-dir f. *a mile.*
 minheu, minneu, see mi.
 mis m. *a month.*
 moch (coll.) *swine.*
 moð m. *manner.* 191, 30.
 modrwy f. *a ring;* pl. -eu.
 moes *custom.* 193, 7. RB. II. 300, 1.
 molawd *praise.* 237, 4.
 moli *to praise, commend.* pres.
 ind. sg. 3 mawl. 233, 11.
 moylant *praise, fame.* 146, 2. 4
 (*probitas*); 156, 21; 181, 19; 185, 17.
 1. mor (voc.) with adjectives, *how,*
so, as.
 2. mor m. *sea;* pl. -oeð.
 morðwyd m. *a thigh.* 205, 23.
 Morgannwg *Glamorgan.*
 mor-gerwyn f. *a maelstrom, whirl-*
pool. 154, 13.
 mor-gymlawð *the raging of the sea.*
 235, 13. MA, 173a³¹; 193b⁷; 254a⁴⁴;
 266a²⁹.
 mor-grug (lit. *anthill*), *ants;* sg.
 -yn m. 199, 20.
 Moruð n. pr. m.
 morwyn f. *a maiden;* pl. morynyon.
 mud *dumb, mute.*
 mul m. *a mule;* pl. -yoð.
 muner m. *a lord, king.*
 mur m. *a wall, rampart;* pl. -oeð.
 y Mureif *Murray.* 152, 28.
 murmur *a growling.* 172, 27.
 mwg m. *smoke.* 199, 23.
 mwy, mwyhaf, see mawr.
 mwyalch f. *a blackbird.* 196, 17. 20.
 mwyhäu *to increase, augment.*
 mwyñhäu (muenhau) *to use, employ,*
enjoy, profit. 199, 33; 216, 4; 217, 26;
 218, 1.
 Myg-ðwnn *smoke-dun, or for*
Myng-ðwn dusky-maned, the name of
of a horse. 201, 8. Gwynn m. 206, 15.
 myhun *I myself.* § 57.
 myn (in oaths) *by.* 203, 1. 206, 7.
 mynaches m. *a nun;* pl. mynach-
 esseu.
 myned *to go;* m. *dros to break*
through, penetrate; § 140.
 mynnu (mennu) *to desire, wish,*
seek, endeavour.
 mynwent f. *a graveyard,* 188, 17.
 LA. 84, 8.
 mynwgyll *neck.* 176, 14.
 mynch *frequent.*

mynched m. *frequency.* y m.
 hwnnw *so often.* 191, 1. v. l.
 mynyð m. *a mountain;* pl. -eð.
 y fynyð *upward, up.*
 Mynyw *Menevia, St. David's.*
 mysg *midst.*
 y mywn (mewn) *within, in;* o f.
inside, within. § 181.
 1. na (spir.), before vowels nad not.
 § 236.
 2. na (voc.), before vowels nag not.
 § 237.
 3. na (spir.), before vowels nac nor.
 § 238. na . . . na *either . . . or* 168, 2.
 naccáu *to refuse.*
 nachaf lo, *behold!* 187, 21. (voc.)
 153, 16. 189, 3. 193, 2.
 1. nad (nat), see 1. na.
 2. nad is not (dependent). § 155 (e).
 Nadolig *Christmas.* 154, 23.
 Naf m. *the Lord.* 235, 16. 236, 28.
 1. nag a *refusal.* 202, 10. 16.
 2. nag, see 2. 3. na.
 nam, see 1. 3. na.
 namyn, namwyn conj. *except;*
 after a negative, *but.* § 219.
 nant *a valley;* pl. nanheu 229, 32.
 1. nar = na + def. art.
 2. nar = ra + ry. 184, 1. § 95 N.
 naw (nas.) *nine.*
 nawð m. *protection, sanctuary.*
 nawfed *ninth.* 208, 5.
 neb *any;* *any one, someone.* y
 neb a who. § 64.
 nef m. *heaven;* pl. -oeð.
 neges f. *a business, affair, quest.*
 nei m. *a nephew;* pl. nyeint.
 neill *one (of two);* ar neill-du on
 one side. § 69; 71
 neill-du-edig *apart, aside.*
 neirthyad m. *a strengthener, stay.*
 227, 2; FB. 241, 21; MA. 193b, 1.
 neithawr *a wedding feast;* pl.
 neithoreu, -yeu 189, 9.
 ner m. *a lord.* 233, 5.
 nerth m. and f. *support, help,*
strength, power; pl. -oeð.
 nerth-fawr *mighty.* 233, 5.
 1. nes prep. *until.* § 182.
 2. nes, nessaf, see agos.
 nessäu *to draw near.* 147, 16.
 nessed *nearness.* yr n. *however*
near. 154, 20.
 Nethawg n. pr. m.
 1. neu (voc.) *or, nor.* § 220.
 2. neu *now,* before vowels neud;
 with ry, neur. § 221.

GLOSSARY.

newidyaw *to exchange (blows).*
 186, 8; 191, 24. tra newitywn an
 deheueoð *quando dextras conferemus.*
 170, 19.
 newyð *new. o n. anew, again,
 recently.* 178, 28. 179, 4. 195, 15 v. l.
 newyn m. *hunger.* 149, 5; 186, 30.
 ni (ny) *we, us.* Emphatic nini, con-
 junct. ninheu, ninneu. §§ 45 (a).
 nifer m. *a number, host, retinue;*
 pl. -oed.
 no (spir.), nog, with def. art. nor,
 conj. than. § 222.
 nodi *to mark, notify, specify.*
 199, 18. pluperf. pass. sg. 3 ry
 nodyðoð. 205, 10.
 noði *to protect, preserve;* pres.
 subj. sg. 3 noðho (nodho) 193, 8.
 noe, see no.
 noeth *naked, bare, unprotected,
 unarmed;* pl. -on.
 noethi *to bare, to unsheathe.*
 Normanyeid *Normans.*
 nos f. *night.*
 nottäu *to mark, specify.* 201, 24.
 Nuð n. pr. m. 200, 25.
 Nywython n. pr. m.
 1. ny (spir.) before vowels nyd, not.
 § 235.
 2. ny, see ni.
 1. nyd, see 1. ny.
 2. nyd is not. § 155 (ð).
 nyeint, see nei.
 Nyfer *the river Nevern.* 204, 12.
 nym, nys, see 1. ny.
 1. nyth m. *a nest;* pl. -od. 154, 3.
 2. nyth, see 1. ny.
 nyw, see § 49 (c). 233, 2. 8. 12.
 1. o (a) (voc.) *prep. of, from, with,
 for;* with passive verb, *by.* o gyfreith
 according to law 211, 17. § 183. with
 def. art. or (ar).
 2. o (spir.), before vowels od, or, os
 conj. if; neg. ony, onyd; with the
 pres. of copula os, neg. onyd. § 224.
 obry *below.*
 1. oc *prep. = 1. o before pronouns
 beginning with a vowel.* § 183.
 2. oc ? 230, 16.
 och ah! alas! o. fiak me! 142, 21.
 odi *to snow.* 241 passim.
 odid *scarcely, hardly, rarely.*
 226, 6. 232, 11; 13.
 odolgyyssant, see adolwyn.
 oðieithyr *outside* 158, 26; 164, 19;
 o. hynny *besides.* 161, 34, 162, 21.
 oðyma *hence.*

oðyna *thence, from that time.*
 oðyno *from there.*
 oðy-rwng *from between.* 196, 19.
 oðy-uchtaw *above it.*
 oe, see 1. o. oeð, oeðynt, see bod.
 oed (oyd) m. *age; appointed time,
 respite, delay.* 208, 20.
 oer *cold; dire, cruel, deadly.*
 o-grynedig *fearfully trembling.*
 152, 16.
 1. oes f. *life, lifetime, age, genera-
 tion;* pl. oessoed.
 2. oes (oys) *there is.* §§ 152, 154 β.
 oestru ? 230, 33.
 ofn-awg *timorous.* 184, 21.
 ofyn m. *fear.* 148, 22. 187, 31.
 ofyhäu *to fear.* 142, 4. 167, 26.
 offeren *mass;* pl. -eu. 162, 29.
 ohan, ohon-, see §§ 53, 183.
 oia *interjection.* § 243.
 ol *track; yn ol after, behind.* a oed
 yn ol or dyð *what remained of the day.*
 olyf-wyð (oliwyð) m. *coll. olive-
 wood.* 165, 21.
 oll, holl, all. § 67.
 onaðunt *of them.* § 53.
 oni, onyt, see ny.
 or, see 1. 2. o.
 Orc, Orch *the Orkneys.* 156, 12.
 162, 11.
 organ f. *a musical instrument,
 organ.* 163, 6. 15.
 orig (dimin. of awr) *a short hour.*
 230, 13.
 os, see 2. o.
 osid *if there is.* 213, 22, 28. §§ 152, 154
 osp m. *a stranger, guest.* 193, 7.
 ottid, see odi.
 Owein n. pr. m.
 pa, ba (voc.) *what?* § 80.
 pab m. *a pope.* pl. -eu 220, 8.
 Pabo n. pr. m.
 pader f. *the Paternoster.* 215, 4. 5.
 pagan *a pagan, heathen;* pl. -yeid.
 paladyr m. *a spear-shaft.* 194, 23.
 pallu *to fail.* 180, 11.
 pan (pann) (1) *whence,* § 225.
 (2) (voc.) *when,* § 226. (3) *that;* pan
 yw 155a (β); hyd pan *until, so that.*
 yr pan *since.* 170, 5.
 parabyl m. *a speech.* 170, 4.
 paradwys f. *Paradise.* 238, 4.
 parattöi *to prepare.* 148, 7.
 parawd *prepared, ready, easy.*
 144, 3. 158, 24. 30.
 parchell m. *a young pig.* 203, 10.

pared m. *a wall, partition.* 196, 20.
 parhāu *to remain, continue.* 180, 15.
 parth m. and f. *part, direction;* 149, 2. 201, 5. *p. act towards.* 139, 9.
 Parth *Parthia.* 172, 6.
 parth-gleð *left-hand side;* sic leg. 229, 29. MA. 274a 25.
 pawb *everyone, everybody.*
 pebyll m. *a tent; pl. -eu.*
 pebyllaw *to pitch a tent or tents, encamp.* 173, 24.
 pechawd m. *sin; pl. pechodeu.*
 pedeir, see pedwar.
 pedr-ongyl *square.* 154, 7. RB. II. 12, 31.
 pedwar m. *pedeir f. four.*
 pedwyrýð m. *pedwareð f. fourth.*
 peýð *infantry.*
 peýdganta *a troop of infantry.* 171, 5.
 Pedyr *Peter.* 228, 19.
 pei *if he were.* 200, 16. conj. *if.* § 227.
 peidaw (*peidyaw*) (ac) *to cease (from).* 140, 4. 179, 3. 190, 21; p. o 167, 3 v. l.; p. yn 178, 24. RB. II. 253, 10.
 peir m. *a cauldron.* 202, 7. 14.
 peiss-awg *coated.* Hir P. n. pr. m. 206, 1.
 pell *far, distant; ym p. far off;* o b. *from afar. comp. bellach further.* 193, 16 v. l.
 pellenhig *a stranger.* 193, 7.
 penn *a head, top, point, end; mouth.* 225, 12. pl. -eu. am b. *against* 146, 26. uch b. *over, above; ym p. at the end.* Penn n. pr. m.
 pennaf (*penhaf*) *foremost, chief.*
 Penn-beið *chief of boars.* 201, 16.
 penn-cawr *chief giant.*
 Penn-dragon *chief leader.*
 penn-flestin *a helmet.* 150, 25; 159, 17. RB. II. 55, 19; 155, 7; 162, 14.
 penn-saer m. *a chief craftsman.* 204, 27.
 penn-swyðwr m. *a chief steward.* 160, 13.
 penn-trullyad m. *a chief butler.* 160, 12.
 penyd *penance.* 150, 20. 238, 8.
 Peredur n. pr. m.
 perfeð *middle, centre.* 176, 26. 183, 3. 29. 210, 10.
 perffeith *perfect.* 237, 12.
 peri *to cause, make, create.* 190, 19. 234, 10.
 perigyl m. and f. *a danger; pl. perigleu.* 151, 30. 153, 30.
 perthcled, see parth-gleð.
 1. perthyn (at) *to belong (to).* 155, 21.
 2. perthyn *appropriate, pertinent.* 234, 18. 235, 8. MA. 191a, 26; 228a, 26.
 peryf m. *the Creator.* 234, 9. MA. 228a 18.
 petrus m. *a doubt.* 150, 4 v. l. 167, 4.
 petrussaw *to doubt.* 169, 7.
 petrusder *hesitation, doubt.* 147, 28. 150, 4.
 peth *a thing, something, somewhat.*
 peth, beth = pa beth *what?* §§ 74. 79. 203, 11.
 peunyð adv. *daily, everyday.*
 beunyð 239, 10.
 peunyð-yawl *daily.* 190, 9.
 phellas: *ara phellas* 239, 17. "which I have set apart," Skene, FB. I., 289; Pughe s.v. *gwanias* has: *a ryfullias* "which I have prepared."
 pieu *whose is?* 193, 5. 6. *to whom it belongs,* 16, 7. §§ 83, 161.
 pigo *to peck at.* 197, 23.
 pump, see pump.
 plant (coll.) *children.*
 pleid f. *a side, party; o b. on the side of.*
 plith: o blith *from among;* trwy blith *through the midst of;* ym plith *among.*
 plwyw *people.* 227, 12. LA. 106, 19; 22. RB. II. 270, 24.
 pob *each, every; bob un, bob deu in ones and twos; pob eilwers alternately;* § 43. pobmynnig *any place.* 223, 8.
 pobly f. *people; pl. pobloð.*
 poen f. *pain; pl. -eu.* 142, 13.
 poened *pain, torment.* 230, 21.
 pony, before vowels and with pres. of cop. *ponyd*, interrog. part. = Lat. *nonne?* § 240.
 1. porth m. *a gate, gateway;* pl. pirth. 193, 11. 194, 3. 234, 12.
 2. porth f. *help, assistance, support.* 175, 6. 176, 18. 196, 8. 208, 20. 25.
 3. porth *a port, harbour.* P. Cerðin n. l.
 porthawr m. *a doorkeeper.* 193, 12. 17. 234, 12.
 porth-fa f. *a port.* 172, 21.
 post *a post, pillar.* Pabo p.
 Prydein 162, 3.
 pren m. *a tree, cross.* 230, 17.

GLOSSARY.

Presseleu n.l. 204, 6.
 pressennawl *pertaining to this world.* 198, 20. LA. 130, 31; 142, 4.
 present *present.* gwlad p. *this world,* 230, 5; 232, 10. MA. 272a, 16; 281, 36.
 priawd *own.* 181, 18.
 prif-gerð *a panegyric.* 235, 5.
 prif-glod *loud praise, eulogy.* 235, 6.
 priodas f. *marriage.* 141, 2.
 priodawr m. *a proprietor, land-owner.* 212, 24. 27; 213, 8; 220, 28, 31.
 priodol-der m. *proprietary right.* 212, 28; 213, 1. 20. RB. II. 341, 21.
 processio (procesiwn) *procession.*
 profi *to try, test, tempt.* 139, 11. 237, 17. p. part. profedig 146, 1; 164, 15; 206, 13.
 1. pryd *aspect, beauty.* 140, 22; 155, 25.
 2. pryd m. *time; pa bryd when?* p. *pan when* 229, 25. p. *na since not.* § 228.
 prudu *to sing, compose poetry.* 235, 5.
 pryder *care, anxiety;* pl. -eu.
 pryderus *anxious.* 190, 29.
 Prydein f. *Brittany.*
 Pryd-wenn f. (*fair-shaped*) *the name of Arthur's ship.* 199, 6; 202, 12.
 prynu *to buy, redeem.* 238, 14.
 Pumlumon n.l. Plimlimon. 199, 22.
 pump (nas.) *five.*
 pur *pure, perfect.* 238, 5.
 pur-ðu *jet black.* 225, 21.
 pur-flawd *pure, perfect happiness.* 237, 13. MA. 315 b¹⁴.
 pur-wynn m. -wenn f. *pure-white.*
 pwll m. *a pit, hole.* 200, 6.
 pwy *who?* *which?* 139, 11. 194, 14.
 who; p. bynhac *whoever.* § 81.
 pwys *a weight, burden.* 238, 6.
 pwystyr *why?* 193, 14.
 py (voc.) *what?* § 185; *pyr why?* § 229. py diw (O.W.) *to whom.* 146, 1. § 80 n. 4.
 pyd m. *a pitfall, snare.* 177, 25. MA. 231 b⁴; RB. II. 76, 10.
 pylu *to make blunt.* 159, 17. RB. II. 106, 31; 56, 33; 71, 19; 161, 1.
 pym, see pump.
 pymhed *fifth.*
 pymtheg (nos.) *fifteen.*
 -pynhag *-soever.* § 81.
 pyr, see py.

pysg m. *a fish;* pl. -awd. 154, 8. 198, 26. 241, 11.
 pythew-nos *a fortnight.* 209, 6. 216, 13. 16.

racco (racko) *yonder.* § 63.
 rad f. *grace, favour, blessing.* 140, 5. 12. 145, 18.
 raff *a rope;* pl. -eu. 147, 4.
 rag prep. *before, for, from.* §§ 52, 186. yn r. 195. 28. p. yr. *wherefore?* 193, 13 v. l. r. wyneb *following, next.*
 rag-ðywedud *to foretell.* 176, 15. p. part. ragðywededig *aforsaid.* 173, 3.
 rag-fedylyaw *to consider, provide.* 167, 18. 20; 169, 4.
 rag-flaenu *to excel.* 164, 8. RB. II. 293, 29; 350, 11. r. y fforð iter prae-cedere. 179, 7.
 ragod (rachod) *to waylay; an am-bush.* 147, 1; 177, 16; 206, 12; 223, 6.
 rag-weled *to forsee, provide.* 167, 20. 169, 4. part. weledig 169, 2 v.l.
 rag-ynys f. *an adjacent island.* 202, 28.
 ranc: r. boð *content, satisfaction.* 195, 12.
 ranghei, see rengi.
 rann f. *a division, part, portion, share.* ran 228, 7. pl. -ed. 227, 6. rannu to divide. 141, 5. 179, 14.
 reded (rydec) *to run, race, pass by.*
 redyn fern. Redyn-fre n. l. (*Fern-hill*) 196, 29.
 Reged f., n. l. 152, 29. 155, 16.
 reges *ebb-tide; adversity.* 228, 11. CZ. V, p. 566.
 rengi boð *to satisfy, please.* pres. ind. sg. 3 reinc 194, 18; past subj. sg. 3 ranghei 195, 11. RB. II. 329, 18. MA. 321b, 31.
 rei (rey) *some, few.* y rei *those, such;* pob rei *both sides* § 66; rei . . rei (ereill) *some . . some* § 75.
 reid (wrth) *need (of), necessity, trouble.*
 reið (reit) *a shaft, antler.* 197, 1. MA. 148 b⁵⁸.
 Reiðown n. pr. m. 204, 17.
 reinc, see rengi.
 Rein n. pr. m. Regin.
 reolawdyr *regular.* 161, 8. RB. II. 171, 16; CM. 14, 15.
 restru *to range.* 204, 11.
 rew *frost, ice.* 241, 20.
 rewi *to freeze.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 rewhið 241, 3. 19. § 129.

rewinyaw to cause to perish, destroy, ruin. 3 sg. pret. ind. act. **rewinywys** 229, 22. cp. MA. 140a, 33; FB. 146, 6.
rid, see **ryd**.
riein-gadeir f. a queen's throne. 189, 8.
rieni pl. ancestors. 168, 13; 170, 12. 22.
rif number. 171, 16.
ringhyll (ringyll) m. an apparitor, a beadle. 210, 12, 18; 214, 21.
riheð ? 228, 30. FB. 11, 10; 174, 2.
rihyð splendour, splendid? 227, 4. MA. 195a, 12; 229, 21; FB. 6, 24; 8, 5; 110, 12; 112, 3; 211, 15; 212, 17; 305, 7.
rin a secret. 225, 7.
rith form, guise.
rithaw to shape, create, transform. 196, 27; 197, 7.
riw a slope. 242, 4.
ro prep. between. § 53.
rod f. a wheel. **gellwng** **cleðyf** ar y r. to brandish a sword in circile. 202, 21. MA. 286a, 35. L. Glyn Cothi 92, 10.
roð m. and f. a gift; pl. -yon.
rofi, see **ro**.
roði (roy, rohi) to give, put, place, grant, surrender.
 Ron the name of Arthur's lance.
ruð red, ruddy. 228, 15.
Ruð-fyw n. pr. m. 205, 31.
Rufein f. Rome. 181, 4.
Rufeinawl Roman.
 Run n. pr. m.
ruthur (rythur) f. a rush, onset. 151, 21. 24. 176, 12. 24. 178, 21. 182, 6, 8.
Ruthyn n. l.
rwng (yrwng) prep. between. §§ 53, 187.
rwyoð easy, free, prosperous, favourable; 172, 24. ar r. in prosperity; glew-r. 235, 11.
rwysf m. a ruler, leader. 236, 23. 25.
rwygaw to rend, break. 198, 27.
r. (y) mor to plough the sea 149, 16. 172, 25.
rwymaw to bind, gird. 150, 29. 188, 5. p. part. **rwymedig** bound, attached. 162, 25. 158, 6.
rwysg sway. 227, 4. 235, 13.
ry verbal particle. §§ 95, 96, 97.
ry- intensive prefix, very, too.
ry-fawr 241, 19. **ry-hir** 162, 8.
rych a furrow. 226, 5.

ryd a ford. 241, 3. **R. Ychen** Oxford 161, 34.
rydec, see **redeg**.
ryð free. 198, 29. 237, 24.
ryðaw, see **ro**.
ryðhau to free, liberate.
ryðidf. freedom, franchise, privilege. 186, 23. 221, 19.
rydynt, see **ro**.
ry-fēð a wonder; wonderful. 162, 23. compar. -ach, 154, 5.
ryfeðu to wonder. 149, 23. 154, 4.
ryfel m. war. 167, 25.
ry-gosswy, **ry-gossys?** 231, 31.
Rymhi n. l.
rynaud awhile. 142, 1.
ryodres magnificence, pomp. 156, 21. 161, 2.
ryrys? 231, 30.
Rys n. pr. m. 205, 31. 235, 17.
rysswr m. a warrior, champion. 199, 26; 29; 204, 16; 206, 18. CM. 1, 25; 2, 3.
rythur, see **ruthur**.
ryw m. kind, sort; such; 167, 7. 174, 33. 186, 2. **neb ryw any.** 140, 10.
Sadwrn : duw **S.** on Saturday. 228, 21.
saer m. a craftsman, wright.
Saesneg f. the English language.
Saeson, see **Seys**.
saeth an arrow; pl. -eu. 176, 23.
saethu to shoot with arrows. 164, 24.
safant, see **sefyll**.
safedig (p. part. of **sefyll**) established, fixed, valid. 218, 11.
Salsbri n. l. *Salisbury*.
salwen vain, needless. 201, 29.
Samsun n. pr. m. *Samson*.
sant m. a saint; pl. **seint**. 202, 32.
sarff a serpent; pl. **seirff**.
saerhað f. an insult, affront; pl. -eu. 166, 1. 223, 21.
sawdl a heel; pl. **sodleu**. 159, 24. 183, 23.
sawl a many, multitude; **y s.** those. § 77.
sef that is, this is. § 47.
sefir, see **sefyll**.
sefyll (trans. and intrans.) to stand, to stop, stand fast, fix. pres. ind. sg. 3 **seif**, pass. **sefir**, pl. 1 **safwn**, pl. 3 **safant** (**sauahant**), pret. sg. 3 **sefawð** **segur** disengaged, idle. 241, 18.
seguryd m. ease. 167, 7. 180, 13.
seif, see **sefyll**.

GLOSSARY.

seilaw to found, establish; remain? perf. sg. 3 *ry seilas.* 232, 3.
sein a sound. 183, 8.
seint, see **sant.**
seith seven. s.-lydyn seven young ones. 203, 4, 15.
Seith Pedyr Saint Peter. 228, 19. Cf. Rhŷs, Lect. p. 371.
seneð f. a senate. 166, 4, 15.
seneðwr m. a senator. 172, 11.
ser, see **syrr.**
serch love.
Seys m. a Saxon, Englishman; pl. **Saeson.** 146, 12.
Sibli f. the *Sibyl.* 169, 17.
sodlau, see **sawdl.**
son f. a sound, noise. 183, 22.
sorri to be angry, frown. 141, 19, 142, 32. pres. ind. sg. 3 **syrr.** 226, 2.
sugnaw to suck. imperf. ind. sg. 3 **sucknei** 154, 19.
Sul-gwyn m. *Whitsunday.* 160, 19.
swlit m. money, treasure. 149, 12, 202, 24.
swyð an office. 202, 19.
syberw stately, noble. 143, 15.
syberwyd pride, arrogance. 180, 17.
syched m. thirst. 170, 15.
syllu to gaze, look. 154, 1; 199, 26.
sy mudaw to change. 143, 14.
syr (coll.) stars. 161, 11. 197, 23. 227, 29.
syrr, see **sorri.**
syrhaw to fall. 159, 10. pret. pl. 3 **syrhassant** 185, 21; 187, 25.
tad m. a father; pl. -eu; hen-dad an ancestor.
tafaw ? 230, 19 sqq.
tafawd a tongue; pl. **tafodeu.**
tafawd-leferyð spoken word, verbal evidence. 139, 22; 220, 4.
tangnefeð peace. 201, 2.
tangnefeðu to make peace, pacify, appease.
tangnefeðus peaceful. 144, 16.
1. **tal** m. forehead. 159, 16.
2. **tal** payment, value. tu a thal an equivalent? 221, 12.
talawr, pl. of **tal?** 228, 13.
Taliessin n. pr. m.
talnu to pay, give in return, requite, give, forfeit; reckon. 209, 12.
talym m. a while, period. ar **dalym** for a time 146, 2.
1. **tan**, **dan** (voc.) prep. under; deni under her. § 188.
2. **tan** m. fire.

tanawl fiery. 173, 4.
tannu to stretch. t. **pebyleu** *tentoria* *figere.* 173, 17 v. l.
taplas f. tables, backgammon. 164, 25; 167, 4.
taraw to strike. t. **lygad** in the twinkling of an eye. 203, 32.
tarðu to flee, run away, start, pres, ind. sg. 3 **terðið**; pres subj. sg. 3 **tardho** 228, 13; 14. FB. 93, 18; 94, 27; 104, 29; 125, 6; 151, 5; 163, 16; 198, 21.
tarren f. a plot of uncultivated land. 196, 3.
1. **taryan** f. a shield; pl. -eu.
2. **taryan** thunder. 227, 25; 229, 7. FB. 171 22; M.A. 287 b 11.
taryanawg m. a shield-bearer; pl. -ogion. 234, 15. 236, 7.
taryf, leg. **toryf?** 233, 17. 236, 7.
tawl, see **toli.**
tebig similar, like. 239, 11.
tebygu to deem, think, suppose.
teccāu to adorn, decorate.
tecced beauty. 140, 26.
teg fair, pleasant.
tegwch m. beauty. 140, 22. 155, 25.
Teilaw n. pr. m.
teilwng (y) worthy of, meet, fit for, deserving, acceptable. 150, 17.
teilyng-dawd f. dignity. 155, 22. 164, 7.
teir-gweith three times.
Teir-gwaeð "Three-shouter" n. pr. m. 201, 28.
teir-nossig three nights old.
teithywawg moving, in motion. 229, 8. mal ton teithiawc llwyfenyd FB. 192, 26.
Teithyon n. pr. m. 204, 29.
telediw handsome, fair. 140, 29.
telediw fairness. 140, 27 v. l.
telyn a harp. 147, 12.
telynawr a harper. 147, 15.
temyl (temhyl) f. a temple; pl. **temlen.** 144, 10, 12; 152, 27.
Temys the *Thames.* 189, 27.
terfyn m. an end, limit, boundary, term; pl. -eu, -heu. 166, 16, 20.
terfynu to end, finish. 168, 27. 183, 24; p. part. **terfynedig** appointed. 171, 28.
terfysg m. trouble, conflict, uproar. 141, 18; 167, 29; 225, 12; 233, 20.
terfysgu to disturb. 141, 12.
tes heat, hot weather, sunshine. 241, 16.

1. *teu thine.* § 55.
 2. *teu silent?* 231, 2.
teu-lu *a household, retainers, community;* pl. *-oeð.*
tew *thick, dense.* 151, 22; 241, 21.
tewhāu *to thicken, to close up the ranks.* 151, 26; 176, 24; 187, 24.
teyrn (*teérn, teérn*) *a king, ruler;* pl. *teerneð;* *t.-fab* m. *a king's son;* *t.-walch* m. *a royal hawk, hero;* *t.-wialen* f. *a sceptre.*
teyrnas m. and f. *a kingdom;* 144, 9. 162, 31. pl. *-ssoeð.*
teyrn-ged f. *tribute.* 166, 6.
ti (*di*) *thou, thee; emphat.* *tydi,* conjunct. *titheu.* § 45 (a)
tino *a valley, vale.* 240, 1. FB. 157, 7; 210, 8.
tir m. *land;* pl. *-eð.*
tir-diwallawdr *a husbandman;* pl. *-odron.* 149, 20.
tireð, see *tir* and *twr.*
titheu, see *ti.*
tlws m. *a jewel;* pl. *tlysseu.*
toði *to melt.* 228, 26.
töi *to cover;* pres. ind. sg. 3 *töið,* *tohið* 241, 5; 242, 1. FB. 157, 4.
toli *to curtail, diminish;* pres. ind. sg. 3 *tawl* 233, 12.
ton f. *a wave.* 229, 6. 241, 5.
tor *belly;* ar *eu t.* *against them.* 181, 14. RB. II. 48, 12; 97, 30; 157, 23.
torrito *to break, violate.* 183, 12. 223, 4.
toryf *multitude, host;* pl. *torfoeð.* 151, 26. 233, 20. 234, 16. 23.
tost *hard, severe.*
Totneis n. l. *Totness.*
 1. *tra* (spir.) prep. *beyond, across, over.* § 189.
 2. *tra* (voc.) conj. *while.* § 230.
tra-chefyn *backwards, back, behind, again.* § 189 N. See *cefyn.*
Trach-myrl n. pr. m. 204, 8.
traeth m. *a shore, coast;* pl. *-eu.*
traethu *to utter, declare.* 168, 29. 170, 7.
trafferth *trouble.* 207, 27. 28.
tragywyð *eternal.* 232, 13.
tragywyðawl *eternal.* 150, 11.
trallawd f. *persecution, trial.* 237, 18.
 LA. 19, 27; 21, 27; 28, 25.
tra-mor *over-sea.* 156, 28.
trannoeth (lit. *over night*) *next day.*
traws *transverse.* ar t. *across.* 149, 3 v. l.
traws-brenneu pl. *lateral branches of a tree.* 149, 3. Cf. *trauskeyg,* *Anc. Laws I.* 290, 3.

trayan (*traean*) m. *a third.* 139, 17; 157, 5; 201, 31.
trebelid *swift, dexterous.* 201, 22.
 RB. II. 56, 27. MA. 279a³⁵
trechaf (superl. of *tren*) *strongest.* 187, 19. § 37 (b).
tref f. *a dwelling-place, home.*
tref-tadawg m. *an inheritor.* 218, 18.
tref-tadawl *inherited.* 146, 8.
trei *ebb.* 209, 4; 216, 11.
treiaw *to ebb.* 154, 14.
treiglaw *to travel;* pres. ind. sg. 3 *treigyl.* 197, 18.
treigyl m. *a course, journey.* 197, 26.
treis f. *violence, rapine, rape.* 200, 28. 222, 17.
tremygu *to despise.* 140, 8. 166, 9.
treth f. *a tribute.* 188, 9.
trethawl *tributary.* 168, 2. 186, 23.
treulaw *to spend, consume, wear.*
tri (spir.) m. *teir* f. *three.*
tri-dieu *three days.* 149, 8. 164, 29. 209, 1.
triganeð *a trumpet blast?* 228, 29.
 A *thriganen* *kyrn a gwerin* *trygar* FB. 211⁷; Cf. 6⁸; MA. 124b⁴⁶.
trigiauw *to dwell, remain.* 162, 22. 240, 10, 13.
trindawd f. *the Trinity.*
trist *sad.* 179, 2.
tristau *to become sad, grieve.* 142, 2.
tristaw *to become sad, grieve.* 141, 21.
tristyd m. *grief.* 147, 6.
Tro *Troy.* 163, 24.
troed m. *a foot;* pl. *traed.* ar *traed on foot.* 174, 18.
troed-noeth *bare-foot;* pl. *-on.* 153, 27.
troed-feð m. *a foot (measure).* 154, 6.
tröi *to turn (tr. and intr.).*
tros, dros (voc.) prep. *across, over;* *myned dros* *to break through;* *eneid dros eneid* *a life for life struggle.* §§ 53; 190.
trossi *to turn, move (tr. and intr.).* 149, 18. 151, 4. 199, 24.
trn *sad, wretched.* 230, 20.
truan *miserable, wretched; a wretch.*
trueni m. *wretchedness, misery.*
tru-gar *merciful.* 225, 19.
trugareð f. *mercy.* 227, 7.
trugarhäu (*wrth*) *to commiserate.*
trugeint (*trugein*) (nas.) *sixty.*
trwch *cut, broken.* 241, 9.
trwm m., *trom* f. *heavy, sad.*
trws 227, 21 = *trwst* *noise?* Cf. *yna byð* *mawrdrwst* MA. 73a.

trwssyad (**trwssad**) m. *one who arranges, or disposes.* 234, 7; 235, 28.
 Cf. **trwssyaw**, **trwssa**, Hg. I., 214, 37.
trwy (**drwy**) (voc.) prep. *through.*
 § 191. *drwy y hun in his sleep.* 172, 27.
trwyed *to visit, pass, sojourn.*
 237, 18. FB. 59, 12. MA. 844a, 21.
try-chan (nas.) *three hundred.*
trychu *to cut down.* 149, 1.
trydyð m. *tredeð f. third, one of three; ar y d. with two others.* 142, 9.
 § 165.
try-fer *a trident.* 197, 33. MA.
 317b, 13.
trym-der m. *gravity, seriousness.*
 166, 14.
try-wyr *three men.* 174, 7. 193, 3.
tu m. *side, region, part; or tu yn eu* *hol from behind them; tu ac towards; pa du where?* 198, 32.
tud *people, country.* 231, 9.
twng, see **tyngu**.
twll *perforated, pierced.* 205, 23.
twr m. *a tower; pl. tyreu.* 156, 32; 166, 25, 27. *tireð* 181, 6.
twrch m. *a boar.*
twrwf m. *a host, multitude.* 234, 15.
twyll m. and f. *deception, treachery.*
 178, 9.
twyllwr m. *a traitor.*
twynpath m. *a mound.* 199, 14.
 1. *ty*, see **ti**.
 2. *ty* m. *a house; pl. tei.*
tybygu, see **tebygu**.
tybyaw *to suspect.* 177, 27.
tyfu *to grow.*
tynghedfen f. *fate, fortune; pl. -nneu.* 142, 10.
tyngu *to swear, take an oath.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3. *twng* 220, 27. 233, 4.
tyllu *to pierce, make a breach.* 183, 15.
tyllweð (*tellweð*) f. *stillness.* 211, 2.
tynnu *to pull, drag, draw, retreat;*
 147, 18. 162, 25. 228, 9. *t. pebylleu*
to pitch tents. 173, 17.
tyreu, see **twr**.
tyrned, see **teyrn-ged**.
tyst a *witness; pl. -on, -ion.*
tywyð a *tempest, storm.* 228, 25.
tywyll *darkness.* 229, 33.
tywyssawg m. *a leader, prince, chief; pl. -ogion.*
tywyssogaeth *leadership, dominion.*

uch (voc.) prep. *above; uch ben above, over.* § 193.

uched *height.* 197, 24.
uchel *high, tall, loud.* 150, 32; 186, 16; 234, 3.
ucher *evening.* 196, 23. 197, 24.
uchod adv. *above.* 187, 22; 198, 8.
uð (**uut, wut**) m. *a lord, king, the Lord.* 235, 16; 236, 28.
uðunt *to them, see 1. y.*
ufuð-häu *to obey.* 150, 23. 189, 22.
ufull-dawd *humility, lowness.* 237, 22.
uffern *hell.*
ugeint (**ugein**) m. *twenty.* deg ar hu. *thirty.*
Ugnach n. pr. m.
Ui-Cessar *Julius Caesar.*
un *one; same.* 163, 29. 221, 13.
any. 164, 14. § 164 (4).
un-ben m. *a chieftain.*
un-fam *having the same mother.* 202, 18.
un-ryw *of the same kind, similar.*
un-tu: ar u. *at a stretch.* 156, 17.
 RB. II. 308, 33.
urðas m. *a rank, order, dignity;* pl. *urðasseu*, *urðassoeð.*
urðasseið *dignified.* 161, 6.
urðaw *to ordain.*
urðawl *ordained.*
Uryen n. pr. m. *Urbigenus.*
Uthur n. pr. m.
weithon, weithyon, see **gweith.**
wrth, see **gwrth.**
wut, see **uð.**
wy (**hwy**) *they, them; emphat.*
wyntwy, *conjunget.* **wynteu.**
wybyr *sky, heaven.* 159, 25. See 1. *can.*
wyf, see **bod.**
wyneb *face; rac w. following,* next. 151, 9. 153, 6. 155, 27. **w. yn w.** *face to face.* 216, 27.
wyth *eight.*
whe, see **chwech.**
whedleu, see **chwedy.**
whioryð, see **chwaer.**
 1. **y** (voc.) prep. (1) *to, (2) from, of.*
 § 195.
 2. **y** def. art., see 1. **yr.**
 3. **y** verb. particle, see **yð.**
 4. **y** (voc.) *his, (spir.) her, their.* § 57.
y-am (voc.) (1) *from off; (2) including.* § 164.
y-ar (1) *from; (2) upon.* § 165.
 1. **ych** m. *an ox; pl. -en.*
 2. **ych** *your.* §§ 57, 58.

ychydig *some, a little, a few.*
y-dan (voc.) *prep. under.* § 188.
ydyw, *ydyw*, see **bod**.
yō verb. particle, before consonants
y. § 91.
yfed to drink. 202, 14.
yfelly, see *felly*.
y-gan (voc.) *prep. from.* § 167.
yng a strait, difficulty, distress.
150, 29.
ynghyd (ac) together (with).
yll (ill, ell) before numerals, all.
§ 67.
1. **ym**, see **yn**.
2. **ym**, see **bod**.
yma *here, hither.*
ym-adaw (ac) *to part with, leave,*
desert; past subj. pl. 3 **ymedewynt**.
ym-adrawð m. *to speak; speech,*
discourse; pl. **ymadroðyon**. 142, 10.
ym-aðassu (ac) *to adapt oneself. y.*
ar ðayar to meaure one's length on
the ground. 174, 26.
ym-afael (yn) *to take hold of,*
grasp. 202, 17. 206, 21. 207, 17. 19.
yman *here.* *hwnt ac y. nunc hac*
nunc illac 185, 25.
ym-ar ðisgwyl *to watch.* 199, 27.
ym-ar ðyrchafel *to exalt oneself.*
157, 4.
ym-baratōi *to prepare oneself.*
171, 19.
ym-ben-tyr(r)-yaw *to rush together.*
176, 17; 186, 10; Hg. II. 163, 1.
ym-choelud (-chaelud) *to return,*
turn. 189, 11. 206, 12. 229, 27. 29.
y. ar *to turn upon, set upon.* 174, 29.
207, 20. *y. y arfeu yn y Gwyðyl to*
attack the Irishmen. pret. ind. sg. 3
ymhoeles. 160, 17.
ym-da, see *ym-deith*.
ymdan (voc.) *prep. about.* § 164.
ym-daraw (ac) *to contend (with).*
201, 29.
ym-deith *to go about, to go, go away.*
141, 14. pres. ind. sg. 3 **ym-da** 199, 4.
ym-dynnu (o) *to retreat (from).*
174, 17.
ym-ðianc *to escape.* 154, 18. 197, 30.
ym-ðisan *to converse.* 147, 9.
203, 18.
ym-ðifad (o) *bereft (of); pl. -ðifeid.*
176, 28.
ym-ðifedi *destitution.* 145, 14.
ym-ðiffyn, see *am-ðiffyn*.
ym-ðired *to trust.* **y. y** 225, 4.
y. yn 151, 7. 158, 20.
ym-ðwyn *to carry about,* 202, 20.

ym-ðywedyd *to discuss, argue.*
211, 16.
ymeith (o) *out (of), away (from).*
174, 8.
ym-eneinaw *to anoint oneself.*
207, 9.
ym-erbynyeid *to encounter, combat.*
186, 6.
ym-flust m. *a conflict, struggle,*
187, 20; RB. II. 84, 24; 90, 31;
162, 10.
ym-gaffel (ac) *to get hold of,*
engage in battle. 185, 19. 186, 2.
ym-garu *to caress one another.*
147, 19. 148, 12.
ym-geffelybu (ac) *to imitate.* 156, 25.
Hg. II. 89, 14; 102, 2; LA. 44, 8;
RB. II. 80, 12.
ym-geis (ac) *to seek.* 202, 31.
ym-gelu (rag) *to hide (from).*
146, 27.
ym-golli (ac) *to lose sight (of).*
205, 1.
ym-gribyaw (ac) *to wrangle (with).*
207, 25.
ym-gyf-ar-fod *to encounter.* 146, 14.
169, 15. 170, 14. 174, 6.
ym-gyffelybu (ac) *to compare one-*
self, vie (with). 156, 25.
ym-gynghor (ac) *to consult.* 148, 1.
ym-gym-mysgu *to engage each*
other. 183, 20. Hg. I. 55, 26; 282, 19.
RB. II. 28, 12.
ym-gynhal *to resist.* 151, 17. 192, 8,
ym-gynull *to gather together.*
148, 25.
ym-gynullaw *to flock together.*
145, 1. 152, 20. 173, 20. 192, 7.
ym-gyrchu *to attack.* 173, 2.
ym-gyweiraw (o) *to equip oneself*
(with). 172, 16.
ymhoeles, see *ym-choelud*.
ym-lad m. *to fight; a fight;* pl. **-eu**.
ym-lid *to pursue.* 148, 24. 188, 2.
fut. sg. 1 **ymlidya** 206, 9.
ym-lynu *to follow, pursue.* 152,
7. 22. 191, 1.
ym-o-glyd (rag) *to guard against.*
176, 3; RB. II. 46, 34; Hg. I. 28, 5.
ym-orðiwas (ac) *to overtake, come*
up with, touch. 174, 20. 28. 202, 4.
204, 3. 28. 207, 3.
ym-rithaw *to transform oneself.*
201, 33.
ym-roði *to give oneself up, surrender,*
devote oneself. 145, 22. 149, 5.
150, 12. 156, 6. pres. ind. sg. 3
ymryð 150, 17.

ym-ryðhāu (o) to free oneself (from). 147, 22.

ym-tynnu, see ym-dynnu.

ym-wasgu (ac) to rejoin. 174, 34; LA. 100, 6; Hg. II. 272, 29.

ym-welod to see one another; y. ac to visit. 147, 20. 203, 32. 205, 12.

ym-wneuthur to effect mutually. 164, 16 v. l.

ym-yrru (gyt ac) to concern oneself (with), help. 200, 20. RB. II. 19, 8; CM. 77, 17.

ym-ysgydyaw to shake oneself. 202, 4.

1. **yn** (nas.) prep. *in, into, upon.* 173, 5. § 196.
2. **yn** (voc.) forming adverbs and with predicative noun and adjective. § 16 (d).

3. **yn (an) our.** § 57.

yna then, there, thither.

ynad (O.W. egnat) m. a judge. 209, 24; pl. *yneid.* 210, 5.

ynfyd foolish. 231, 33.

ynni vigour. 174, 19. 27. 186, 1.

yno there, thither.

ynt, see bod. *ynteu*, see ef.

yny (hynny) conj. until. § 234.

For *yny vyð* see 2. *gwyð.*

ynyal desert, wild. 228, 7.

ynys f. an island; pl. ynyssed.

Ynys Daned Thanet.

Ypolit Hippolytus.

1. **yr**, before consonants **y** (voc. before fem.) def. art. *the.*
2. **yr** prep. *for the sake of; for since.* §§ 53; 197. **yr na** *since not, though not.* § 234. **yr hynny nevertheless; yr pan since; pyr (py yr) why?** 193, 13.

yrof, see ro.

y-ryngtunt, see rwng.

1. **ys is.** §§ 152; 155; 159 N2.
2. **ys: ys** pump *mlyned since five years.* **ys gwers** *for some time.* 194, 6.

yr ys pell o amser long ago. 197, 22.

ysgar (ac) to leave, part with. 205, 25.

Ysgawd n. pr. m. 204, 20.

ysgawn *light, slight, easy.* 180, 31. 202, 11.

ysgithyr *a fang, tusk.* 201, 23.

Y.-wynn *white-tusked.* 201, 16.

ysglyfyaw *to snatch.* 202, 2; RB. II. 151, 8; Hg. I. 296, 22.

ysgol *a school.* 161, 10.

ysgolheig m. *a scholar, clerk, priest; pl. -on.* 147, 29. 153, 25. 160, 9.

ysgrifenu *to write.* 164, 6.

ysgrybul (coll.) *cattle.* 199, 4.

ysgwyd *a shield.* 241, 18. 22.

ysgwyð f. *a shoulder.* 174, 31. 198, 10. 241, 18. 22.

ysgymun (ysgymyn) *accursed.* 191, 16.

ysgymun-dawd *villany.* 149, 24.

ysgymunedig *accused; pl. -yon.*

ysgythredig *chased, engraved.* 150, 26. CM. 34, 32; 104, 19.

yslipanu *to burnish, polish.* 194, 5. 12.

yslipanwr m. *a burnisher.* 193, 18.

yspardin f. a spur; pl. -eu.

yspeid f. *a while, a space of time, respite.*

Yspaðaden (Hawthorn) n. pr. m. 199, 18. Cf. Rhŷs, Celt. H., p. 373.

Yspauen *Spain.* yr Y. 182, 23.

yspeil *spoil; pl. -eu* 177, 3.

yspeilaw *to despoil.* 176, 31. 188, 3.

yssid *there is.* 198, 15. 233, 5. pl.

yssydynt. 194, 2. § 154 (a); ib. n. 1.

yssigaw *to shatter.* 147, 4.

yssu *to eat, consume.* 200, 3. 31.

yssyð (yssy) *who, which is.* §§ 152. 154 (β); 155 (κ).

ystandard *a battle standard.* 183, 20.

ystorya *history, story.* 164, 7.

ystrad *a vale, valley.* 205, 32. 242, 1.

ystryw *device, stratagem.* 147, 22.

ystwng *to lower, overcome.* 233, 2.

ystynu *to extend, prolong.* 188, 7.

ystyr *story; meaning, import, reason.* 203, 11. **pwystyr (py y.) why?** 193, 14.

yswein m. *esquire.* 143, 10.

ysym *there is to me, I have.* 233, 1. § 155 B, note 1.

1. **yw**, see *bod.*
2. **yw yew trees.** **Ystrad Yw** 205, 32.
3. **yw**, see 1. **y.**

1. **ywch**, see *bod.*
2. **ywch**, see 1. **y.**

APPENDIX

Additional Variants to "Lear and his Daughters" from MSS. at Peniarth.

P¹, P², P³, P⁴ = MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, 46.

Ch. 1.—l. 2, thrugein mlyned : dev vgeýn P²—l. 3, ef a
adeilvs P²—a thri ugein mlyned y gôledichôys (gôledychôs
P³) ef yn 6ra6l ac yd adeilôys (adeilôs P³) dinas P³ P⁴—
l. 4, leýrcester P².

Ch. 2.—l. 2, yd ada6hei P⁴.

Ch. 3.—l. 4, leueryd *om.* P² P⁴—l. 5, ada6 y rodi hitheu
yr gôr P³.

Ch. 4.—l. 3, y rygaru : yr caru P³—l. 11, nas rodi hi P³—
l. 12, damweinhei P⁴.

Ch. 5.—l. 2, yr Alban: e gogled P²—l. 8, y rodei . . .
genti : y rodeý heb týr na dayar na ssvllt P²—l. 15, kadarn-
hawyt : gônaethpôyt P³.

Ch. 6—l. 12, ellvng er reý ereýll y emdeýth P².

Ch. 8.—l. 5, gellygassei y 6rtha6 P³.

Ch. 9.—l. 1, ydoed P³—l. 3, Or* tyghetven lýtýavc ep ef
pa brýd edav dýd e gallwýf y talu vdvnt wý hýn P². O
chwichwi yr tyghetueneu P³. Oiar teghetuenneu py le, &c.
P⁴—l. 4, pa achos y kyffroassoch uiui yar &c. P³—l. 7,
gytdiodef P³—l. 14, traet P³ P⁴—ib. Owi P³—l. 16, talu yny
gôrthôneb yr gôyr hyny P³ P⁴—l. 21, vy rodyon : vyn da
P³ P⁴—l. 25, yn gam P³.

* Strachan says: "I can't read the second letter except as r."

Ch. 10.—l. 1, aghyfnerth : trueni P³—l. 2, ef a doeth, &c. : dýnessav parth ar dýnas edoed ý ver (*sic*) endav P²—ib., ym Paris: ýg cariz P³ P⁴—l. 4, ar gyuaroed P³—l. 5, namýn vn marchavc ac essweýn P²; namyn ef ae yswein P³ P⁴—l. 7, mynet ae that, &c. : dwýn ý that hýt en dýnas arall ac eno dywedwýt ý vot en glaf P²—l. 16, wedy yr dehol P³.

Ch. 11.—l. 11, a 6naeth : re gwnathoed P²—a wnathoed P³ P⁴—l. 12, anryded Bifrontisiani : anryded ýr devforavl ianus P²—l. 13, delhei P⁴—ib. ac ena ed emkýnvlley holl seýrý a chreffdwýr e dýnas P²—gredýfwyr (*sic*) P³—crefuydýr P⁴.

Index

INDEX

The references are to paragraphs. n.=note.

ā, causing vowel-change 7 (a).

a, rel. part. 82-83; with infixd pron. 49 (b), 50 (a); usage 83 (a); expressing subj. or obj. 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); without antecedent 87 (b).

a, infixing part. 50 (c); 94; 159 n. 2; superseded by *yd* 85 n.

a, interrog. part. 239; lenat. after 18 (g).

a, ac, conj. 198; mutat. after, 21 (d).

a, ac, prep. 162; after adj. 34 (b); mutat. after, 21 (c).

a, prep.=*o* 183.

a, ha, interj. 243.

absolute ending *-sit* 132 n.

accent, 4; 11 n. 1; shifting of 8; vowel variation due to 8; secondary acc. 11 n. 1.

accusative 26; traces of 25; in poetry 26; of relative 51.

ach, prep. 163

achaws, conj. 199.

adjective, 30-39; lenat. of 16; lenat. after positive 16 (c) (a); after compar. 16 n. 4; endings of 27 (c); gender in 30; stems in *-i*, *-o*, *-u*, 30 note; plur. forms 31; attributive 32; predicative 32; number in 33; inflected adj. 34 (a); order in sentence 34 (a); foll. by prep. *o*, *a* 34 (b); concord 35; predicative adj. with *yn* 35; adj. phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of compar. and superl. 38; equative 39; with *mor* 39 n. 2; adv. use 40; poss. adj. 57: poss. adj. with prep. 58 (a), with conj. 58 (a), with *y* 58 (b), anticipating genit. 59 n.

abnabot, paradigm of 144.

adverb 40; lenat. 16 (h); adv. phrases 16 (h); with demons. force 63.

-advry, verbal in 117.

ae, interrog. of copula 155 (a) (η)

ae, interrog. part. 239 (c).

agent, expression of with verb noun, 122

am, prep. 164; lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; *yam* 164.

am (na), conj. 200.

amal, conj. 216.

analogy, in verb. conjugation 7 n. 1; in mutat. 12; 16 n. 7; 39 n. 1; in plural formations 27 (d); in pronouns 45 n. 2; in formation of subjunctive 110 n. 1. answers, 241.

apodosis, imperfect in 107 (d) (β) (γ).

apposition, lenation in 16 n. 4; 17 (b).

ar, prep. 166; lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; *or a*, *ar ny*, 87 (a); *yar*, 165.

arall, use of 68.

arganvot, paradigm of 160.

article, 23; lenat. after 16; fused with conj. or prep. 23; syntax of 24.

as, as (ys) oed 159n. 2.

-at, ending of imperf. ind. 3 sg. 131 (b).

att, prep. 166; lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53.

attributive adj. 32; 33.

awr, yr awr conj. 201.

-awr, -iawr, plur. suff. 28 B. (a).

-awt, plur. suff. 28 B. (b).

behet, prep. 177 n.

bot, lenation after, 16 (g) (β); paradigm of 152; usages of 153; *bydwn*, etc. 107 n. 3; special fut. form 152 n. 2; *bit*, consuetudinal 152 n. 3; *bydaf*, use of 156 (a); *bydwn*, use of 157; *bewn*, 158; past subj. 158; compounds of 160; *boet*, after *kyt* 205 n.

caffael, cael, paradigm of 145.
can, gan, prep., lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun 126 (c); use of 167; *y gan* 167.
can, conj. 202; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).
canvot, paradigm of 160.
canys, copula 155 (a)(a); 202 n.
canys, conj. 202 n.
 cardinals, see numerals.
caru, paradigm of 127.
 case, 25; traces of lost*case-endings 25; syntax of cases 26; expression of case in relative 86.
cer, ger, prep. 168.
 clauses, subjunct. in main clauses 113; in subord. cl. 114; concessive cl. 114 (c); conditional cl. 114 (d); cl. of comparison 114 (e); temporal cl. 114 (f); final cl. 114 (g); relat. cl. 114 (h).
clybot, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.
 collective nouns, 29.
com-, Celt. prep. 39 n. 1.
 command, subjunct. in 113 (b); in indirect speech 113 (b) (β).
 comparison of adj. 37; lenat. after 16 n. 5; no plural 33; construction of compar. 38; foll. by *no* (c) 38 (a); clauses of comparison 114 (e).
 composition, lenation in 16 n. 6.
 concessive clauses, 114 (c).
 concord, of vb. and subject 101; 103; of adj. with noun 32, 33; of adj. after *yn* 35.
 conditional of *bot* 107 n. 3; impf. in conditional sentence 107 (d); plurp. in condit. 109 (b); subj. in condit. cl. 114 (d); impf. condit. 131.
 conjugation of verb 98 sq.; analogy in 7 note 1.
 conjunctions, 198-234; lenation after 16 (l); lenation of init. cons. 16 n. 13; spirant mutat. after 21 (d); with poss. adj. 58 (a).
 consonants, classification of 3; graphic representation of 3 n.; orthog. variation 3 n.; consonantal changes 11; infl. of accent on cons. changes 11 n. 1; mediae>tenues 11 (g)(a); mutation of cons. 12; consonants vowel-flanked 12; table of cons. mutations 13.
 consonantal stems, 27 (d).
 consuetudinal present, 106 (b).
 copula, 155; *yttiw* etc. 154 n. 4; *nat* 155 (a)(e); *nyt* 155 (a)(δ); position of 159; preceding pred. 159 n. 2; with *neu* 221; *os, onyt* ---.
 customary action in past time, 107 (c).
cwt, cw, conj. 203; mutat. aft. 21 n. 1.
cyvarvot, paradigm of 160.
cyvrwng, prep. 169.
cyn-, in equative 39;
cyn, conj. 204; not foll. by *yd* 93.
cyn, prep. 170.
cyt, cyn, conj. 205; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).
cyt ac, prep. 171; *y gyt ac*, conj. 206.
chwech, nas. mutation after 20 (c).

darvot, paradigm of 160.
 dative, traces of 25; expressed by in- fixed pron. 51.
 declension, in Old Celtic 25.
deng, usage of 41 n.
delw, nom. conj. 207.
 denominative vb. 128 (b).
 deponent, 99.
di, O.W. prep. 195; and n.
diam, O.W. prep. 164.
diar, O.W. prep. 165.
dieithyr, prep. 172.
dim, used as pron. 73.
 diphthongs, 1 and n.
 distributives, 43.
diuch, prep. 193.
do, in answers, 242.

dual, 25; 42 (a); lenation of adj. after dual noun, 16 (b) (a); lenat. of genit. after dual 16 (b) (β); traces of dual inflection 25.

duch, 110 n. 2; 138 n.

dy- before infixd pron. 50 f.

dyvot, paradigm of 141.

dylyu, with vb. noun 121.

-e- infixd pron. 48; use of 49 (b).

-edic part. end. 116.

-ed, pl. suffix 28 B (d).

einom etc. 55.

-eint, 3, plur. end. impf. ind. 131.

eissoes, conj. 208.

-eit, *-ieit*, plur. suff. 28 B (e).

eithyr, prep. 172.

eithyr na, conj. 209.

ell, *ill*, *yll*, 67.

emphatic pronoun 45.

endings of verb, 3 sg. of simple vb. 129; 3 sg. conjunct. 129; 3 pl. primary ending 129; see imperat. indicat. subunct. vb. noun.

epenthetic vowel 10.

equative in comparison of adj. 39.

erbyn, prep. 173.

et, in *nocet* etc. 222 and n.

-et, pl. suffix. 28 B (c).

final clauses, 114 (g).

future 105; exp. by pres. tense 106 (e); special future endings 130.

futurity, subj. of 113 (c).

gallu, to express passive with vb. noun 121.

gender, in nouns 25; in adjs. 30; 32; genitive, lenation of noun in gen. 16 (b) (β); traces of gen. case 25; syntax of gen. in prose 26; in poetry 26; gen. of rel. pron. 88.

ger, see *cer*.

gilyð, 72 and n.

gorvot, paradigm of 160.

guar, prep. 165 n. 3.

gwares, 110 n. 2; 138 n.

gwedy, *wedy*, prep. 174; with preverb. *yd* 93 n. 3; with vb. noun=perf. part. 126 (b).

gwedy, conj. 210.

gwelet, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.

gweith, with card. numbers 44.

gwneuthur, with vb. noun 123; paradigm of 142.

gwrth, O.W. prep. 194, see *wrth*.

gwybot, paradigm of 143.

gyt, see *cyt ac*.

h, sign of subjunctive 110; history of *h* in subj. 110 n. 2.

h, in sentence constr. 22; after infix. pron. and possess. *m* 22 (a); after infix. pron. *e* 22 (b); after 3 sg. f. poss. *y* 22 (c); after 1 pl. poss. *an* 22 (d); after *eu* 22 (e); after *ar* bef. *ugeint* 22 (f).

ha, interj. 243.

hagen, conj. 211.

havot, paradigm of 160.

-hau, denom. vb. end. 1 28 (b); spreading as *-a* to other vbs. 137.

-haw, 3 sg. fut. end. 130 (b).

-hawr, ending of fut. pass. 130.

-hawd, *-hawt*, fut. end. 3 sg. 130.

-hawnt, fut. end. 3 pl. 130.

heb, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 175.

heb, verb 151.

hevyt, conj. 213.

herwyd, prep., usage of 176.

herwyd, conj., usage of 213.

historic infinitive, 125.

historic present, 106 (d).

hollre, 67 note.

hun, *hunan*, 60.

hwde, 149.
hwnn, etc. dem. pron. 61; usage of 62; *yr hwnn*, foll. by rel. clause, 62 (c).
hwnt, 63.
hwnnw, hynny, 61; usage 62.
hyt, prep., lenat. after 16 (i); usage 177; *hyt pan* 226 2 (a).
hyt, nominal conj. 214.

i, causing vowel infect. 6; 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 131; in pl. 27 (a); in pron. prep. 52 (b); infection due to lost *i* 7 b.
-i pl. suffix 28 B (f).
-i- stem in adj. 30 n.
-i ending of 3 sg. impf. 131 (a).
ie, ieu, in answers 242 and n.
igridu, 53 n.
ill, ell, yll, 67.
imperat. mood, 115; pass. of 115; negat. of 115; endings of 137; infl. of denom. vbs. in *-hau* spreads to other verbs 137.
imperf. tense, indic. 105; use of 107; in indirect speech 107 (b); of repeated action 107 (c); as sec. fut. or condit. 107 (d); as sec. tense to a fut. 107 (d) (a); in apod. of fut. or condit. clause 107(d)(β); in apod. of past clause 107(d)(γ); with negat. 107 n. 1; use of impf. of *clybot* 107 n. 2; use of impf. of *gwelet* 107 n. 2; endings of impf. 131.
indicative mood, with *ry* 96 A; pres. ind. with *ry* 97 (c) 1; use of 105–109; pres. 106; plupf. 109 (a); influence of ind. upon subjunct. form 110 n. 1; indic. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; plup. ind. replacing past subj. 111 and n.; ind. in consec. cl. 114 n. 4; end. of pres. and fut. 128; end. of plupf. 135; past ind. of *bot* used as subj. 152 n. 7; ind. with conj. *hyt* 214; ind. of consequence with *hyt na* 214 2 (a); ind. with *mal* 216; ind. of consequence with *mal na* 216 3 (a).
indirect speech, impf. in 107 (b); pret. in 108 (b); command in 113 (b) (β).
inflecting vowel, see *a, i*.
inflection of vowel, 6; 7 (b); 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 27 (a); 52 (b).
infinitive, in Welsh 104; usage, 120; historic inf. 125; see verbal noun.
infixed pron. lenat. after 18 (a); forms of 48; use of 49–51; after *yny* 49 (b); after rel. *a* 50 (a); with preverbal *yd* 50 (b); 93 n. 2; after infixing part. *a* 50 (c); after *ry-* 50 (d); 93 n. 3; after *neu* 50 (e); after *dy-* of cpd. vbs. 50 (f); after *na, ny*, 50 (g); after *tra*, 50 (h); expr. accus. of relat. 51; infix. pron. with pass. vb. 102; with non-rel. vb. 102 n.; meaningless 159 n. 2; with *o* 224 n. 5.
inflected adj., position of 34 a.
inflection, noun 25.
interjection, lenat. after 16 (m). forms of 243–4.
interrogative, lenat. after interrog. pron. 18 (c); interrog. part. *a* 18 (g); interrog. pron., forms of 79; *pwy* 79; *peth, beth* 79; *pa, py* 80; and n. 1; *pa, py*, in earlier lit. 80 n. 2; *pathawr, pythawr* 80 n. 2; *pa, py* foll. by prep. 80 n. 3; *padiw, pydiw* 80 n. 4; *pwy bynnac, pa-, py- bynnac* 81; indirect interrogation 114 B (b).
is, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 178.
issem, ysef 47.
-it, imperat. end. 3 sg. 137.
ithr, prep. 179.

lenation, = vocalic mutation 12; table of 13; lenat. of *g*, 13 n. 1; of *d* 13 n. 2; exceptions to rules 15; usage 14–18;

noun and adj. after *yr*, 16 (a); noun or adj. after noun, 16 (b); after dual 16 (b)(a); of noun in genit. 16 (b)(β); after prop. nouns 16 (b)(γ); of vb.-noun in genit. 16 (b)(δ); of noun aft. compar. adj. 16 (c)(a); of adj. repeated 16 (c)(β); after adv. *yn* 16 (d); aft. numerals 16 (e); aft. pron. 16 (f); after vb. 16 (g); after parts of *bot* 16 (g) (β); of adverbs 16 (h); aft. preps. 16 (i); after negat. 16 (k); after *mor*, *neu* 16 (l); aft. interj. 16 (m); of vocative 16 (m) (a); aft. superl. adj. 16 n. 5; in composit. 16 n. 6; of noun after adj. 16 n. 5; of noun prec. by depend. genit. 16 n. 7; in poetry 16 n. 7; post-verbal 16 n. 12; of prep. 16 n. 13; of pron. 17; after infixed pron. 18 a; after rel. part. *a* 18 (b); after interrog. 18 (c); of predicate after copula 18 (d); after *yt*, *yd* 18 (e); 91 n. 2; after *ry-*, 18 (f); after interrog. *a* 18 (g); after conj. 18 (h); after negat. 18 (i) and n.; in dual, 25; analogical lenat. 39 n. 1; after *ny*, relat. 21 n. 2.

llall, pl. *lleill*, 70.

llas, 134 (a).

lle, nominal conj. 215.

y lleill, 71.

llyma, *llyna*, 244.

-m-, infixed pron. 48.

m, final, $>n$ in Celtic 20 n.

mad, not foll. by *yd* 93 (i).

mae, use of 154 (a); copula 155 (a)(λ)

mal, *val*, conj. 216.

med, 'says,' form and use 150.

megys, conj. 217.

meu, etc. poss. pron. 55.

mi, etc. simple pron. 45.

minheu, etc. conj. pron. 45.

mivi, etc. emph. pron. 45.

moch, not foll. by *yd* 93 (k).

moes, imperat. 148.

moods, 104; indic. 105-110; subj. 110-114; imperat. 115; see indicative, sub-junct., imperat., infinitive.

mor, lenat. after 16 (l), *mor* - - a expr. equality with adjs. 39 n. 2.

multiplicatives, 44.

mutation of cons., table of 13; vocalic mut. see lenation; nasal mut. in Mid.

W. MSS. 19; after *vyn* 20 (a); after *yn* 20 (b); origin of, after numerals 20 (c); spirant mut. 21; after numerals 21 (a); after 3 sg. f. poss. adj. 21 (b); after prep. 21 (c); after *a(c)* *no(c)* 21 (d); after *ny*, *na* 21 (e) after *kwt* 21 n. 1.

myn, conj. 218.

mynet, paradigm of 140.

mynn, nominal prep. 180.

mywn, nominal prep. 181.

'*n*', poss. adj. 57.

n, neut. stems in 27 (d).

-n- infix. pron. 48.

na(c), mutat. after 21 (e); with infixed pron. 50 (g); with imperat. 115; with infixed pron., use of 237; disjunctive particle 238; in answers 241; *nac ef*, in answers 241 n.

na, *nat*, negat. part., use of 236; in condit. sent. 236 n. 1; with infixed pron. 237.

nachaf, interj. 244.

nado, 242 and n.

nage, 241.

namyn, *namwyn*, 219.

narrative tense, 108.

nasal mutation, see mutation.

nat, dependent neg. of copula 155 (a) (ε).

neb, use of 64.

negative particles, 235–238; special vb. form with negat. 130 (b).
y neill, use of 69; *y neill - - y lleill*, 71.
nem, prep. with pron. end. 53.
nes, prep., use of 182.
neu, lenat. after 16 (l); with infixd. pron. 50 (e); with vb. part. *ry* 95 n.; conj. 220.
neur, 95 n.; 221.
neut, not foll. by *yd*, 93 (h); as copula 155 (a)(t); conj. 221.
neuter, lost in Welsh 25; neuter -n stems 27 (d); of demons. pron. 61.
ni etc. pers. pron. 45.
nini etc. pers. pron. 45.
ninneu etc. pers. pron. 45.
no, *noc*, mutat. after 21 (d); after compar. adj. 38 (a); use as conj. 222.
nocet, *nogyt* 222.
nominative, old nominat. 25; syntax of nom. 26.
nouns, lenat. of init. cons. 16; lenat. after proper nouns 16(b)(γ); art. with prop. nouns 24; cases of 25; formation of pl. 27–28; collective nouns 29 (c); noun predic. with *yn* 35; plurals with cardinal nos. 42 (a); see also verbal nouns.
nu, conj. 223.
number, in nouns, 25; in adjs. 33; in vb. 100; express. of number in passive vb. 100; number of vb. in rel. clause 103.
numerals; lenat. after 16(e); nasal mutat. after 20(c); spirant mutat. after 21(a); cardinals 41; ordinals 41; syntax of 42; distributives with *pob* 43; multipl. with *gweith* 44.
nwy, 49 (c).
ny, mutation after 21 (e); mutat. aft. non-relative *ny* 21 n. 2; mutat. aft. relat. *ny* 21 n. 2; infixd. pron. after non-rel. *ny* 49 c; special relat. form of *ny* 49 c; with infix. pron. 50 (g); in negat. of relat. 82; 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); rel. *ny* without antec. 87 (b); usage 235.
nyr=ny ry 95 n.
nys, in later Mid. W. 50 n.
nyt, negat. of copula 155 (a)(δ); (a)(κ).
nyw, 49 c.
o, prep., lenat. aft. 16(i); aft. adjs. 34 (b); aft. superl. adjs. 38 (b); with pron. end. 53; aft. vb. noun, 122; =of 183; with art. 183.
o, conj., mutat. aft. 21 (d); with infixd. pron. 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); use of 224.
-o-, old pl. stems in, 27 n. 1; adj. stems in 30 n.
-o subjunct. end. 138.
object, position of 85.
oblique cases, traces of, 25.
oc, prep. 183.
och, interj. 243.
odieithyr, prep. 172.
oduch, prep. 193.
oed, impf. of *bot*, use of 107 n. 3; 154 (b).
-oed, pl. suffix 28 B (h).
oet, in *eirmoet*, *eiryoet* 197 n.
oes, use of 154 (a)(β).
oia, interj. 243.
oian a, interj. 243.
oll, use of 67; with numerals 67.
-on pl. term. in adj. 31 (b).
ony, *onyt*, conj. 224; 224 n. 2.
or, conj. 224; 224 n. 4.
or a 87 (a); *or ny* 87 (a); *or y*, 87 (a); *or pan* 226; 2 (b).
order of words, dependent genit. 26; adj. 34 (a); noun 34 (a); adverb 40; numerals 41; copula 159.
ordinals, see number.
orthography of Early W. 12 n.
os, conj. 224 and n. 5.

os, (bot) 152; copula 155 (a)(ζ)
osit, ossit, 152; use of 154 (a)(β); 154
 n. 1.

ot, conj 224.

-ot, pl. suffix 28 B (g).

pa, py, with *peth* 79; used adject. 80;
 meaning of, 80 n. 1; without noun
 following 80 n. 2; followed by prep.
 80 n. 3; *pa - bynnac*, 81.

padiw, pydiw, 80 n. 4.

paham, 80 n. 3.

pahar, 80 n. 3.

pan, with infix. pron. 49 (b); foll. by
yd 93 (l); with *yw* 154 (a)(β); *pan* =
 whence, 225; =when 226; *hyt pan*
 226. 2 (a); *or pan* 226. 2 (b); *yr pan*
 226. 2 (c).

particles, preverbal 91-97; negat. 235
 sqq.; disjunct. 238; interrog. 239; re-
 sponsive 241.

participle, passive 104; part. in *-edic*
 116; pres. part. equiv. 126 (a); perf.
 part. equiv. 126 (b).

parth (ac), prep. 184.

passive, numb. exp. in pass. voice 100;
 pers. in pass. 102; 103; pass. part.
 104; imperat. pass. 115; part. pass.
 in *-edic*, 116; old pass. end. 129; 130;
 pret. and perf. 134; periphr. pass. of
 plupf. 136 (b).

pawb, use of 66.

pei, conj. not foll. by *yd* 93 (l); uses
 of 227; origin of 227 n.

periphrasis, verbal noun with *gweneu-*
thur 123; periphrastic plupf. with
-oed, active 136 (a); passive 136 (b).

perfect. indic. with *ry*. 96 A (a); per-
 fect part. equiv. 126 (b); use of 105;
 v. preterite.

person in verb, 102-103; in passive
 102; in 1 and 2 pers. of pass. 102.

personal pron. see pronoun.

pettwn, 158.

peth, as pron. 74; interrog. 79.

peun-, old accus. 25.

pieu, in rel. clause 83 (a)(β); paradigm
 161; use of 161.

pluperfect, with *ry* 96 A (b); use of
 105, 109; plupf. indic. replacing subj.
 109 c; types of plupf. ind. 135; peri-
 phr. plupf. act. and pass. 136 (a)(b).

plural, old Celtic, 27; pl. of nouns 27;
 vowel change in pl. 27 (a); pl. endings
-eu, *-ieu*, 27 (b); *-on*, *-ion*, 27 (c);
 old consonantal pls. 27 (d); pl.
 suffixes 28; pl. in adjs. 31; 33; pl.
 of nouns with card. numerals 42 (a);
 3 pl. end. of impf. 131.

pob, in distributives 43; used as adj.
 66; *pob un* 66; *pob rei* 66.

pony, interrog. 240.

ponyt, copula 155 (a)(β).

possessive, pronouns 55, 56; adjs. table
 of 57; prec. by prep. or conj. 58 (a).

predicate, lenation of, after copula 18
 (d); pred. before copula 159; after
 copula 159.

predicative adj. 32; plural of 33; after
yn 35; pred. noun with *yn* 35.

preposition, lenat. after 16 (i); lenat.
 of 16 n. 13; nasal mut. after 20 (b);
 spirant mut. after 21 (c); with poss.
 adj. 58 (a); suffixed to *pa, py* 80 n.
 3; forms and usage 162-197.

present indic. 105; actual pres. 106 (a);
 as fut. 106 (e); pres. subj. endings
 110.

preterite with *ry*- 97 (a); use of 105;
 108; in indir. speech 108 (b); =per-
 fect 108 (c); endings of 132; absolute
 end. in 132 n.; *s*- pret. 133; *t*- pret.
 133 (a); reduplic. in 133 (b); pret.
 pass. 134.

pronoun, lenation of 17; lenat. after
 interrog. 18 (c); tables of 45-90; *mi*,

etc. 45; *mivi* etc. 45; *minheu* etc. 45; weakening of, after vb. 45; construct. of indep. prons. 46; infixed pron. 48-51; after *pan* 49 (b); with *ry* 49 (c); with *ny* 49 (c); anticipat. obj. 49 n.; express dat. 51; with prepos. 52-53; simple pron. with pron.-prep. 54; conjunct. pron. with pron.-prep. 54; *meu*, etc. 55; poss. pron. syntax of 56; demonstr. pr. 61; syntax of 62; pronominal use of *dim* 73; *peth* 74; *rei* 75; *ryw*; *sawl* 77; *un* 78; interrog. 79; relat. 82, 84.
 prothetic vowel, 9.
pyrt (na), conj. 228.
pwy, 79; *pwy* with noun, 79 n.
pwy gilyd 185.
py, see *pa*; prep. 185; with poss. pron. 185; *pyr* 229.
pynhac, *pynnac* 81.
pyr, 229.

rac, with pron. end. 53; usage 186; *y rac* 186.
 reduction of cons. 12; of prons. 45.
 reduplication 133 (b).
rei 62 (b); *y rei*, foll. by rel. 62 (c); *pob rei* 66; as pron. 75.
 relative, *ny* relat. and non-relat. 21 n. 2; express. of inflected rel. 62 (c); rel. pron. 82-84; rel. *a* with *yd* 84; expr. of genit. of rel. 88; Welsh equiv. to Eng. rel. gov. by prep. 89; substitutes for 90; verb in rel. clauses 103; subjunct. in rel. cl. 114 (h).
 repeated action, 107 (c).
 responsive particles, 241.
ro, prep. with pron. end. 53.
rodi, *roi*, paradigm of 146.
rwng, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 187; *odyrwng* 187; *yrwng* 187.

ryw, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).
ry, verbal part. lenat. after 18 (f); with infix. pron. 49 (c); 50 (d); in rel. clause 83 (a) (γ); reduced to *r*, 95 n.; *y+ry* 95 n.; with indic. 96 A; with perf. indic. 96 A (a); with plupf. 96 A (b); with subj. 96 B; with pres. subj. 96 B (a); with past subj. 96 B (b); with vb. noun 96 C; in early W. poetry 97; with pret. indic. 97 (a); with subj. 97 (d); with fut. 97 (d); in later poetry 97 (d); with pres. indic. 97 C 1; in subord. cl. 97 C 2; with pres. and impf. of *darvot* 97 C n.; not found after neg.; *mad*; interrog. and rel. *a* 97 1; with infix. pron. 97. 3; with subj. of wish 97. 3 (b); with vb. noun 120 (b); with conj. *o* 224 n. 5.
rydhau, paradigm of 127.
ryw, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).
ryw, pron. usage of 76.
-s, infixed pron. anticipating object 159 n. 2.
-s- preterite 133.
-s stems in, 27 (d).
-s- subjunctive 110 n. 2.
sawl used as pron. 77.
 secondary tense, impf. as, 107 (d) (a).
sef, *ssef*, 47.
 semivowels 3.
 sentence, sound changes within 12.
 singular formed from collect. nouns 29 c.
-sit, pret. and perf. end. 132 n.
 spirant mutat. 21, see mutation.
 stems in *-s* 27 (d); neut *-n-* 27 (d); in *-o* 27 n. 1; in *-u-* 27 n. 1; *-n-* 27 n. 5; adj. stems in *-i-* 30 n.; in *-u-* 30 n.
 subject, position when emph. 85.
 subjunctive, with *ry* 96 B; pres. subj. with *ry* 96 B (a); past subj. with *ry* 96 B (b); subj. of wish with *ry* 97

3 (b); replaced by plupf. indic. 109 c.; ending of pres. subj. 110; formation of, 110; *h* as sign of, 110; new formation in Mid. W. 110 n. 1; subj. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; stem of subj. and indic. 110 n. 1; influence of indic. upon 110 n. 1; confusion of subj. with indic. 110 n. 1; subj. in *h* 110 n. 1; history of subj. in *h* 110 n. 2; *s*-subj. 110 n. 2; early history of 110 n. 2; tenses of subj. 111; pres. 111; impf. 111; past 111; past subj. in later Mid. W. 111; replaced by plupf. ind. 111 and n; perf. in subj. 111; plupf. in subj. 111; subj. replaced by indicat. 111 n.; usage 112–114; in main clauses 113 A; of wish 113 A (a); of command 113 A (b); express futurity 113 (c); after vbs. of *thinking*, *swearing*, etc. 114 (a); in subord. cl. 114 B; in indirect interrog. 114 B (b); in concessive cl. 114 (c); in condit. cl. 114 (d); in cl. of comparison 114 (e); in temporal cl. 114 (f); after vbs. of *effecting*, *commanding*, *desiring* 114 (g); in final cl. 114 (g); in relat. cl. 114 (h); endings of pres. subj. 138; of pass. subj. 139; form of past subj. 139; subj. with *hyt* 214 (b); of purpose with *hyt na* 214. 2 (b); after *mal* 216. 1 (b); of purpose after *mal na* 216. 3 (b).

substantive verb, forms and usage 154. suffixes, pl. 28; of comparat. 37 (a); of verbal noun 119.

superlative adj., lenat. after 16 n. 5, no pl. forms 33; form of 37; foll. by prep. *o* 38 (b); construction 38.

syllable, loss of final syll. 30 n.

syntax, of the art. 24; of cases 26; of genit. in prose and poetry 26; of numerals 42; *o* poss. pron. 56.

tan, *dan*, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126 (c); usage 188; *ymdan* 164; *adan*, *ydan*, 188.

tawr, *dawr*, paradigm of 147.

temporal clauses, 114 (f).

tenses, see present etc.

-tor, verbal ending 129.

tra, conj. with infix. pron. 50 (h); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); usage 230.

tra, *trag*, prep., mutation after 21 (c); usage 189.

tri, mutation after 21 (a).

tras, *dros*, *trus*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 190.

trwy, *drwy*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 191.

tu (ac), prep. 192.

-u, 3 pl. end. of pron.-prep. 52 (b).

-u-stems in 27 n. 3; 30 n.

ub interj. 243.

uch, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage, 193.

-ud, 3 pl. end. of pron. prep. 52 (b). *un*, as pron. 78.

verb, end. 3 sg. pres. ind. act. 7 n. 1; 98; lenat. after, 16 (g) (a); lenat. of 18; posit. in Celt. sent. 85; conjugation, 98–161; classes of, 98; deponent, 99; voice, 99; number, 100; concord with subj. 101; 103; person, 102; mood, 104; verbs of *thinking*, *swearing*, etc., 114 (a); verbs of *effecting*, *commanding*, etc., 114 (g); paradigm of reg. vb. 127; vowel inflection in obj. 128 (a); denominative vb. 128 (b); verbs in *-hau* 128 (b); ending of 3 pl. 129; irreg. vb. 140–152; see indic. etc.

verbal noun, lenat. of, 16 (b) (δ); with *ry*, 96 C; 120; formation, 118; suffixes, 119; usage, 120; voice in, 121;

INDEX.

agent with, 122; with *gwneuthor*, 123; continuing finite vb. 124; as historic infin. 125; special use after *yn*, 126; with *gwydy*, 126 (b); with *tan*, 126 (c); with *can*, 126 (c). vocative, lenation in, 16 (m)(a). voice, in vb. noun, 121; see number, passive.

vowels, vowel system, 1; orthog. variat. 1 n; quantity, 2; long, 2 (a); half-long 2 (b); accented, 2 A^o; unaccented 2 B; short, 2 B; changes, 5; infecting, 5; infecting vowel preserved, 6; lost, 7; vowel-infection in 3 sg. pr. ind. act. 7 n 1; variation of, due to accent, 8; weakening, 8; prothetic 9; epenthetic, 10; change in adj. 31 (a); infection in vb. 128 (a); irregular vowel infection, 128 n.

wely dy, interj. 244.

wish, subjunctive of, 113 A (a).

word groups, mutation of cons. in, 12. *wrth*, prep., with pron. end. 53; usage 194.

wrth, conj. 231.

wy, usage of, 45 n 2; becoming *wynt*, 45 n 2.

wyf, etc., as copula, 155 (a)(μ).

wynt, usage, 45 n 2; history of, 45 n 2.

wynteu, usage, 46 n.

y, semi-vowel, 3 n (g).

y, prep. lenat. after, 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with poss. adj. 58; after vb. noun, 122; usage, 195.

y 'her,' mutat. aft. 21 b.

yd, *yt*, *yr*, *y*, verb. part., lenation after 18 (e); with infix. pron. 49 b; 50 (b);

93 n 2; with rel. *a* 84; superseding *a* 85 note; after *or* 87 (a); *yr* 91; *yr* for *yd* 91 n 2; *yt* 91 n 2; *y* not lenating 91 n 2; origin of non-lenat. *y* 91 n 2; *yt* lenat. 91 n 2; usage 92; 93; after *gwydy* 93 n 3; before *ry* 93 n 4; *yd*, use of in RB; in WB; and in later Mid. W, 94; infixing pron. 94. *yd* pl. ending 28 B (i).

ydoed, etc., 154 n 3; usage, 154 (b).

ydyw, use of, 154, and n 3.

yll, see *ell*.

yma, adv. 63.

yn, prep. with vb. noun, 16 n 8; lenat. 16 n. 8; *yn* predic. 16 n 8; nasal mut. after, 20 (b); with predic. noun and adj. 35; with adj. 40; with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126; usage, 196.

yn, conj., usage, 232.

ynt, copula, 155 (a)(γ).

ynteu, usage, 46 n.

yny, conj. with infix. pron. 49 (b); 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); usage, 233.

-yon, pl. ending 31 (c).

yr, see article.

yr, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage, 187; *yr pan*, 226 c; *yr na*, 234.

yr for *y + yr*, 87 note.

yr for y + ry, 91 n 3; 95 n.

ys, *ydys* 152.

ys, copula, 155 (a)(α); *ys oed* 159 n 2.

ysyd, *syd*, in relat. cl. 83 (a)(α); usage, 154 (a)(β); 155 (a)(κ).

yssit, *yssydynt*, usage, 154 (a) n 1.

yttoed, usage, 154 (b).

ytiw, usage, 154 (a)(α); copula, 154 n 4.

yw, copula, 155 (a)(β); *pan yw*, 155 (a)(β)

CORRIGENDA

P. 7, l. 15, *for mynwgl read mwnwgl*
P. 20, l. 34, *for Aften read After*
P. 37, l. 20, *for thee read me*
P. 110, l. 21, *for on read on*
P. 123, l. 31, *for as read as*
P. 140, l. 28, *for 19,707 read 19,709*
P. 141, l. 32, *for 12 dianot read 13 dianot*
 ib., *for 13 y rydunt read 14 y rydunt*
P. 145, l. 27, *for 19,707 read 19,709*
 ib., l. 29, *for dywyasavc read dywyssavc*
P. 151, l. 25, *for can wr read canwr*
P. 152, l. 19, *for ordiwed read or diwed*
P. 153, l. 27, *for troet noethon read troetnoethon*
P. 154, l. 5, *for yny read yn y*
P. 155, l. 2, *for gyt gyghor read gytgyghor*
P. 162, l. 11, *add comma after Gotlont*
 ib., *for Gōynw read Gōynw[as]*
 ib., *for Gerein read Gerein[t]*
P. 166, l. 28, *for kadōr read Kadōr*
P. 167, l. 19, *add full stop after hynn*
P. 169, l. 16, *for vrytanyeit read Vrytanyeit*
P. 182, l. 21, *dele the full stop after Les*
P. 184. l. 20, *for ge ynyon read gelynyon*
 ib., l. 33, *read a[c] Vryen*
P. 192, l. 18, *for vililioed (sic MS.) read vilioed*
P. 195, l. 1, *for allan. Dýuot read allan dýuot*
P. 198, l. 11, *for ehaōc. read ehaōc,*
P. 199, l. 31, *for Uarruaōc (sic MS.) read Uaruauōc*
P. 201, l. 20, *for kyfuarch (sic MS.) read kyfarth*
 ib., l. 24, *for Yspaden read Yspad[ad]en*
P. 202, l. 2, *for yn read ny*

P. 210^b, l. 4, *for idau read idaw*
 ib., l. 20, *for rhingyll read ringyll*
 ib., l. 33, *for nessat read nessaf*
 ib., *for kyglas read kyghas*

P. 211^b, l. 15, *for dyvedut read dywedut*

P. 212^b, l. 5, *for savun read savvn*

P. 212^b, l. 11, *for ydau read idaw*

P. 213^b, l. 21, *for dylyaf read dylyaf fi*
 ib., l. 24, *for ageidw read a geidw*

P. 216^a, l. 22, *for Neu⁵ read Neu⁶*

P. 216^b, l. 23, *for Kynnybo read Kynny bo*

P. 219^b, l. 19, *for amdiffynnur vreint read amdiffynnwr breint*

P. 220^b, l. 12, *for testyon eneill read tystyon y neill*
 ib., l. 20, *for ygneit read yneit*

P. 223, l. 5 and 6, *for diethyr read dieithyr*
 1b., l. 22, 25 and 33, *for Morgannuc read Morgannw^c*
 1b., l. 29, *for a digonher read digonher*

P. 227, l. 21, *dele the comma after tr⁶s*

P. 229, l. 1, *read dayargychwyn*

P. 231, l. 26, *for ieuan read Ieuan*

P. 234, l. 16, *for teern meibon read teernmeibon*

P. 237, note 1, *for M.A. read MA. p. 268a.*

P. 237^b, l. 17, *for Da⁶ read Du⁶*

P. 239, l. 20, *for a metev read am etev*

P. 241, l. 7, *for or seuir read orseuir*
 1b., l. 31, *for di luyd read diluyd*

Publications

OF THE

University of Manchester.

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.

ANATOMICAL SERIES.

No. I. STUDIES IN ANATOMY from the Anatomical Department of the University of Manchester. Vol. iii. Edited by ALFRED H. YOUNG, M.B. (Edin.), F.R.C.S., Professor of Anatomy. Demy 8vo, pp. ix. 289, 23 plates. 10s. net. (Publication No. 10, 1906.)

"All the papers contained in the volume are real additions to the knowledge of the subject with which they deal. For three of the studies Prof. Young is either in part or wholly responsible, and he is to be congratulated on the vigour shown by the Manchester School of Anatomists."—*Nature*.

"This work affords admirable evidence of the virility of our younger British Universities. It is a notable addition to an already notable series."—*Medical Review*.

"This forms the third volume of the Studies in Anatomy issued by the Council, and contains contributions of considerable interest. The volume is well printed and bound. It speaks well for the activity of investigation at Manchester."—*Lancet*.

"The volume is well got up and is evidence of the continuation of the excellent work which has been carried on for so long a period, under Professor A. H. Young's supervision, and has been encouraged and stimulated by his own work."—*British Medical Journal*.

"Throughout the papers, careful research and accurate observation are manifested, and they will repay careful perusal. To the Anatomist, as well as the practical physician or surgeon, they will prove valuable."

—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

CLASSICAL SERIES.

No. I. A STUDY OF THE BACCHAE OF EURIPIDES. By G. NORWOOD, M.A., Assistant Lecturer in Classics. Demy 8vo, pp. xx. 188. 5s. net. (Publication No. 31, 1908.)

ECONOMIC SERIES.

No. I. THE LANCASHIRE COTTON INDUSTRY. By S. J. CHAPMAN, M.A., M. Com., Stanley Jevons Professor of Political Economy and Dean of the Faculty of Commerce. Demy 8vo, pp. vii. 309. 7s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 4, 1904.)

"Such a book as this ought to be, and will be, read far beyond the bounds of the trade."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"There have been books dealing with various phases of the subject, but no other has so ably treated it from the economic as well as from the historical point of view."—*Manchester Courier*.

"The story of the evolution of the industry from small and insignificant beginnings up to its present imposing proportions and highly developed and specialised forms, is told in a way to rivet the attention of the reader the book is a valuable and instructive treatise on a fascinating yet important subject."—*Cotton Factory Times*.

"Highly valuable to all close students."—*Scotsman*.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS. ECONOMIC SERIES.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 1.)

No. II. COTTON SPINNING AND MANUFACTURING IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA. By T. W. UTTLEY, B.A., Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. xii. 70. 1s. net.
(Publication No. 8, 1905.)

"Mr. Uttley is to be congratulated on the performance of a not altogether easy task, and his book, in conception and execution, appears to fulfil admirably the intentions of the Trust."—*Manchester Courier*.

"The writer gives ample details concerning wages and other features connected with typical mills . . . and the information thus gathered is of interest and value to the factory operative as well as the student and economist."—*Cotton Factory Times*.

"Mr. Uttley describes how he visited the mills in various States in a very systematic and detailed manner. Altogether the report makes an admirable and welcome collection of information, and will be found on many occasions worthy of reference."—*Textile Mercury*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 2.)

No. III. SOME MODERN CONDITIONS AND RECENT DEVELOPMENTS IN IRON AND STEEL PRODUCTION IN AMERICA, being a Report to the Gartside Electors, on the results of a Tour in the U.S.A. By FRANK POPPLEWELL, B.Sc., Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. vi. 119. 1s. net.
(Publication No. 21, 1906.)

"The author has employed his time well, and has given a clear idea of modern conditions."—*Nature*.

"The American methods of iron and steel production are described, from the practical as well as the statistical side."—*Manchester Courier*.

"Mr. Popplewell writes clearly and well, and he is to be congratulated upon having carried his task through in so entirely a satisfactory manner."—*Manchester City News*.

"America's progress in iron and steel is more wonderful than any bald statistics of production with which we are so familiar can indicate. How that progress has been effected—effected under labour, transport and other difficulties—Mr. Popplewell tells us in an interesting and keenly intelligent review."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"A minute observation of detail . . . characterises the whole work."
—*Iron and Coal Trades Review*.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.
ECONOMIC SERIES.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 3.)

No. IV. ENGINEERING AND INDUSTRIAL CONDITIONS
IN THE UNITED STATES. By FRANK FOSTER, M.Sc., Gartside
Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. ix. 106. 1s. net.

(Publication No. 22, 1906.)

"The report under review is of very great interest to those connected with the manufacturing branch of engineering in this country, many of whom will have to relinquish their preconceived notions regarding American methods, if Mr. Foster's conclusions are to be accepted."

—*Electrical Review.*

"The book altogether is very readable, and one we can heartily recommend to all interested in the economics of engineering."

—*The Practical Engineer.*

"Mr. Foster's observation of facts is fresh and interesting . . . the technical side of his report exhibits much care."—*Manchester Guardian.*

"The book is well worth reading."—*Iron and Coal Trades Review.*

"There is much in the book which will be new to English readers, even to those who have studied the reports of the Moseley and other recent 'commissions.'"—*Belfast News Letter.*

No. V. THE RATING OF LAND VALUES. By J. D.
CHORLTON, M.Sc. Demy 8vo, pp. viii. 177. 3s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 23, 1907.)

"A timely and temperate treatise on a subject of growing interest."

—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

"The writer is learned, intelligent, progressive, fair and lucid."

—*Progress.*

"The facts and deductions are well put."—*Western Mail.*

"Chapters upon the scheme of the Royal Commission (minority report) — 'Building Land,' 'The Future Increase of Land Values,' 'The Municipal Bill,' and others . . . set forth with clearness and detail some of the many interesting and difficult subjects in connection with valuation, rates and rating."—*Estates Gazette.*

"Mr. Chorlton has made a contribution to this interesting controversy which is worthy of the serious attention of all persons interested in the subject."—*Local Government Chronicle.*

"The arguments for and against this proposed reform in the taxation of land have never been more fairly and freely stated."

—*Liverpool Daily Post and Mercury.*

"Mr. Chorlton deals clearly and concisely with the whole subject of rating and land values."—*The Standard.*

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.
ECONOMIC SERIES.

"The impartiality and candour of Mr. Chorlton's method are beyond dispute, and his book will repay careful study by all who are interested in the question, from whatever motive."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"The first half of this book deserves to become a classic is one of the best books on a practical economic question that has appeared for many years. It is not only scientifically valuable, but so well written as to be interesting to a novice on the subject."—*The Nation*.

"This thoughtful and judicially expressed treatise."

—*Manchester City News*.

"A very businesslike and serviceable collection of essays and notes on this intricate question."—*Manchester Guardian*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 4.)

No. VI. DYEING IN GERMANY AND AMERICA. By SYDNEY H. HIGGINS, M.Sc., Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. xiii. 112. 1s. net. (Publication No. 24, 1907.)

"The book will . . . make a valuable addition to the technical literature of this country."—*Tribune*.

"The work is one which . . . should receive the attention of those who desire a general view of the German and American dyeing industries."—*Textile Manufacturer*.

"A perusal of the work leads us to the conclusion that much useful work is being done by the Gartside scholars, which will give these young men an excellent insight into the working conditions of various industries."—*Textile Recorder*.

No. VII. THE HOUSING PROBLEM IN ENGLAND. By ERNEST RITSON DEWSNUP, M.A., Professor of Railway Economics in the University of Chicago. Demy 8vo, pp. vii. 327. 5s. net. (Publication No. 25, 1907.)

"Mr. Dewsnap's book is most valuable as it provides all essential information on the subject."—*Standard*.

"All those who are interested in this question, no matter what their economic predilections, may ponder with advantage Professor Dewsnap's pages."—*Newcastle Daily Chronicle*.

"The study brings together so weighty an array of facts and arguments that it cannot but prove instructive and suggestive to all classes of economists interested in its subject."—*Scotsman*.

"Professor Dewsnap's view of the whole problem was stated in 1903, in a form which won the Warburton Essay Prize at the Manchester University. Now revised and brought up to date, his valuable work has taken permanent form."—*Westminster Gazette*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 5.)

No. VIII. AMERICAN BUSINESS ENTERPRISE. By DOUGLAS KNOOP M.A. Price 1s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 30, 1907.)

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS. EDUCATIONAL SERIES.

No. I. CONTINUATION SCHOOLS IN ENGLAND & ELSEWHERE: Their place in the Educational System of an Industrial and Commercial State. By MICHAEL E. SADLER, M.A., LL.D., Professor of the History and Administration of Education. Demy 8vo, pp. xxvi 779. 8s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 29, 1907.)

This work is largely based on an enquiry made by past and present Students of the Educational Department of the University of Manchester. Chapters on Continuation Schools in the German Empire, Switzerland, Denmark, and France, have been contributed by other writers.

No. II. THE DEMONSTRATION SCHOOL RECORD. No. I. Being Contributions to the Study of Education from the Department of Education in the University of Manchester. By Professor J. J. FINDLAY. 1s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 32, 1908.)

HISTORICAL SERIES.

No. I. MEDIEVAL MANCHESTER AND THE BEGINNINGS OF LANCASHIRE. By JAMES TAIT, M.A., Professor of Ancient and Mediæval History. Demy 8vo, pp. x. 211. 7s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 3, 1904.)

"Patient and enlightened scholarship and a sense of style and proportion have enabled the writer to produce a work at once solid and readable."—*English Historical Review*.

"A welcome addition to the literature of English local history, not merely because it adds much to our knowledge of Manchester and Lancashire, but also because it displays a scientific method of treatment which is rare in this field of study in England."—Dr. Gross in *American Historical Review*.

"La collection ne pouvait débuter plus significativement et plus heureusement que par un ouvrage d'histoire du Moyen Age dû à M. Tait, car l'enseignement mediéviste est un de ceux qui font le plus d'honneur à la jeune Université de Manchester, et c'est à M. le Professeur Tait qu'il faut attribuer une bonne part de ce succès."—*Revue de Synthèse historique*.

"The two essays are models of their kind."—*Manchester Guardian*.

No. II. INITIA OPERUM LATINORUM QUAE SAECULIS XIII., XIV., XV. ATTRIBUUNTUR. By A. G. LITTLE, M.A., Lecturer in Palæography. Demy 8vo, pp. xiii. 273 (interleaved). 15s. net. (Publication No. 5, 1904.)

"Whoever has attempted to ascertain the contents of a Mediæval miscellany in manuscript must often have been annoyed by the occurrence of a blank space where the title of the treatise ought to be. Mr. Little has therefore earned the gratitude of all such persons by making public a collection of some 6,000 incipits, which he arranged in the first instance for his private use, in compiling a catalogue of Franciscan MSS."—*English Historical Review*.

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.
HISTORICAL SERIES.

No. III. THE OLD COLONIAL SYSTEM. By GERALD BERKELEY HERTZ, M.A., B.C.L., Lecturer in Constitutional Law. Demy 8vo, pp. xi. 232. 5s. net. (Publication No. 7, 1905.)

"Mr. Hertz gives us an elaborate historical study of the old colonial system, which disappeared with the American Revolution. . . . He shows a remarkable knowledge of contemporary literature, and his book may claim to be a true history of popular opinion."—*Spectator*.

"Mr. Hertz's book is one which no student of imperial developments can neglect. It is lucid, fair, thorough, and convincing."

—*Glasgow Herald*.

"Mr. Hertz's 'Old Colonial System' is based on a careful study of contemporary documents, with the result that several points of no small importance are put in a new light . . . it is careful, honest work . . . The story which he tells has its lesson for us."—*The Times*.

"Both the ordinary reader and the academic mind will get benefit from this well-informed and well-written book."—*Scotsman*.

No. IV. STUDIES OF ROMAN IMPERIALISM. By W. T. ARNOLD, M.A. Edited by EDWARD FIDDES, M.A., Lecturer in Ancient History, with Memoir of the Author by Mrs. HUMPHRY WARD and C. E. MONTAGUE. With a Photogravure of W. T. Arnold. Demy 8vo, 400 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 16, 1906.)

"Mrs. Humphry Ward has used all her delicate and subtle art to draw a picture of her beloved brother; and his friend Mr. Montague's account of his middle life is also remarkable for its literary excellence."—*Athenaeum*.

"The memoir . . . tenderly and skilfully written by the 'sister and friend,' tells a story, which well deserved to be told, of a life rich in aspirations, interests, and friendships, and not without its measure of actual achievement."—*Tribune*.

"This geographical sense and his feeling for politics give colour to all he wrote."—*Times*.

"Anyone who desires a general account of the Empire under Augustus which is freshly and clearly written and based on wide reading will find it here."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"Nothing could be better than the sympathetic tribute which Mrs. Humphry Ward pays to her brother, or the analysis of his work and method by his colleague Mr. Montague. The two together have more stuff in them than many big books of recent biography."

—*Westminster Gazette*.

The Memoir may be had separately, price 2s. 6d. net.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.
HISTORICAL SERIES.

No. V. CANON PIETRO CASOLA'S PILGRIMAGE TO JERUSALEM IN THE YEAR 1494. By M. M. NEWETT, B.A., formerly Jones Fellow. Demy 8vo., pp. 427. 7s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 26, 1907.)

"Thoroughness is characteristic of introduction, the copious notes, appendix and index. . . . Miss Newett's translation is spirited and interesting. . . ."—*Manchester Courier*.

"Casola's narrative richly deserved the honours of print and translation. The book is a credit to its editor and to the historical school of Manchester University."—*Morning Leader*.

"His narrative is at once simple and dignified in style, convincing and interesting in its pictures of the conditions governing travel by sea and land four centuries ago."—*Daily Telegraph*.

"The book is like a gallery of mediæval paintings, full of movement and colouring, instinct with the vitality of the time."—*Birmingham Post*.

"Miss Newett's introduction is a contribution of considerable value to the history of European commerce."—*Spectator*.

"Forms a noteworthy addition to the number of books from which a knowledge can be gained of the itineraries of the pilgrims to Palestine."—*Scotsman*.

"The whole volume is fascinating. It presents a lively picture of bygone times, abounds in curious facts and recalls quaint and pleasing ceremonies, and exhibits the ardent pilgrim of the past in his true light. Miss Newett is alike to be congratulated on her translation, her Introduction (which takes up a third of the volume), and her notes."—*Manchester City News*.

"The work which Miss Margaret Newett has probably saved from oblivion is as intrinsically interesting as it should prove instructive to the student of history."—*Daily News*.

"One of the most delightful narratives that record the impressions of a pious pilgrim."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"One of the most comprehensive of the itineraries is that now translated, an important feature of it being its full description of the city of Venice."—*The Times*.

No. VI. HISTORICAL ESSAYS. Edited by T. F. TOUT, M.A., Professor of Mediæval and Modern History and JAMES TAIT, M.A., Professor of Ancient and Mediæval History. Demy 8vo, pp. xv. 557. 6s. net. Reissue of the Edition of 1902 with Index and New Preface (Publication No. 27, 1907.)

"Diese zwanzig chronologisch geordneten Aufsätze heissen in der Vorrede der Herausgeber *Festchrift*, behandeln zur Hälfte ausser-englische

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.
HISTORICAL SERIES.

Themata, benutzen reichlich festländische Literatur und verraten überall neben weiten Ausblicken eine methodische Schulung die der dortigen Facultät hohe Ehre macht." Professor Liebermann in *Deutsche Literaturzeitung*,

"Imperial history, local history, ecclesiastical history, economic history and the methods of historical teaching—all these are in one way or another touched upon by scholars who have collaborated in this volume. Men and women alike have devoted their time and pains to working out problems of importance and often of no slight difficulty. The result is one of which the university and city may be justly proud." The late Professor York Powell in the *Manchester Guardian*.

"Esso contiene venti lavori storici dettati, quattro da professori e sedici da licenziati del Collegio, e sono tutto scritti appositamente e condotti secondo le più rigorose norme della critica e su documenti." R. Predelli in *Nuovo Archivio Veneto*.

"La variété des sujets et l'érudition avec laquelle ils sont traités font grand honneur à la manière dont l'histoire est enseigné à Owens College." *Revue Historique*.

"No one who reads these essays will do so without acknowledging their ability, both in originality and research. They deal with historic subjects from the beginnings of Caesar-worship to the detention of Napoleon at St. Helena, and they deal with them in a thoroughgoing fashion." *Guardian*.

"Par nature, c'est un recueil savant, qui témoigne du respect et de l'émulation que sait exercer pour les études historiques la jeune et déjà célèbre université." *Revue d'histoire ecclésiastique* (Louvain).

"All these essays reach a high level; they avoid the besetting sin of most of our present historical writing, which consists of serving up a hash of what other historians have written flavoured with an original spice of error. . . . They are all based on original research and written by specialists." Professor A. F. Pollard in the *English Historical Review*.

"Sie bilden einen schönen Beweis für die rationelle Art, mit der dort dieses Studium betrieben wird." Professor O. Weber in *Historische Zeitschrift*.

The Index can be purchased separately price 6d.

34, Cross Street, Manchester

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.
MEDICAL SERIES.

No. I. SKETCHES OF THE LIVES AND WORK OF THE HONORARY MEDICAL STAFF OF THE ROYAL INFIRMARY. From its foundation in 1752 to 1830, when it became the Royal Infirmary. By EDWARD MANSFIELD BROCKBANK, M.D., M.R.C.P. Crown 4to. (illustrated). Pp. vii. 311. 15s. net.

(Publication No. 1, 1904.)

"Dr. Brockbank's is a book of varied interest. It also deserves a welcome as one of the earliest of the 'Publications of the University of Manchester.'"*—Manchester Guardian.*

"We have a valuable contribution to local Medical Literature."

—Daily Dispatch.

No. II. PRACTICAL PRESCRIBING AND DISPENSING. For Medical Students. By WILLIAM KIRKBY, sometime Lecturer in Pharmacognosy in the Owens College, Manchester. Crown 8vo, 220 pp. 5s. net.

(Publication No. 2, 1904, Second edition, 1906.)

"The whole of the matter bears the impress of that technical skill and thoroughness with which Mr. Kirkby's name must invariably be associated, and the book must be welcomed as one of the most useful recent additions to the working library of prescribers and dispensers."
—Pharmaceutical Journal.

"Thoroughly practical text-books on the subject are so rare, that we welcome with pleasure Mr. William Kirkby's 'Practical Prescribing and Dispensing.' The book is written by a pharmacist expressly for medical students, and the author has been most happy in conceiving its scope and arrangement."*—British Medical Journal.*

"The work appears to be peculiarly free from blemishes and particularly full in practical detail. It is manifestly the work of one who is a skilled chemist, and an expert pharmacist, and who knows not only the requirements of the modern student but the best way in which his needs may be met."*—Medical Press.*

"This is a very sensible and useful manual."*—The Hospital.*

"The book will be found very useful to any students during a course of practical dispensing."*—St. Bartholomew's Hospital Journal.*

"The book is a model, being tutorial from beginning to end."
—The Chemist and Druggist.

No. III. HANDBOOK OF SURGICAL ANATOMY. By G. A. WRIGHT, B.A., M.B. (Oxon.), F.R.C.S., Professor of Systematic Surgery, and C. H. PRESTON, M.D., F.R.C.S., L.D.S., Lecturer on Dental Anatomy; Assistant Dental Surgeon to the Victoria Dental Hospital of Manchester. Crown 8vo, pp. ix. 205. Second edition. 5s. net.

(Publication No. 6, 1905.)

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.
MEDICAL SERIES.

"We can heartily recommend the volume to students, and especially to those preparing for a final examination in surgery."—*Hospital*.

"Dr. Wright and Dr. Preston have produced a concise and very readable little handbook of surgical applied anatomy. . . . The subject matter of the book is well arranged and the marginal notes in bold type facilitate reference to any desired point."—*Lancet*.

No. IV. A COURSE OF INSTRUCTION IN OPERATIVE SURGERY in the University of Manchester. By WILLIAM THORBURN, M.D., B.S. (Lond.), F.R.C.S., Lecturer in Operative Surgery. Crown 8vo, pp. 75. 2s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 11, 1906.)

"This little book gives the junior student all that he wants, and nothing that he does not want. Its size is handy, and altogether for its purpose it is excellent."—*University Review*.

"As a working guide it is excellent."—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

No. V. A HANDBOOK OF LEGAL MEDICINE. By W. SELLARS, M.D. (London), of the Middle Temple and Northern Circuit, Barrister-at-law. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo, pp. vii. 233. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 14, 1906.)

"This is quite one of the best books of the kind we have come across."—*Law Times*.

No. VI. A CATALOGUE OF THE PATHOLOGICAL MUSEUM OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Edited by J. LORRAIN SMITH, M.A., M.D. (Edin.), Professor of Pathology. Crown 4to, 1260 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 15, 1906.)

"The catalogue compares very favourably with others of a similar character, and, apart from its value for teaching purposes in an important medical school such as that of the University of Manchester, it is capable of being of great assistance to others as a work of reference."

—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

"In conclusion we need only say that Professor Lorrain Smith has performed the most essential part of his task—the description of the specimens—excellently, and an honourable mention must be made of the book as a publication."—*British Medical Journal*.

No. VII. HANDBOOK OF DISEASES OF THE HEART. By GRAHAM STEELL, M.D., F.R.C.P., Professor of Medicine, and Physician to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. Crown 8vo, pp. xii. 389, 11 plates (5 in colours), and 100 illustrations in the text. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 20, 1906.)

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS. MEDICAL SERIES.

"It more truly reflects modern ideas of heart disease than any book we are acquainted with, and therefore may be heartily recommended to our readers."—*Treatment*.

"We regard this volume as an extremely useful guide to the study of diseases of the heart, and consider that no better introduction to the subject could possibly have been written."—*Medical Times and Hospital Gazette*.

"We can cordially recommend Dr. Steell's book as giving an excellent and thoroughly practical account of the subject of which it treats."—*Edinburgh Medical Review*.

PHYSICAL SERIES.

No. I. THE PHYSICAL LABORATORIES OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. A record of 25 years' work. Demy 8vo, pp. 142, 10 Plates, 4 Plans. 5s. net. (Publication No. 13, 1906.)

This volume contains an illustrated description of the Physical, Electrical Engineering, and Electro-Chemistry Laboratories of the Manchester University, also a complete Biographical and Bibliographical Record of those who have worked in the Physics Department of the University during the past 25 years.

"The book is excellently got up, and contains a description of the department of physics and its equipment, a short biographical sketch of the Professor with a list of his scientific writings and a well-executed portrait and a record of the career of students and others who have passed through Dr. Schuster's hands. Alumni of Owens will welcome the volume as an interesting link with their alma mater."—*Glasgow Herald*.

"This interesting and valuable contribution to the history of the Manchester University also contains several illustrations, and forms the first of the "physical series" of the publications of the University of Manchester."—*The Times*

"A record of achievement of which no man need be ashamed"—*Westminster Gazette*.

"It is a memorial of which any man would be justly proud, and the University of which he is both an alumnus and a professor may well share that pride."—*Manchester Guardian*.

PUBLIC HEALTH SERIES.

No. I. ARCHIVES OF THE PUBLIC HEALTH LABORATORY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Edited by A. SHERIDAN DELÉPINE, M.Sc., M.B., Ch.M., Director of the Laboratory and Procter Professor of Comparative Pathology and Bacteriology. Crown 4to, pp. iv. 451. £1. 1s. net.
(Publication No. 12, 1906.)

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS PUBLIC HEALTH SERIES.

"The University of Manchester has taken the important and highly commendable step of commencing the publication of the archives of its Public Health Laboratory, and has issued, under the able and judicious editorship of Professor Sheridan Delépine, the first volume of a series that promises to be of no small interest and value alike to members of the medical profession and to those of the laity. . . . Original communications bearing upon diseases which are prevalent in the districts surrounding Manchester, or dealing with food- and water-supplies, air-disposal of refuse, sterilisation and disinfection and kindred subjects, will be published in future volumes; and it is manifest that these, as they successively appear, will form a constantly increasing body of trustworthy information upon subjects which are not only of the highest interest to the profession but of supreme importance to the public."—

The Lancet.

"It is safe to say that as these volumes accumulate they will form one of the most important works of reference on questions of public health, and ought, at all events, to be in the library of every public authority."—*Manchester Guardian.*

"The volume . . . speaks well for the activity of investigation in Manchester."—*Lancet.*

THEOLOGICAL SERIES.

No. I. INAUGURAL LECTURES delivered during the Session 1904-5, by the Professors and Lecturers of the Faculty of Theology, viz. :—

Prof. T. F. Tout, M.A.; Prof. A. S. Peake, B.D.; Prof. H. W. Hogg, M.A.; Prof. T. W. Rhys Davids, LL.D.; Rev. W. F. Adeney, D.D.; Rev. A. Gordon, M.A.; Rev. L. Hassé, B.D.; Rev. Canon E. L. HICKS, M.A.; Rev. H. D. Lockett, M.A.; Rev. R. Mackintosh, D.D.; Rev. J. T. Marshall, D.D.; Rev. J. H. Moulton, D.Litt.

Edited by A. S. PEAKE, B.D., Dean of the Faculty.
Demy 8vo, pp. xi. 296. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 9, 1905.)

"The lectures, while scholarly, are at the same time popular, and will be found interesting and instructive by those who are not theologians. . . . The entire series is excellent, and the volume deserves a wide circulation."—*Scotsman.*

"This is a very welcome volume . . . All these lectures were delivered to popular audiences, yet they are far from superficial, and will be found of great value to busy pastors and teachers."—*Christian World.*

"We welcome the volume as a most auspicious sign of the times."

—*Spectator.*

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.
THEOLOGICAL SERIES.

"The lectures themselves give a valuable conspectus of the present position of Theological research. . . . They are, of course, not addressed to experts, but they are exceedingly valuable, even when allowance is made for their more or less popular form."—*Examiner*.

"The whole volume forms a very important and valuable contribution to the cause of Theological learning."—*Record*.

"This is a most interesting and valuable book, the appearance of which at the present moment is singularly significant. . . . But it is impossible in a brief review to indicate all the treasures of this rich volume, to read which carefully is to be introduced to the varied wealth of modern Biblical scholarship."—*Baptist*.

"This volume is of the most exceptional value and interest."

—*Expository Times*.

"This is a book of more than common interest."

—*Review of Theology and Philosophy*.

"The writers of these lectures do not attempt to offer more than samples of their wares: but what is given is good, and it may be seen that theology without tests is destitute neither of scientific value nor of human interests."—*Athenaeum*.

LECTURES.

No. I. GARDEN CITIES (Warburton Lecture). By RALPH NEVILLE, K.C. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 1, 1905.)

No. II. THE BANK OF ENGLAND AND THE STATE (A Lecture). By Sir FELIX SCHUSTER. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 2, 1905.)

No. III. BEARING AND IMPORTANCE OF COMMERCIAL TREATIES IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY. By Sir THOMAS BARCLAY. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 3, 1906.)

No. IV. THE SCIENCE OF LANGUAGE AND THE STUDY OF THE GREEK TESTAMENT (A Lecture). By JAMES HOPE MOULTON, M.A., Litt.D. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 4, 1906.)

No. V. THE GENERAL MEDICAL COUNCIL: ITS POWERS AND ITS WORK (A Lecture). By DONALD MACALISTER, M.A., M.D., B.Sc., D.C.L., LL.D. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 5, 1906.)

No. VI. THE CONTRASTS IN DANTE (A Lecture). By the Hon. WILLIAM WARREN VERNON, M.A. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 6, 1906.)

No. VII. THE PRESERVATION OF PLACES OF INTEREST OR BEAUTY (A Lecture). By Sir ROBERT HUNTER. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 7, 1907.)

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.

CALENDARS.

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1904-5. Demy 8vo, 1100 pp. 3s. net.
(Publication No. 17.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1905-6. Demy 8vo, 1200 pp. 3s. net.
(Publication No. 18.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1906-7. Demy 8vo, 1300 pp. 3s. net.
(Publication No. 19.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1907-8. Demy 8vo, 1400 pp. 3s. net.
(Publication No. 28.)

The following are in preparation and will be issued shortly :—

Celtic Series. No. I.

AN INTRODUCTION TO EARLY WELSH. By the late Prof. J. STRACHAN, M.A., LL.D. Demy 8vo.

This work will comprise a Grammar of Early Welsh with special reference to Middle-Welsh prose. To the grammar will be added selected passages from Early Welsh texts in prose and verse, together with notes and a vocabulary.
[*In the Press.*]

A GLOSSARY TO THE BLACK BOOK OF CHIRK MANUSCRIPT OF THE WELSH LAWS. By TIMOTHY LEWIS, B.A. Demy 8vo.

This will include the oldest copy of a complete glossary to the "Laws of Howel Dda," contained in the "Black Book of Chirk," and will be based on the photographic facsimile of that manuscript which is about to be published by Dr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans in his collection of Welsh texts.
[*In Preparation.*]

Educational Series.

THE TEACHING OF HISTORY IN GIRLS' SCHOOLS IN NORTH AND CENTRAL GERMANY. A Report by E. DODGE, M.A.
[*In the Press.*]

SHERRATT & HUGHES

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.

Historical Series.

HANES GRUFFYDD AP CYNAN. The Welsh text with translation, introduction, and notes by ARTHUR JONES, M.A., Jones Fellow in History. Demy 8vo. [In Preparation.]

THE CROMWELLIAN CONQUEST AND SETTLEMENT OF IRELAND. By ROBERT DUNLOP, M.A., formerly Berkeley Fellow. Demy 8vo.

This work will consist of a series of unpublished documents relating to the History of Ireland from 1651 to 1659, arranged, modernized, and edited, with introduction, notes, etc., by Mr. DUNLOP.

[In Preparation.]

Medical Series.

DISEASES OF THE EAR. By W. MILLIGAN, M.D., Lecturer on Diseases of the Ear and Nasal Surgeon to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. [In Preparation.]

DISEASES OF THE EYE. By C. E. GLASCOTT, M.D., Lecturer on Ophthalmology, and A. HILL GRIFFITH, M.D., Ophthalmic Surgeon to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. [In Preparation.]

HANDBOOK OF NERVOUS DISEASES. By JUDSON S. BURY, M.D., Lecturer on Clinical Neurology and Physician to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. [In Preparation.]

The following works, though not technically Publications of the University of Manchester, are also issued from the University Press :—

MELANDRA CASTLE, being the Report of the Manchester and District Branch of the Classical Association for 1905. Edited by R. S. CONWAY, Litt.D. Introduction by Rev. E. L. HICKS, M.A. Demy 8vo. Illustrated. 5s. net.

TRANSACTIONS OF THE INTERNATIONAL UNION FOR CO-OPERATION IN SOLAR RESEARCH (Vol. i., First and Second Conferences). Demy 8vo, 260 pp. and plate. 7s. 6d. net.

THE BOOK OF RUTH (Unpointed Text). 6d. net.

SCENES FROM THE RUDENS OF PLAUTUS, with a Translation into English Verse. Edited by R. S. CONWAY, Litt.D., Professor of Latin in the University. 6d. net.

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

THE TEACHING OF HISTORY AND OTHER PAPERS. By H. L. WITHERS. Edited by J. H. FOWLER. Crown 8vo, 270 pp. 4s. 6d. net.

"An interesting memorial of a teacher who was a real enthusiast for education."—*The Times*.

"We can cordially commend this little book to the somewhat limited but slowly widening circle who are likely to be interested in educational principles and organization."—*The Guardian*.

A TARDINESS IN NATURE AND OTHER PAPERS. By MARY CHRISTIE. Edited, with Introductory Note and Memoir, by MAUD WITHERS. Crown 8vo, 331 pp. 3s. net.

"The essays upon Thackeray, George Eliot, and R. L. Stevenson in this volume could scarcely be bettered."—*The Guardian*.

"The life-story of a quite remarkable woman—of a woman who used her gifts always to the furthering of all that is sweetest and noblest in life."—*Tribune*.

MUSICAL CRITICISMS. By ARTHUR JOHNSTONE. With a Memoir of the Author by HENRY REECE and OLIVER ELTON. Crown 8vo, 225 pp. 5s. net.

"Without the smallest affectation or laboured attempts at smartness, Mr. Johnstone contrived always to throw fresh light on the matter in hand, and at the same time to present his opinions in a form which could be understood and enjoyed by the non-musical reader."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"Everyone who welcomes guidance as to what is best in music, everyone who watches with some degree of fascination the power of analysis, everyone who reads with a sense of satisfaction English, as it may be written by a master of the craft, should read this book."—*The Musical World*.

MANCHESTER BOYS. By C. E. B. RUSSELL. With an Introduction by E. T. CAMPAGNAC. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

"Mr. Charles E. B. Russell has written a most interesting and thought-compelling book on a subject of almost vital importance."—*Yorkshire Post*.

"Altogether it is an inspiring book."—*Liverpool Daily Post and Mercury*.

34, Cross Street, Manchester

63

329

DEC 19 1987

**PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET**

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

